



HISTORY'S NO. 1 FOUNDER

BOOK 01

August Eagle

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

History's Number 1 Founder

(史上第一祖师爷)

by

August Eagle

(八月飞鹰)

Synopsis

He time-traveled and got a system but Ling Feng's pressure is as big as a mountain.

System main quest: Ling Feng creates a school, establishing history's number 1 sect, Ling Feng himself becoming the number 1 founder.

And so to become history's number 1 founder Ling Feng started to work hard.

“Your name is Shi Tianhao? Natural born supreme king but it was stolen by your cousin. Now being raised in a little village your father placed you in? Come come come, come with master, we'll let those people know that justice that is owed must be returned!”

“Your name is Xiao Yan? A genius in the past, now a loser. Your fiance even came over and humiliated you by breaking off the engagement? Come come come, come with master, we'll let that brat know the meaning of don't bully a youngster because he's poor!”

“Your name is Zhu Yi? The bastard son of a marquis, suppressed by your father. Your mother was the previous saint but she was killed? Come come come, come with master, we'll let your dad know the meaning of the world is big, fists are... no, reason is the biggest!”

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sylver135 @ [Sylver Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: The Cheating System

The middle of the night, completely dark, yet in the boundless mountains it was not quiet. Savage beasts lurk, thunderous roars shake the mountains, forests tremble, tree leaves rustle downwards.

Another beast roar, Lin Feng retracted his neck, sweeping off the leaves that fell on his body, looking at the dark group of mountains and sighing in his heart, this place is really a lot different from Earth.

Lin Feng sat under a tree spacing out, a few wild looking teens looked at him with disdainful gazes. A little fat guy shouted towards Lin Feng saying: "We didn't allow an outsider like you to stay here to just eat, hurry up and go do work!"

Lin Feng recovered, not speaking, standing up and wiping his bottom he left.

Behind him, the little fatty snorted: "Useless trash, physical strength can't even compare to a child's, we should just throw him into the mountains and let him get eaten by wild beasts!"

Lin Feng twitched his lips, I'm an earthling that randomly came here, how can I compete with strength against you animals.

This Heaven Primal world, is a world governed by cultivators

This Wolf Village here, is just a small village in these vast mountains. Naturally there are no cultivators here, but every villager trains hard in martial arts, training their strength, even women and children are no exception.

Only like this, can they survive in this world where savage beasts rampage and even the descendants of ancient beasts lurk.

Just like right now, even though it is the middle of the night, the young men of the village still have to enter the mountains to hunt. A lot of game habitually come out at night time to roam, even though there are many dangers to entering the mountains at night time, but the gains will all be even greater.

The villagers are all used to this kind of life. The children in the village do not sleep, gathering together competing and playing, waiting for the adults of their homes' to return from hunting.

Children with snot still running from their noses, casually playing with stone blocks that weigh over 100 jin like toys. A group of teens competing to see who can lift a big 1000 jin cauldron in the village.

Lin Feng looked at the group of little animals, silently sighing. He truly appeared like trash competing with strength against them.

But this did not make Lin Feng feel depressed, because even though he was occasionally talked about behind his back, he still used his sweet-talking ability to temporarily stay in this little village called Wolf Village. What really made his balls hurt, is that

something else had appeared in his head.

Super Founder System.

At first Lin Feng was incredibly happy, thinking that space travelers have benefits, but the first explanation of the system already made his heart cold.

“System Main Quest: Host creates a sect, establishing this world’s number one sect, becoming the number one founder.

“The main quest is split into different stages, every stage needs to be completed within a set amount of time. If task is not completed when time is reached, directly eliminate host!”

Lin Feng looked at the system explanation, especially that last line “Directly eliminate host”, speechless for a long time, , finally squeezing out a few words through his teeth: “I bought a watch last year!”

After letting out his anger, Lin Feng helplessly read the details of the quest. He was not prepared to risk challenging the system, seeing if it can really eliminate him. He just came to this world, his butt hadn’t even warmed yet, he didn’t want to die again.

Main Quest 1.0 — Take in 4 disciples.

Quest Details: Even if it’s a wandering practitioner, if they want to pass on their legacy, they need to take in a disciple. A sect’s most important resource, will always be people. Talented successors,

famous teachers teach outstanding students, it is hard to find a famous teacher, even harder to find an outstanding student.

Quest Time Limit: 1 year, if not completed before time limit, directly eliminate host.

“This is bullshit!” Lin Feng let out a sigh. Just me a noob that just space-traveled over here, tender like a bush of tasty bak-choi. I should be the one hurriedly looking for a strong master and hugging his leg, right?

Big brother system, at any rate you should give me a secret manual so that I can go take in some students. I’ve got nothing in my pockets what do you want me to teach them? Sweet-talking and bluffing?

Even more bullshit is, the system clearly said there is a newbie gift, yet it’s telling me that a malfunction has happened to the gift system and that the newbie gift has been delayed, making Lin Feng sigh that there is no such thing as the most bullshit only more bullshit.

Though the unlocked trading system has a bunch of good stuff, panaceas, magic weapons, manuals, techniques. Nothing that isn’t there, only what you can’t think of.

Problem is, all of the items need trading points to trade, and at the moment Lin Feng doesn’t have even a single trading point, only able to stare at the system and roll his eyes.

Lin Feng was in the middle of swearing at the system when suddenly there was a commotion at the entrance of the village. From the looks of it the hunting party has returned.

The teens waiting at the entrance all happily went to greet them. Lin Feng glanced indifferently, but surprisingly finding that the men returning from hunting were all empty handed. Not speaking of having no prey, even their weapons were all gone.

Towards the villagers, their weapons are their second life. Living in the mountains it is impossible to survive without weapons.

The corners of Lin Feng's lips lifted up into a hard to notice smile: "Seems like there's a story here." Thinking here, he also walked towards the group of people at the village entrance.

Not even walking nearby he already heard someone yelling angrily: "Lang Feng is our Wolf Village's hope. Now he's been seriously injured by the people of Stone Village, we cannot let this go!"

Lin Feng lifted his eyes looking over, seeing a teen in the middle of the crowd lying on the ground with a dejected expression, his entire body covered with wounds, his eyes releasing a cold light of hatred.

"This is the genius the people of Wolf Village are always talking about?" Lin Feng secretly watched him. In regards to this Lang Feng he had already heard of his name for a long time. The idol of the entire Wolf Village's teens, seen as the hope of the village.

Today is Lin Feng's first time seeing him in person.

Even though Lang Feng was currently hurt, his expression dejected, but the energy within his body was evident. Even though the strength of his body cannot compare to that of cultivators, but amongst worldly martial artists it was definitely top notch.

Based on the public opinion of Heaven Primal world, being able to achieve such a level at such a young age, if he were to cultivate and train his qi he would also have a future prospect. In the end what cultivators do is guide the energy of the world into their bodies, refining their mana and strengthening their own foundations.

Lin Feng quietly brought out his Super Founder System, inside is a disciple talent probe. He faced it towards Lang Feng and pressed confirm.

“The targets aptitude is too low, cannot become host's disciple.”

Lin Feng scrunched his forehead, this system is too picky. His initial thoughts were to first randomly take in four disciples to get over with the system's one year limit, if anything he could just kick them out at the end.

But now from the looks of it, wanting to exploit the system's holes isn't so easy. Even Lang Feng this kind of famous boy genius didn't have the qualifications. The difficulty for Lin Feng to take in four disciples and complete the system's task was a little to big.

“One years time, one years time...” Lin Feng let out a depressed sigh.

In the crowd, an old man beside Lang Fang snorted with a purple face: “Lang Feng is my grandson, of course we cannot let this go, but not right now. In the past few days there’s been a lot of activity in the mountains, from the looks of it there is a mountain treasure about to appear. Get the treasure first, and then we can go settle things with Stone Village!”

Fights between village clans occurred commonly, towards this Lin Feng had no interest. But the two words “Mountain Treasure” entering his ears made his heart slightly move.

Lin Feng was in the middle of pondering about the mountain treasure when he suddenly heard someone in the crowd cursing quietly: “How did Stone Village raise such a little monster, not even 4 years old, still a little child. To think that he can defeat our village’s genius Lang Feng, what the hell!”

Lin Feng’s eyes suddenly lit up.

A little kid not even 4 years old, beat this Lang Feng in front of him?

Lang Feng could already be considered quite talented, the person that injured him hasn’t even reached 4 years of age, what kind of talent is that?

The little fatty beside Lin Feng quietly cursed: “Damn twerp, we have to kill him!”

Giving him a glance, Lin Feng echoed: “Yes, indeed.” but instead thinking in his heart, maybe this little guy can gain the system’s acknowledgement.

Thinking here, Lin Feng silently backed out of the crowd. Right now he wished that he could grow a pair of wings and fly towards Stone Village, but he didn’t dare to leave the village by himself, or else he would just be giving an extra meal to the beasts in the mountains.

Right at this moment, the stiff, mechanical sound of the system notification abruptly rang in Lin Feng’s mind.

“Novice Gift distributed, do you want to examine it?”

After feeling a bit blank Lin Feng became thrilled in his heart. He’d never felt that the dull and stiff sound of the system notification was actually so pleasant and nice.

Finding a place with no people, Lin Feng opened the novice gift.

Novice Gift: Host gains basic level of Qi Disciple 4th level, gained 1 lottery chance, gained 300 trading points, gained secret technique manual《Nine Heavens Thunder Technique》, gained ability Heavenly Thunder Call.

Lin Feng blanked, a warm feeling flowing downwards from the top of his head, flowing straight into his chest, swiftly releasing a hidden nerve point in his body.

The body hides 12 important nerve points, cultivators call them the 12 floors.

Qi disciple stage training is split into 12 levels so as to clear the 12 floors. With every nerve point released, spiritual energy will be converted into mana, and the cultivator's mana will go up another level.

Right now Lin Feng felt a warm current flowing through his body, directly opening up 4 nerve points within his body before disappearing. Following Lin Feng's breathing, the energy of the world was rapidly sucked into his body, circling in the 4 released nerve points.

Every nerve point was like a constantly revolving star cluster universe. Spiritual energy was constantly being converted into Lin Feng's own mana, as if it were like when the universe was first created, developing all life in the universe.

Lin Feng felt his entire body become lighter. With a thought the mana in his nerve points was like an erupting spring, explosive strength seething in his body.

Only after a long time did Lin Feng start to gradually grow accustomed to the changes in his body. He comforted himself in his heart: "Finally have a bit of self-protection ability." But

thinking that the system's ultimate goal is to create history's number 1 sect and that he has to become history's number 1 founder, Ling Chen instantly felt again massive pressure. He hurriedly investigated the other items of the novice gift.

“Lottery chance?” Lin Feng took a look, in the support training system besides the trading system there is also a lottery system. But it is a grey colour, it is still in an inactivated state, for the moment he doesn't need to think about it.

Currently he can only hope that the buying power of those 300 trading points is a bit higher.

While thinking about it Lin Feng entered the trading system. Before he was completely broke, he didn't even have the heart to look at the prices.

Carefully looking at the prices, Lin Feng secretly cursed the system as black hearted. A bottle of the lowest grade qi nourishing pellet requires 10 trading points, one iron sword with a bit of spirituality is 30 points.

Even getting a set of the most basic clothing, a set of taoist clothes, requires 50 points.

The most basic spells like “Fireball”, “Palm Thunder” these kinds of common skills require 100 points.

As for those high end items with a string of zeros behind their

butts, Lin Feng didn't even dare to look at them, he was afraid of fainting.

Lin Feng stared at that pitiful 300 in his "Current Trading Points" column. He shook his head: "Starting capital is too little."

Thank god the novice gift also gave a dao technique manual and a skill, or else Lin Feng would really be at a loss.

Dao techniques are the basics of cultivation, their main purpose is to enhance one's level. As for skills they are practical martial arts or spells with many different effects.

A pleasant surprise is that the level of the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique is very high. The current trade system doesn't even have it, he has to upgrade the system to be able to trade for it.

As for upgrading the system, it requires Lin Feng to complete a certain number of system tasks to be activated, right now it is too early to talk about it.

Nine Heavens Thunder Technique is one of the top thunder dao techniques of this Heaven Primal world, although it has been lost for many years. The predecessors who've had success in this dao technique were all beasts that could do whatever they wanted. (TL: If you ever see "walking sideways" in a translation and it seems out of place, that's because that's a way for the Chinese to say being able to do whatever you want because you have the power. Also if you see the word cow and it seems misplaced, that's because that's a way for the Chinese to say amazing/beast/stuff along those lines.)

According to the explanation the novice gift randomly gifts a type of dao technique. Being able to get the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique Lin Feng could be considered incredibly lucky. Even though the buying power of 300 trading points is limited, the depressed feeling in Lin Feng's heart right now was completely swept away.

With a top-level dao technique like this, if it weren't for that goddamned main quest Lin Feng would definitely first find a place with no people and then come out after training to wreck everybody.

But since he has to go take in disciples now, then that's another story.

Being dissatisfied was one thing. Lin Feng quickly adjusted his mood and swiftly started to take action.

After calmly asking for the path towards Stone Village, he quietly left Wolf Village without alerting anybody.

Right now the two villages are in a hostile relationship. Lin Feng who has already become a cultivator is not afraid of Wolf Village's people troubling him, but he is afraid of them revealing his identity in front of Stone Village's villagers.

Thankfully the villagers of Wolf Village are all gathered at the village entrance right now and talking amongst themselves because of the matter of Lang Feng being injured. Lin Feng went

around from behind the village, nobody noticed his movement.

Walking along the path Lin Feng did not hesitate at all. Directly investing 50 trading points and buying an outfit for himself.

How can Lin Feng who comes from Earth not understand the logic of “the tailor makes the man”, if you want to sell something then first you have to do a good job of promoting and packaging.

Lowering his head looking at his taoist outfit. A white robe with wide sleeves, a sage-like master image., Lin Feng nodded his head in satisfaction. The system’s items may be expensive, but there’s really nothing to say about their quality and appearance.

When Lin Feng arrived at the entrance of Stone Village, the first thing that reflected into his eyes was the broken half of a giant dead tree. The tree’s diameter is a whole dozen meters, its entire body is a burnt black.

Lin Feng gazed at the tree, speculating that this is a lightning tree. Many years ago it was once struck by lightning, the old tree’s massive canopy and and exuberant vitality were all destroyed. Now on the surface there only remains a 8,9 meter tall tree stump.

But just looking at the size of the currently remaining tree trunk one can imagine how massive the tree was when it was alive.

The dead tree’s entire body is a burnt black, there isn’t any hint of life.

At this moment, an old person walked over, coughing while saying: “This tree has already withered for ten years.” He walked to the front of Lin Feng, a pair of eyes sizing up Lin Feng: “I am the village chief of this Stone Village, what can I do to help you priest?”

Lin Feng smiled faintly, his body naturally exuding a proud, unworldly aura. Pairing that with his clothing of a white robe with wide sleeves and his taoist clothing, his appearance was absolutely perfect, definitely the style of a master not of this mundane realm.

“Discovered target, suitable to become host’s disciple.”

Lin Feng was just about to speak when he heard the sound of the suddenly appearing system notification, almost choking on his spit.

The Stone Village village chief looked at Lin Feng in puzzlement, but he then shivered for a moment from fright.

Lin Feng’s two eyes were releasing a green light, staring at the village entrance like a starving wolf. (TL: His eyes aren’t actually releasing a green light, apparently animals hunting at night release a green light from their eyes so it is used to describe when a person desires something.)

At the village entrance a cute, beautiful little boy with snow white skin was in the middle of pulling on the tail of a big yellow dog, his child voice was crisp and resonant: “Hey, hey, don’t run!”

The sound of the system rang non-stop in Lin Feng's head: "Talent system finished organizing, target number 1's data is as follows."

"Body Root-> 10; Comprehension -> 8; Will -> 8: Blessings -> 8."

"Conclusion: Target's talent is extremely high, recommended to take in as a disciple and carefully guide him, he will definitely become a pillar of the sect."

Lin Feng did not see anything else, his eyes staring straight at that blood-red number behind body root, "10".

Body root, is the congenital talent factor of a cultivator's body, the max points for this talent system is 10.

A body root of 10, what does that mean?

Here's an example, other people running from start to finish need to run 100 meters, under the condition of the same finishing point, this little guy's starting point is at 90 meters!

No wonder, no wonder he can beat the crap out of that Lang Feng at not even 4 years of age.

At this time the little guy also noticed Lin Feng, he looked over with a confused face, his large eyes blinking, a 100% moe shota.

Lin Feng smacked his lips. This guy doesn't only just have an op body root, his comprehension, will, blessings are also all super genius level.

Taking in this kind of guy as a disciple, isn't the pressure a little big?

Lin Feng pondered, his face gradually revealing a warm, sunny smile.

If people familiar with Lin Feng in his previous life saw him reveal this kind of smile, they would definitely immediately hide as far away as possible.

Usually, when Lin Feng smiles like this, that means that someone is going to get majorly screwed over.

And now it has arrived again at Chinese meme lesson time. Today we will be discussing about "I bought a watch last year". In a Chinese thread, one guy got mad and wanted to curse, the abbreviation of his choice of curse words is "WQNMLGB" which is what he posted, something like screw your mom or something, I don't know, swear words all means the same thing so whatever. Anyways, following a person explained it as "Wo Qu Nian Mai Liao Ge Biao", "I bought a watch last year". And thus it became an explosive hit.

Chapter 2: Being The Old Grandpa For People

A couple things to say. One, about the old grandpa. You guys know how in a lot of Chinese web novels, the MC gets some kind of super item and inside there's usually someone/something sealed inside that guides and teaches the MC... That's what he's talking about. Two, about the little guy's name. For anyone reading Perfect World, you'll know they call him Xiao Budian, which translated to little dot, tiny dot, little speck, etc... My thought was to just translate it as little guy/little dude but sometimes that doesn't work, so I can either leave it as Xiao Budian or little dot or something like that... Go vote at the polls. Lastly, if you plan to/are reading Perfect World and are anal about spoilers, then don't read this. It's not really a big deal but it'll give away some information about some stuff to come. You won't know exactly what will happen, I think, but you'll get a bit of insight to some stuff. Once again it's no big deal but if spoilers are your bane, then stay away. I'm excluding BTTH and Xian Ni because those have already been translated far enough. Anyways, on with the chapter!!!

Making up his mind Lin Feng looked towards the old elder beside him, a flawless master demeanor once again appearing.

Lin Feng coolly said: "Yesterday I was seized by a sudden impulse, suddenly sensing a person whose fate is related to mine in this mountain. Thus I came looking, but I did not think that I would meet him in this kind of little mountain village."

While speaking Lin Feng's gaze turned towards the little guy holding onto the dog's tail who still had a puzzle face, sighing in

his heart: “Other people are main characters who carry old grandpas around with them, but I have to go be an old grandpa for other people.”

Although, thinking of a group of OP main characters being his disciples and that in the future if there’s something to do he can let these OP disciple go out and wreck everybody, Lin Feng’s mood instantly became a lot better.

“This guy in front is the first.”

The old elder was dazed for a moment and also looked towards the little guy: “Is the one you speak of... him?”

Lin Feng faintly nodded: “I was originally puzzled where this fated person came from, but seeing this child I now understand the story of this matter.”

He let out a sigh with deep feelings, telling the story that he’d prepared beforehand.

In this story, Lin Feng once had a disciple that he was very proud of, but because he was unable to see through the demon of love in his heart he failed to pass ascension crisis and died, reincarnating.

Lin Feng has always been looking for his reincarnated disciple, hoping that he can renew their master, student relation. In the end after a long one hundred years he finally found him today.

The old elder was stupefied by his story, looking towards the little guy in disbelief: “This little guy is your disciple reincarnated?”

Lin Feng lightly nodded his head, his gaze while looking at the little guy revealing a hard to notice but just spot on feeling of care.

You’ve got to go all the way when putting on a show, Lin Feng did the best that he could but he was not optimistic in his heart.

Because he noticed that underneath the old chief’s stunned expression there clearly hid a heavy sense of vigilance.

The old dude even had one hand behind his back lightly waving towards the little guy.

Lin Feng secretly frowned, he sensed a familiar aura fluctuation from this old guy’s body.

The fluctuations of a truth cultivator’s mana.

The old person of this little mountain village is actually a cultivator. Even though he’s only Qi Disciple level 3, but he is a genuine cultivator.

Truth cultivators are different from martial artists, to become a truth cultivator and guide the energy of the world into one’s body turning it into mana, one must train in a dao technique.

Wolf's Village's Lang Feng can be considered to have cultivation talent, but he is still just a martial artist, he cannot be considered a truth cultivator.

Before, the old village chief purposely hid his aura so Lin Feng did not notice. Now because he is wary of Lin Feng, mana fluctuations naturally rose up in his body and Lin Feng immediately noticed it.

Lin Feng secretly sighed. Even though this old man may not be a match for him, but he wants to be the master of the little guy, the old grandpa in stories, not a human trafficker. So forcibly snatching him is clearly a no-no.

Lin Feng stared at the little guy, calmly asking: "Qing Feng, do you wish to return under my wing?"

The old elder's expression did not change, but the hand behind his back was practically about to shake off.

The little guy scratched his head in confusion, looking at Lin Feng and then staring at the old chief, saying a bit sheepishly: "Eyah, my... My name isn't Qing Feng, and I don't want to leave the village."

Lin Feng was silent and did not speak, for a moment the atmosphere became stiff. The old village elder nervously stared at him, his mana fluctuation became increasingly more obvious, prepared to attack at any time.

“Okay then, you have yet to unlock your wisdom from previous incarnations and do not remember the matters of your previous life, I will not force you.” Right when the old elder was almost about to break down Lin Feng let out a light sigh, finally opening his mouth saying: “But, I have foretold that the fate between you and I has not ended. In the end we will meet again after my departure today.”

Lin Feng took out a purple talisman from his robe and handed it over to the little guy: “I leave this talisman with you for you to protect yourself. If you encounter danger then throw this talisman towards your enemy and it will protect you well, we will meet again when fate wills it.”

Finishing speaking Lin Feng did not drag things on anymore, turning around and leaving. When he walked past the old chief his gaze casually swept across him, the corners of his lips revealing a faint smile, but he did not say anything, directly leaving.

The old elder was drenched in cold sweat. He knew that Lin Feng had already seen through him, yet he was unable to see the depths of Lin Feng’s level. This made him afraid, thinking that Lin Feng’s level was a lot higher than his, maybe a great cultivator of the Foundation Establishment level or even the Arous Core level?

At ordinary times truth cultivators can hide their aura, but with any slight fluctuations it will be discovered by cultivators of the same level or higher levels.

This could be a hidden benefit of the system. According to the system explanation, as long as Lin Feng doesn't act he will be no different from a regular person in the eyes of other people. Even cultivators with a higher level than him are unable to see through him.

This is very beneficial for Lin Feng to act like he's a boss.

Leaving the sights of the old chief and the little dude Lin Feng instantly used shadow sneak technique and secretly returned to Stone Village.

Even the trading system's cheapest little spells require 100 trading points. After carefully thinking Lin Feng did not choose an attack or defense spell but instead exchanged for the shadow sneak technique.

It can hide his body and as long as he doesn't do anything else he will not be revealed. In Lin Feng's opinion if this spell is used properly then its practicality is very strong.

The old chief's reaction was a bit strange and it aroused Lin Feng's suspicion.

Lin Feng silently snuck into Stone Village. The environment was pretty much the same as Wolf Village, only currently compared to Wolf Village's cloud of gloom, Stone Village was full of joy.

The center of the village is filled with all kinds of beast corpses,

from the old people to the children the villagers were all smiling in happiness.

Lin Feng found the stone house of the village elder. Just entering the house he saw the little guy holding onto a little porcelain bowl, using a little wooden spoon to drink milk.

A child at the courtyard entrance yelled loudly: “Oh wow, you’re drinking milk again little dot, you’re already three and a half years old now!”

“Eyah!” The little guy was greatly embarrassed. He hugged onto the little bowl using his tender white arms to hide it, not letting the older child see it. His little face was flushed, his long eyelashes lightly trembling, unconfidently arguing: “You guys saw wrong, I’m... actually... drinking water.”

“Haha...” A group of big kids laughed loudly.

This cute little guy also made Lin Feng let out an amused smile. Not paying attention to those laughing children he passed straight through the courtyard arriving at the side of the stone house. His ears twitched and he heard the old elder in the stone house say: “Three years have passed by in the blink of an eye, the little guy is also three and a half years of age”

The sound of an old woman rose up in the house, should be the village elder’s wife: “You let the little guy reject that priest, will there be trouble? Do you think if the little guy is actually the reincarnation of the priest’s disciple?”

The old village chief said pondering: “I initially thought that daoshi was a person of the Shi family helping Shi Tianyi or someone from the Yu family of Shi Tianyi’s maternal grandfather come looking for the little guy to finish him off. But now it doesn’t seem like it, as for disciple reincarnated...”

The old village chief hesitated for a moment: “You also know that the little guy was extraordinary at birth, he was born at Foundation Establishment level! In addition he also had the earthshaking supreme-king dao root of legends, if you want to say that he is a great cultivator reincarnated, that also seems to be plausible.”

The village chief’s spouse said sighing: “Too bad his supreme king dao root was actually stolen by Shi Tianyi. They are cousins from the same line, how can he be so cruel? At that time the little guy wasn’t even 6 months old, he really is a poor child.”

The old village chief said seriously: “All in all, I promised his father that I would definitely take good care of the little guy. In the end that daoshi’s background is unknown, its best to be careful. Only you and I the two of us know of the little guy’s background, we absolutely cannot leak out any information or else the little guy will be in danger.”

Lin Feng who was listening outside of the house beamed with joy, this little guy, 9 out of 10 is a main character level character.

As for that Shi Tianyi that robbed his dao root, he belongs to the

rival villain type.

No wonder this kid's bone root can reach the max value of 10. Natural born Foundation Establishment level, moreover it was the most top-level supreme king dao root. If this kind of talent wasn't max value then nobody could be max value.

Although his dao root has already been taken away, why is his bone root still 10?

Could it be, his dao root can regenerate? Or when after he practises a dao technique, when he ascends to Foundation Establishment level he can still forge a supreme king dao root?

While thinking Lin Feng quietly retreated out of Stone Village, arriving at the mountain path not far away from the village entrance.

Taking out 9 shining purple crystals from his pocket and arranging them on the mountain path according to a certain pattern, Lin Feng let out a sigh. Being an old grandpa for people isn't that easy either.

Out of the 300 trading points from the novice gift, Lin Feng used 50 points in exchange for a set of clothing and 100 points for a shadow sneak technique. The remaining 150 points were all invested into these purple crystals.

His gaze looking towards the direction of Wolf Village, Lin Feng

brushed his nose: “If Wolf Village wants to attack Stone Village, this place here should be a must-cross path.”

Finishing his preparations Lin Feng started to ponder about his next move. While he was thinking a massive rumble suddenly exploded from the depths of the mountain, like a clap of thunder exploding on the ground.

In the depths of the mountains a beam of purple light shot up into the sky, from a glance one can tell that it is an extraordinary treasure. Thinking of the birth of a mountain treasure the Wolf Village villager’s mentioned, Lin Feng was dumbfounded: “ This is prepared for that little guy, right? A blessing of 8, even though it’s not max value it still cannot be looked down upon.”

His eyes turning, a warm smile like the sun once again appeared on Lin Feng’s face. He rapidly rushed towards the place that the mountain treasure appeared.

Chapter 3: Enemy Attack!

Lin Feng sprinted furiously in the mountains, using his quickest speed to rush towards the location of the purple light.

That is a protruding rock on a cliff, purple light seeped out from the dark grey rock. Rhythmically flashing like the breathing of a human.

Everytime the purple light flashed it would release a thunderous sound, a deep rumbling sound.

Lin Feng scanned the surroundings, not discovering the ambush of other people.

Pretty lucky, looks like I'm the first one to get here.

Lin Feng rapidly climbed the cliff. One hand like a claw tightly grasping the rock, the other hand not using any spells, just circulating his mana and smashing his fist into the protruding rock.

The rock broke away from the cliff, falling to the bottom of the cliff. Lin Feng went down the cliff and found the rock. Even though it broke away from the cliff, the rock still flashed a purple light like it was alive, releasing bursts of thunderous sounds.

Lin Feng smashed apart the rock revealing the treasure hidden within. It is a purple crystal the size of a soccer ball, releasing roars

of thunder from within.

The surface of the purple crystal is uneven, bumpy and rough, an irregular shape.

Feeling around for a bit, Lin Feng discovered that this purple crystal is still not the true body of the treasure. It's kind of like a jade stone wrapped in a layer of stone skin.

Lin Feng slowly sent his mana into the purple crystal, attempting to connect with the treasure within the crystal.

Rumble!!

Lin Feng felt himself enter into a world of lightning, looking across it was all flashing bursts of thunder and lightning.

A kind of endlessly huge fear and overbearingness.

Violent thunderclaps, the ancient punishment of the gods, fierce lightning, the scourge of the foreworld, causing the souls of all of the people facing it to tremble in fear, but still rushing forth on their own and then being completely obliterated.

A sort of crushing pressure, a true crushing pressure, being instantly crushed into pieces underneath a mountain!

Lin Feng was shocked, the dao technique Nine Heavens Thunder

Technique automatically circulating. It was not resisting, not assimilating, but controlling.

I am the master of thunder, controlling the lightning of the heavens.

As if it was just an instant, but also as if a long time had passed, Lin Feng returned to his senses. Looking at the purple crystal in his hand again it had already split into two from the middle, revealing a perfectly round light golden orb in the center.

The sound of thunder and the light of flashing lightning had all already disappeared, what remained was only the fist-sized orb flashing a light-golden glow. It looks very calm but Lin Feng could sense that within the orb it was harboring incredibly terrifying thunder energy.

If all of this thunder energy exploded, it would be more than enough to turn this mountain range that Lin Feng is currently in into a massive crater.

In the trading system there is an identical item, its name is the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade and it requires a whole 2000 trading points.

According to the system's description, this item is extremely rare. It requires thousands of lightning bolts to continuously strike the same rock for there to be a one in a hundred chance of being created. It contains a monstrous amount of thunder energy essence and is a priceless artifact towards truth cultivators who practise

thunder class dao techniques.

Lin Feng smiled to the point that even his eyes had become a slit, very shamelessly thinking: “My good disciple, let’s just treat this as your gift to becoming my student. Don’t worry, master will treat you well.”

Faintly hearing voices coming from the jungle at the bottom of the mountain, Lin Feng rapidly put away the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade and looked downwards. He saw that at the two sides of the mountain there were two separate groups of people quickly rushing over.

Of the two groups, the vanguard of one of them is Xiao Budian. He looks as white and cute as a little doll, but right now he is as agile like a little beast, rapidly advancing in the deep jungle.

Before Xiao Budian never revealed anything so Lin Feng only now discovered that this not even 4 years old child actually also has a level of Qi Disciple level 2.

Lin Feng habitually scratched his nose feeling that the pressure was as big as a mountain: “That old village elder is a madman, right? Teaching such a little child to practise dao techniques.”

The other group of people are the people of Wolf Village.

Lin Feng calculated the speed of both parties. Confirming that Xiao Budian and the Stone Village villagers will arrive first he took

out the stone shell that remained after taking out the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade, i.e. the purple crystal that cracked into two halves and left them on the spot. He then quickly left the scene.

Even though the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade has already been taken out, but being nourished by the moon jade for so long, that purple crystal that has been split into two halves also harbors a massive amount of energy, it is also a hard to come by treasure.

The sky was overcast with dark clouds, the sound of thunder echoed. Lin Feng lifted his head looking at the sky, muttering to himself: “A storm is brewing...”

As Lin Feng predicted, Xiao Budian and co. picked up the stone shell a step earlier. Even though it was a pity that someone had beaten them to the chase towards the true treasure within the stone shell, but at least they did not return empty-handed. The group of people returned to their village in high-spirits.

On the other hand, the villagers of Wolf Village were bummed. Not only did they not get the meat, they didn't even get any of the juice, coming out empty handed. Naturally they don't know that the real treasure, the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade has fallen into the hands of Lin Feng, they just thought that Stone Village had gotten here first.

New hatred and old rancor adding together the people of Wolf Village immediately exploded, chasing after Xiao Budian and co. with red eyes.

At this time Lin Feng very “coincidentally” bumped into the people of Wolf Village. Lang Feng’s grandfather Lang Liqing glanced at Lin Feng with a dark face: “What are you doing here?”

Lin Feng said with an embarrassed face: “I wanted to enter the mountains to gain some knowledge, but I ended up getting lost.”

Lang Liqing impatiently waved his hand and didn’t pay any more attention to Lin Feng, leading the group of people and continuing to pursue forward.

Lin Feng aware of his status followed at the back of the group. Hiding his strength he weakly walked in the mountains, looking like he could straggle from the group at any moment.

“Those two people...” Lin Feng looked like he was distressed, but he was actually closely observing the group the whole time. Very quickly he discovered two middle-aged people within the group that he’d never seen before in Wolf Village.

The attire of these two people is also very particular, different from the people in the mountains.

The lips of the two people slightly moved, yet they did not release any sounds. After a glance Lin Feng lowered his eyelids as if nothing was wrong.

These two people are actually both truth cultivators. One is Qi Disciple level 3, the other is Qi Disciple level 4 like Lin Feng.

They used their mana to encase their voices. Regular people are unable to hear the contents of their conversation but Lin Feng is able to clearly hear.

“Old Chen, when that person last appeared 3 years ago, the child was not by that person’s side. Could it be that he was placed in this little mountain village at that time?”

The middle aged man that was called Old Chen pondered saying: “Calculating from the age it is just right, but Little Seven, that kid is already done for, he shouldn’t be able to live until this old.”

Little Seven said: “Right now we’re tagging along towards Stone Village to check things out. If we confirm that it really is that child, then we’ll cut him down and end things for good. Leaving him around is ultimately a problem for the young master.” (TL: The young master used here is 表少爷 which if you had to translate it would be cousin young master. Cousin as in not part of the main branch family cousin. Only children of the main branch family can be called just young master by the servants/people/workers/etc. of the family. I think at least...)

Old Chen thought for a bit and then nodded his head: “We can’t directly do it ourselves or else if we leave a trace, there are Shi family people that pity that child, they might trouble us. Even though the family would love for that little baby to die, they will not necessarily support us, instead handing us over as scapegoats.”

Little Seven glanced at Lang Liqing with an insidious laugh:

“There’s nothing to worry about, isn’t in front the best scapegoat?”

Finishing speaking the two people both started laughing: “Being able to take the blame for the Yu family, it can be considered their good fortune.”

Lin Feng secretly sighed. The Stone Village village elder kept his oath and worked hard to hide Xiao Budian’s information, but he didn’t know that Xiao Budian’s whereabouts has already been pretty much exposed.

Although, these two people really came at just the perfect time. Staring at the backs of the two people the smile on Lin Feng’s face became increasingly brilliant.

There is also a science to picking supporting roles. Before Lin Feng was still worried that the opponent’s strength was too weak. Stone Village has the old elder and Xiao Budian these two truth cultivators, with just these mundane martial artists of Wolf Village, going would just be giving experience points to Xiao Budian.

Of course, the opponent’s strength being too high is an even bigger no no. Firstly, it’s hard to guarantee Xiao Budian’s well being. Secondly, Lin Feng is also just a level of Qi Disciple level 4, if he made an opponent that he also can’t deal with then that would become a joke.

Like these two Yu family truth cultivators, they are just perfect.

On his side he was spacing out in his thoughts, the little fatty beside him huffed in anger: “Keep your eyes open when we get there, don’t cause trouble for us or I’ll gut you!”

Lin Feng grinned, not saying anything. Right now he was quietly waiting for the show to start.

Wolf Village’s people quickly caught up to Xiao Budian and co. and both sides engaged in a fierce battle. Wolf Village has a large number of people and mountain people are all very fierce, but they couldn’t stand up to the old elder and Xiao Budian these two truth cultivators.

Especially Xiao Budian, even though he is not experienced enough and is not brutal enough when attacking, but his strength is more than enough to crush these mundane martial artists. Like the little cub of an ancient beast, utterly wrecking the people of Wolf Village.

Before the two sides had even crossed blows Lin Feng had already turned around and run out of sight like a frightened rabbit, causing the little fatty to curse in anger: “Pussy cat!”

Lin Feng laughed in his heart. Of course he had to run away early, or else if he lets Xiao Budian and them see him together with Wolf Village’s people would that be proper?

Finding a hidden place Lin Feng’s gaze tightly locked onto those two Yu family cultivators. He saw that middle-aged man called Old

Chen unhurriedly take out a bone flute and start playing it. The flute's sound was not at all pleasant, hoarse and shrill like utterly dreary cries and screams.

The next moment a large number of beasts sprang out from the forest. Iron mail elephants like the size of small mountains, black unicorn tigers with a horn on their heads, blaze bears with a body of fiery red fur...

Every single beast was ten of hundreds of times more aggressive than regular wild beasts. Requiring the bravest, most seasoned hunters to form groups and set up traps to dare to go hunt them. Even like this they could still pay the price of their lives, and even fail the hunt.

And right now there are dozens of such savage beasts, surrounding Xiao Budian and them from all directions, rushing over like a tidal wave.

Against the beast tide even the old elder and Xiao Budian have no ways of dealing with it. Only able to do their best to protect the villagers and retreat. Even like this there are still multiple people that were pounced down by the beasts and killed.

Dark clouds covered the sky and wild wind howled. On the ground the cries of battle shook the heavens and blood flowed like rivers.

The situation turned for the worse in an instant, even Lin Feng was a bit taken by surprise. Only able to follow them from far away

and pray in his heart: “Run fast, here is not enough. Go forward a bit more, draw them forward a bit more.”

Stone Village villagers were constantly being killed by the savage beasts. Xiao Budian watched red eyed in anxiety, he could only ensure himself not being hurt by the beasts. Even if he can save a fellow villager there will also instantly be even more people falling into danger.

The old elder stomped his feet, throwing a leather like item towards Xiao Budian. The old man himself also pulled out a little drum.

“Magic items? Moreover it’s two!” Lin Feng’s eyes slightly brightened.

With the two magic items left behind by Xiao Budian’s father, the old elder and Xiao Budian finally brought the villagers and fought their way out, escaping towards Stone Village.

Seeing their target about to flee, the two Yu family cultivators looked at each other and in the end still couldn’t hold back striking out.

Right now they were only not even a mile away from Stone Village. But just these couple hundred meters became a chasm that Xiao Budian and co. are unable to cross over.

The moment those two truth cultivators struck out the old elder

immediately discovered something wrong: “Who are you people?”

The middle-aged person called Old Chen coldly said: “Dead people don’t need to know.”

The old elder said in fury: “Are you guys sent by the Shi family or the Yu family? Actually being so venomous as to plot against a little child and now you guys won’t even let him live!”

That cultivator called Little Seven loudly laughed: “It is the young master of our house that is a natural born sovereign. This little twerp, being able to contribute towards our young master is his good fortune. Right now I will send him to reincarnate, I believe that he’ll be able to get a nice life!”

Xiao Budian felt confused towards their conversation, but this did not hinder his judgement: “Eyah, you guys aren’t good people.” Finishing speaking he fought against Little Seven. He has a magic item, fighting Qi Disciple level 3 Little Seven with his Qi Disciple level 2 he is not at a disadvantage.

But he is unable to hold up against Little Seven’s insidious mind. While fighting against Xiao Budian he occasionally ambushes the villagers of Stone Village, the numerous beasts at the side and Wolf Village’s villagers also surrounded them and attacked, the people of Stone Village were in a critical situation.

Xiao Budian wanted to save people but he was entangled by Little Seven, causing his face to turn completely red from anxiety, almost about to cry out.

Lin Feng hid at one side, saying in his heart: “Now’s the time! Good disciple, hurry up and use the trump card that I gave you, you silly boy don’t tell me that you’ve forgotten about it?”

Not sure if it’s because he sensed Lin Feng’s reminder, Xiao Budian who was at the end of his wits finally remembered the talisman that Lin Feng left for him, taking out the talisman and smashing it over to Little Seven right in his face!

Little Seven was slightly shocked, afterwards he discovered that there seemed to be nothing special about the talisman. Casually pinching the talisman with a grab, he said mockingly: “In the end he’s a little brat...” Before he could finish speaking a change suddenly occurred to the talisman in his hand.

Around him nine points of light simultaneously lit up, lighting up his dumbfounded face.

Chapter 4: There's Something Wrong With That Old Tree!

Xiao Budian took out that talisman Lin Feng gave him, directly smashing it towards Little Seven.

Lin Feng who was hiding at the side silently laughed: “Excellent!”

He formed a spell sign with his hands, silently incanting in his heart: “Move!” Under the control of his mind, the mana that he left in the talisman started to rapidly circulate.

The nine thunder energy crystals that he hid here earlier were also activated at this moment, releasing powerful energy waves.

“Sizzle, crackle!” The air filled with the sound of jarring electrical currents, arcs of bluish violet lightning constantly jumped around.

Before Little Seven could react the nine thunder energy crystals simultaneously shot out 9 beams of lightning!

And the talisman in his hand was like a conductor, drawing the 9 arcs of lightning to shoot over towards him, instantly destroying his mana protection barrier.

“Ah!!!”

Accompanied by screaming 9 lightning snakes wrapped around Little Seven's body and wildly raged in his body.

Old Chen was aghast, promptly ditching the old elder and rushing over. His palms fiercely separating and then coming together, wildly surging mana pouring into Little Seven's body attempting to dispel the lightning.

Towards Old Chen's action Lin Feng treated it like nothing, lifting his head looking towards the overcast sky with rolling thunder: "Today is good weather."

He shrugged his shoulders: "You think my Nine Heavens Thunder Summoning is that simple?"

Lin Feng changed the spell sign of his hands: "Attract!"

Following the change of Lin Feng's spell sign, the lightning wrapped around Little Seven's body suddenly started to jump uniformly, filled with a strange tempo and rhythm.

The next moment, a terrifying lightningbolt the thickness of a bucket descended from the clouds in the sky, its target was exactly Old Chen and Little Seven on the ground who were surrounded by lightning.

This is the true mortal blow of Lin Feng's Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning ability.

Seeing that the situation was unfavorable Old Chen did not dare to bother with his partner anymore, hurriedly dodging towards the side.

“NOOOOO!”

Little Seven looked in despair as the lightning bolt like doomsday divine punishment struck him straight on in the head, he didn't even have the chance to officially reveal his identity.

Xiao Budian and the Old Elder stared in shock at that lightning bolt that lit up the sky ripping through the air. They never could have imagined that the talisman that Lin Feng seemingly casually gave Xiao Budai actually held such power.

The villagers of Wolf Villager and Stone Village were especially dumbfounded, thinking it was the epiphany of the thunder god.

Everything was just in the blink of an eye.

The lightning fell to the ground with a crash, the violent flash blinded the eyes of all of the people causing them to see a white blur.

When after they recovered their sight, they hastily looked towards Little Seven's position. On the spot there was only a section of char.

A truth cultivator, was completely obliterated by a bolt of

lightning.

After a moment everyone finally returned to their senses. Wolf Village's villagers immediately exploded, running away in all directions without even turning their heads, not a single person dared to remain on the spot to trouble Xiao Budian and co. The savage beasts drawn over by Old Chen's bone flute were also scared shitless, all of them tucking their tails between their legs and running away.

The people of Stone Village all let out bursts of cheers. The old elder reacted, heavily stomping his feet: "Kill, don't let a single one of the Wolf Village people here today live!" The morale of Stone Village's villagers ran high, chasing after them together.

Old Chen was dazed for a moment and then roared hoarsely: "We are Yu family's people. You hillbillies dare to kill our Yu family's people, are you guys not afraid of your entire village being razed to the ground?"

The novice gift once again brought a pleasant surprise towards Lin Feng. He stared at the lightning struck charred ground, silent for a while and then letting out a long sigh of relief after a long time: "Fortunately, even though there are too many limitations to using it and it is too troublesome, the power in the end is not disappointing."

Lin Feng brushed his nose. With this Nine Heaven's Thunder Summoning as the groundwork, when he makes his appearance again convincing the old elder and Xiao Budian will be a lot easier. After all in their eyes, I created such a large commotion using just a

tiny little talisman alone.

If you were to have Lin Feng himself fight head on with Old Chen and Little Seven he would also be able to win. After all the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique he practises is far superior to the ragtag dao techniques those two people practise.

But he would definitely not be able to create such an amazing result. With that his master sage disguise would be seen through.

How could he be like right now. One hit insta-kill, easy and relaxing, waving his sleeves and not bringing away a wisp of cloud.

Towards Old Chen who still remained Lin Feng did not pay him any heed. This person may have avoided the heart of the lightning strike, but he is already heavily injured after being hit by the waves of the attack. The old elder and Xiao Budian are enough to take care of him.

Right now Lin Feng prepared to silently slip into the elder's house yard and leisurely sit there waiting for the old elder and Xiao Budian to return. It would especially be able to display his ability to predict future events and poised character and demeanor.

At that time would he still need to be afraid of that little guy not lowering his head and bowing?

Oh right, when the mountain treasure appeared he changed out of his taoist robes for convenience of traveling in the forest. Right

now he is wearing a set of rough cloth clothes and looks the same as a regular mountain villager, he needs to remember to first change back.

“My first disciple is at hand.” Lin Feng thought elated. turning around and walking towards the village entrance. When he lifted his head, the smile on his face instantly froze, slowly disappearing.

Because he clearly saw that on that old withered charred tree at the village entrance that should originally be completely dead, actually grew out a new branch!

The few pink peach blossoms on that young branch were bright and fresh, swaying and flickering.

Lin Feng swore, when he just came to Stone Village half a day ago, this old tree definitely did not have this branch of bright peach blossoms.

What made the heart's of people beat even faster was that these peach blossoms looked incredibly beautiful, but they faintly revealed a demonic aura.

“So much food after just waking up...”

Lin Feng's mind slightly blanked. He seemed to hear the low, hoarse voice of a woman slowly speaking in his mind, her tone was joyful and beautiful, yet it made people shudder in fear!

Shivering Lin Feng returned to his senses. Looking around he saw Old Chen's expression also drastically change, looking around in a panic.

And everyone else seemed to be completely oblivious, still continuing to fight.

Lin Feng turned his head in shock, seeing the petals of those vibrant peach blossoms on that new branch actually floating down, flying over to the battlefield one-mile away.

Light, delicate flower petals, they look soft and weak but their flying speed is fast as lightning. Hundreds of flower petals like meteors from outside of the heavens flying into the crowd swaying in a profound orbit.

Old Chen wanted to escape, but how could he be faster than these strange peach blossoms?

He set his heart, slamming his palm over. The flower petal that looked weak and unendurable directly pierced through Old Chen's palm, going and sticking to his forehead.

Lin Feng widened his eyes, seeing Old Chen's face reveal a horror stricken expression, opening his mouth wide wanting to yell but unable to emit any noises.

Old Chen's blood, body and skin all rapidly shriveled up at a visible speed, in the end he directly turned into a mummy!

The peach blossom petal on the mummy's forehead became increasingly vibrant and beautiful.

Lin Feng's heart directly sank to the bottom. His gaze wandered looking around, all of the people or beasts that these flower petals attached to were all sucked dry within a short period of time.

Lan Liqing who clamoured about killing Xiao Budian, the little fatty who didn't mix well with Lin Feng... People that he had still talked to before, right now their eyes have all lost the light of life, making Lin Feng have goosebumps all over his body looking.

The next moment, the flower petals all detached from their prey that they had already sucked dry, drawing traces of pink arcs in the night sky, flying back to the old tree.

The peach blossoms landed back on the tree branch, beautiful and dazzling, breath-taking horror.

Lin Feng stared at the old tree, sure enough on the charred trunk two more new branches grew out again!

The peach blossoms on the three new branches gently sway in the night air, looking so delicate and attractive. The flower fragrance floated over with the wind, making people feel refreshed.

Yet Lin Feng cursed in his heart: "Fuck, there's definitely

something goddamn wrong with this tree!”

He carefully observed for a moment, discovering that besides Old Chen, the people that were sucked dry were all Wolf Village’s Villagers. None of the savage beasts were spared either, although Stone Village’s villagers were not attacked.

The old elder and the people of Stone Village all blankly stared at the scene in front. Suddenly there was a villager who knelt on the ground, prostrating to the old tree at the village entrance and muttering: “Praise the Peach Celestial! Praise the Peach Celestial!”

More and more people thought that the old tree at the entrance of the village was the theophany of the Peach Celestial, helping them kill their enemies and so they all knelt on their knees and worshipped.

Xiao Budian looked in confusion at everybody, scratching his head with a puzzled face.

The old elder looked at the old tree with a complicated expression, biting his lips.

Lin Feng who did not show his face the entire time was expressionless, his heart feeling cold. Beside his ears he seemed to hear the long echo of a low, hoarse female voice: “I’ll stop here for today and let the rest go for now...”

This old tree doesn’t differentiate between friend or foe at all, all

people in her eyes are the same, they are all food!

The difference is only that she is guarding at Stone Village's entrance and she is simply not afraid of Stone Village's people running away.

Maybe also adding a slight biological instinct of rabbits don't eat the grass by their burrows.

Lin Feng thought trying to cheer himself up, his mood completely unable to relax. Looking at the situation of the old tree that just struck out, casually killing over a hundred targets in a instant, of them even includes Old Chen this kind of truth cultivator.

Even if Old Chen was hurt, her attacks were still too relaxing. Just one petal out of hundreds of flower petals already insta-killed Old Chen. For her, Qi Disciple level 4 truth cultivators are no different at all from the mundane martial artists.

Lin Feng has never hesitated before to plan for the worst. According to his speculation, this old tree demon's strength has probably already surpassed the Qi Disciple stage.

It's at the very least Foundation Establishment.

Lin Feng brushed his nose. Finally found a suitable disciple candidate but it is beset with difficulties.

A person chosen by the heavens, a main character level character, do they all have so many problems surrounding them?

While thinking the system notification sound suddenly rose up in his mind.

“System has operated for one full month, lottery system officially opened!”

Chapter 5: The First Lottery Chance

“System has operated for one full month, lottery system officially opened!”

Hearing the system notification sound Lin Feng first blanked for a moment and then had an impulse to cover his face in tears.

He'd already almost forgotten that there was still a lottery system and that the novice gift had even given a lottery chance.

Lin Feng looked back glancing at the old peach tree at the village entrance. Stone Village's villagers had already gradually started to return to the village. Looking at Xiao Budian amongst the crowd Lin Feng silently prayed: “Good disciple since you're a main character level character. you shouldn't die that easily, right? Hold on for a bit, master will come back quickly to save you.”

First distancing himself from the old peach tree, Lin Feng then eagerly checked out the lottery system.

Entering the lottery system, three images appeared in Lin Feng's mind.

A die, a wheel, and one more which is misty and cannot be clearly seen, like a cloud of fog.

Lin Feng tried a bit, that cloud of misty fog cannot be chosen. Maybe it's that the system still hasn't opened it yet.

As for the wheel and the die, they are two different lottery methods. The spinning wheel is like the slot machines or the turntable used in gambling in Lin Feng's previous life. A circle of completely different images, representing different items. If Lin Feng spins that wheel, then whatever it lands on is what he gets.

Lin Feng took a look. The wheel has a total of 18 slots, of them 16 have items and two are empty.

16 items, three types of dao technique manuals, three types of elixirs and panaceas, three pieces of magic items, 3 sheets of talismans, three types of abilities, and one that is a mysterious box with a question mark.

The level of the three types of dao techniques on the wheel are all inferior to the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique, they have no appeal to Lin Feng.

The medicines are also just some regular stuff, at the least they can't make Lin Feng's level soar, reaching the point that he can fight Foundation Establishment level opponents.

Magic items, talismans, abilities... Lin Feng looked around, there was also nothing that could help him take care of that old peach tree.

Lin Feng left the wheel lottery system, and then went into the dice lottery system.

Three dice quietly lay on top of a light disk. The edges of the light disk are also surrounded by a circle of images. Different from the wheel is that each image has been labelled with a number, from 1 to 18.

There are a total of 16 images, the numbers 12 and 14 are empty.

Lin Feng already understood that this wants him to roll dice. The number obtained after adding up the numbers of the 3 thrown out dice will decide what he gains.

If added up it is a 12 or a 14, then he could only return empty-handed.

Same with the wheel system, the dice system also has 16 items. They are also dao techniques, medicines, magic items, talismans, and abilities, three of each, in addition to a mysterious chest with a question mark.

The 16 items waiting to be chosen should be randomly chosen every lottery chance. The wheel system and the dice system are relatively independent.

Lin Feng stared at the items of the dice system looking down, when he saw the magic item corresponding to number 13, the Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl, his eyes instantly lit up.

This Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl is actually a Foundation

Establishment level magic item.

In the Heaven Primal great world, only great Primordial Spirit cultivators can create magic treasures. Items created by cultivators below Primordial Spirit are all magic items. Based on the creator's level, they are split as Nascent Soul level magic items, Aurous Core level magic items, Foundation Establishment level magic items and Qi Disciple level magic items.

The 3 magic items from the wheel system and the other two from the dice system are all Qi Disciple level magic items.

For Lin Feng how is currently only Qi Disciple level 4 they are of course also suitable for him. But wanting to rely on them to go and face the Foundation Establishment level old peach tree is completely nonsense.

As for the Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl this Foundation Establishment level magic item it is a different story. For Qi Disciple level cultivators it is already a nearly god-like existence. Letting Lin Feng also have the strength to fight against the old peach tree.

The chest with a question mark should be a special prize, giving an unknown item, but it could also be very bullshit.

Lin Feng took a deep breath, muttering in his heart: "Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl, Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl... 13, 13!"

Focusing for a long time, Lin Feng confirmed starting the lottery.

“Go!”

3 dice spun together on the light disk. Very soon one of the dice stopped, a big 6.

Lin Feng nervously stared at the remaining two dice, secretly cursing the system as wicked in his heart. The three dice actually don't stop together, purposely hanging one's appetite.

The second dice also stopped very soon.

5.

Lin Feng slightly relaxed in his heart, and then tightened again.

The first two dice were 6 plus 5, 11 points. This means that Lin Feng does have a chance to get the 13 point Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl.

But likewise, he could also get the empty spaces at 12 and 14.

“2! 2! 2!”

Lin Feng felt like his entire self became silly, holding his breath and not even daring to take a big breath, closely staring at the last

die. (TL: 2, er, is also a way of saying stupid, silly, foolish, etc. I don't know if this is internet slang or not.)

While his mind was highly focused, Lin Feng felt even the movement of the die become slow.

The force of the strength of the die became increasingly smaller, gradually showing traces of stopping.

Lin Feng was entirely red from holding his breath, seeing the die land on the light disk, the side facing up was terribly a “6”!

“No, move a bit, move a bit again!” Lin Feng anxiously cried in his heart.

6+5+6, 17. What it corresponds to is a bottle of the most regular Energy Gathering Pellet. For Lin Feng at the moment it doesn't do shit.

Seemingly hearing Lin Feng's thoughts, the die really jumped again.

“2”, this time the side facing upwards is exactly the “2” that Lin Feng wished for.

Lin Feng's face just revealed a smile, and then it abruptly froze.

Under his gaze the die still did not completely settle, lightly

rolling a bit and revealing a bright red dot!

6+5... +1, 12...

Fuck!

12, there's nothing...

Right when Lin Feng's mood fell to the bottom from the clouds, the die shook, flipping to the side one last time. The number turning from a 1 into a 4.

This time it was completely settled, the number of the third die is 4.

Lin Feng blinked his eyes, looking towards the item corresponding to 15.

A mysterious chest with a question mark quietly lay there.

Lin Feng opened the mysterious chest a bit hesitantly, a light golden sword with the scabbard appeared in his vision. Even though the sword has yet to be pulled out of the scabbard, Lin Feng could clearly feel the terrifying power within.

The Northern Aurora Sword, a Foundation Establishment level magic item.

A pair with another Foundation Establishment magic item the Southern Aurora Sword, when the two swords combine one can gain an Aurous Core level magic item the Polar Magnetic Dao Sword.

Lin Feng stared at the Northern Aurora Sword and let out a long breath after a long time, his entire body actually had a feeling of exhaustion.

Both being Foundation Establishment magic items, the Northern Aurora Sword's power is a level higher than the Dark Thunder Sky Piercing Awl's.

Getting out of the system, Lin Feng's consciousness had already returned to his body. Staring at the longsword in his hand emitting a faint lightning glow and magnetic force, Lin Feng grinned and laughed. Pulling the sword out of the scabbard, a bright lightning flash appeared with a casual point, blowing up a far-away rock.

“The first lottery chance, my luck's not bad.” Lin Feng put away the Northern Aurora Sword, the wild joy in his heart gradually calming down. His mind once again calmly thinking: “Even though I've gained a Foundation Establishment level magic item, my own level is still just Qi Disciple level 4, I actually can't completely exert all of the magic item's strength.

Lin Feng's started to calculate the current cards in his hands.

Nine Heavens Thunder Summoning has impressive power, but it's usage conditions are too stringent. It's suitable for ambushing

and not head-on fighting, moreover using it once requires the consumption of 10 thunder crystals. Lin Feng currently also doesn't have any extra points to exchange for crystals.

The Northern Aurora Sword is powerful, but Lin Feng's current level is unable to exert all of its power.

The old peach tree could very likely be a solid Foundation Establishment level. Relying on the magic item of which he can only exert a portion of its strength, Lin Feng can only be said to have the strength to fight it. If they really fought, he probably still wouldn't be the old peach tree's opponent.

Unfortunately his time is limited, nobody knows when the old peach tree will strike out again. She is guarding right at Stone Village's entrance and is too big of a threat towards Xiao Budian and co. But unluckily besides Lin Feng nobody else has realized her danger.

The majority of people even treat the old peach tree as the village's protector. If Lin Feng runs over to warn them, he will instead be seen hostilely.

"Those two Yu family truth cultivators were wandering around in these deep mountains looking for Xiao Budian's location. They should also have companions and superiors. Maybe there's a Foundation Establishment expert amongst them." Lin Feng pondered in his heart: "If I can draw over Yu family's experts and have both sides get hurt in a fight with the old peach tree, then there will be a turning point for the situation."

“But who knows when I’ll be able to find them, the time might not be enough.”

Lin Feng was in the middle of thinking when he sensed something. A powerful mana fluctuation travelled over from far away, somebody was approaching this side at a very rapid speed.

Voices of people talking faintly travelled into his ears.

“Shimei, you should have decided long ago to go to that Xiao family to break the engagement.” (TL: Shimei, 师妹, the name for a female student of younger seniority in an apprenticeship/school/sect/etc. Doesn’t have to be same master or even the same school. There’s also shi, 师, which means master, but in this case it means school, and then family member name based on seniority. So shimei is like younger school sister... I mean, if you guys want I can put it like that, but I’d much rather not. I guess I could also just say, junior/senior, but it loses a bit of the meaning/doesn’t sound right.)

“Now isn’t too late either.”

Just finishing speaking, three white-clothed people carrying a sword on their backs had already appeared in front of Lin Feng.

Of the three people there is an old person. The old person is wreathed in smiles and brimming with energy and vitality. A pair of slightly small eyes but a sharp light occasionally flashed across his eyes.

Yet, it is exactly this kind of old person that looks ordinary and plain, whose entire body is releasing a powerful mana fluctuation as deep as the sea.

The characteristical mana fluctuation of Foundation Establishment level truth cultivators.

In regards to the first true Foundation Establishment cultivator that he's seen after coming to this world, Lin Feng did not have the time to pay attention to him.

Right now his entire attention is all focused on that girl by the old person's side.

Lin Feng's face revealed a warm smile like the sunlight, numerous thoughts flashing across in his heart.

“Breaking off an engagement? If I didn't hear wrong, the topic they were just talking about, is the legendary marriage annulment?” (TL: He's saying how in a lot of Chinese novels, something bad, such as breaking off an engagement which I guess is common enough, happens to the MC at the beginning which causes the MC to want to get stronger and eventually end up ruling the universe...)

Chapter 6: You're Going To Get Screwed

The young girl's facial features are very outstanding and incredibly elegant, her entire body exudes a refined, cold and beautiful extraordinary aura.

On her tender ears there hangs green coloured jade pendants, while they shook they released a crisp jade ring, unexpectedly displaying a hint of delicacy...

From appearances Lin Feng looked like a simple young boy being taken away by the young girl's beauty, slightly lowering his head in shame.

Actually he just doesn't want people to see that his two eyes are both glowing.

Marriage annulment, this is the legendary marriage annulment that created countless overpowered people!

Beside the girl is a teenager with the same white robed clothing as her. He has a tall body and his face is handsome, the mana fluctuations circling around his body show that he possesses Qi Disciple level 10 strength.

The white-robed teen swept Lin Feng with his gaze and then did not look at him anymore, turning his eyes towards the rock that had been destroyed by Lin Feng using the Norther Aurora Sword and wrinkling his forehead: "We already rushed over as soon as possible, logically speaking the person shouldn't have been able to

leave on time.”

The girl shook her head: “If the person’s gone then that’s that.”

The white-robed youth suddenly used his mana to wrap his voice, speaking to the girl: “Yanran-shimei, they say that Xiao Yan is also a cultivating genius, only afterwards for some unknown reason he fell over becoming a piece of trash now?”

Murong Yanran was a bit unhappy, her eyebrows slightly wrinkling: “There’s an outsider here, let’s stop talking about this.”

The white-robed youth lightly smiled: “It’s just a country boy, I’m using mana sound transmission, how could he possibly hear?”

Lin Feng stood on the spot unmoving blinking his eyes. He didn’t have the time to change into those taoist clothes and is still wearing a body of rough cloth clothes, he does indeed look like a mountain villager.

Hearing his words Murong Yanran shook her head: “Regardless if he is a genius or a loser I still have to go break off this engagement. Even grandfather cannot force me to marry a person that I’ve never seen before.”

Lin Feng’s expression became increasingly simple and honest, but his heart was already bursting with joy: “Awesome job woman! Just like this, not being moved by the outside world, steadfastly go and break off the marriage, I’ve got high hopes for you!”

Once a genius, now a loser, also a fiancée coming over to break off the marriage and humiliate him... Holy crap, this is definitely xuanhuan main character level treatment.

Right now Lin Feng wanted to go look for that Xiao Yan right away. He's finally understood, the system's demands for disciples is absurdly high, probably only those legendary people blessed by the world, story protagonist level characters can enter its eyes.

Even though right now he is unable to prove it, but deducing from Xiao Budian, Lin Feng is 80% confident that Xiao Yan should match the system's standards for approving disciples.

"Wait a sec, this kind of main character level OP little monster..."

Lin Feng suddenly thought, following Murong Yanran going over to break off the engagement, that Xiao Yan who is seemingly incredibly unlucky right now, he should most likely explode his inner cosmos after the marriage annulment.

Even though Lin Feng doesn't know whether he is carrying an old grandpa around with him, or picked up a super god item outside, or maybe found a godly manual from the crappy books in his parents' belongings...

Anyhow, as soon as Murong Yanren arrives and breaks off the engagement and Xiao Yan ignites his fighting spirit, it should then be time for him to turn things around.

Fish of the pond the golden carp they are not, dragons they do become when encounter they do a storm.

Only requiring a tiny little opportunity to help Xiao Yan get on the right track, using an old saying is having the wheels of fate start turning, and that kid will immediately become an unstoppable beast.

Lin Feng didn't plan to change the final result of Xiao Yan becoming a beast, he just wants to change the process of him become a beast, making himself become that storm that spurs Xiao Yan to change from a golden carp to a dragon.

In other words, going to be the old grandpa for Xiao Yan.

But at the moment Xiao Budian's matter still hasn't been solved, Lin Feng can't leave.

If I allow Murong Yanran to go break off the marriage right now and in the end let Xiao Yan call out a different old grandpa, then won't it be none of my business anymore?

This marriage has to be cancelled, but it definitely can't be now.

Thinking here, a thought appeared in his mind, a warm smile like the sun naturally appeared on his face.

The white-robed youth smiled saying: “If we can’t find the source of the mana fluctuation just now then forget it. We should rush over to the Xiao family in Wuzhou City as fast as possible, it’s still a long journey from here to Wuzhou City.

The white-robe old man that hadn’t spoken the entire time opened his mouth at this time saying: “Yanran, your talent is outstanding and your future cannot be measured. You are a core disciple of the Celeritas Sword Sect, you cannot waste time on a mundane human. But going over and breaking off a marriage is after all a disrespectful affair, remember to give that Xiao Yan some compensation.”

Murong Yanran and the white-robed youth nodded their heads saying: “In compliance with Elder Ye’s teachings.”

The white-robed old man Ye Ge nodded his head in satisfaction and then prepared to carry the two juniors on their journey, from beginning to end he treated Lin Feng like empty air.

Under the effect of the system, even Ye Ge who is at the Foundation Establishment level also did not see that Lin Feng is a cultivator.

At this time Lin Feng went over on his own, looking at the three people slightly in fear: “Three... These three masters, are you guys legendary sword celestials?” His expression was a just perfect 70% admiration and worship and 30% fear and timidity.

Murong Yanran slightly frowned, she did not speak.

The white-robed youth's face revealed a haughty expression, lightly nodding his head: "What do you want?"

Lin Feng's face revealed an expression of great joy, hurriedly saying: "In the village that I live in a demon has appeared. Please help us get rid of it, our entire village's people will all be extremely grateful, please save us!"

The white-robed revealed a dismissive expression. Deserted wild mountains have lots of legends of demons and spirits, it cannot be taken seriously.

Lin Feng continued saying: "I saw it myself, the old peach tree that had originally been turn into charcoal by lightning suddenly grew out new branches and even blossomed beautiful peach blossoms..."

The white-robed youth waved his hands cutting him off: "Being rejuvenated during the spring isn't really a rare thing."

Lin Feng repeatedly nodded his head: "Right, right, you are correct, but those peach blossoms will kill people, they killed a lot of people!"

Murong Yanran and the white-robed youth looked at each other, finally becoming interested: "Tell me, how did the peach blossoms kill a lot of people?"

Lin Feng hurriedly explained the course of how the peach blossoms flew down from the tree sticking on the foreheads of people and then how the flower petals flew back to the tree after sucking people dry.

The white-robed youth's eyebrows lifted up high. Hearing what Lin Feng described it does indeed seem like a peach tree becoming a demon and causing trouble. Being able to use flying flowers to kill people, this old peach tree has clearly already gained intelligence and grasped its own gifts and abilities.

This kind of demon has usually already formed a demon core, having value to kill it.

Murong Yanran's eyebrows wrinkled, looking towards the white-robed elder Ye Ge: "Elder Ye, let's just go, or else that tree demon could still kill even more people."

Ye Ge stroked his long beard, and then consulted Lin Feng in detail about the general course of how the old peach tree killed people, patiently confirming every detail.

With a simple and honest face, Lin Feng patiently answered each of Ye Ge's questions.

He wasn't afraid of Ye Ge questioning because everything he said was true.

It's just he left out a little tiny detail.

Lin Feng did not tell them that for the old peach tree, killing a Qi Disciple level 4 truth cultivator is also the same as killing an ant.

Ye Ge specially repeatedly asked about certain problems. After confirming that there were no mistakes to Lin Feng's responses, he finally nodded his head: "In the first place destroying evil and protecting justice is the duty of we Celeritas Sword Sect's cultivators. Encountering this tree demon today causing trouble we cannot leave it alone. Young man, lead the way."

Lin Feng's face was rejoiceful, profusely thanking them, in his heart he silently laughed: "Excellent!"

You three could not have come at a better time, just on time to help me go save my eldest disciple.

As the adversaries of my future second disciple, if I don't screw you guys over then who would I?

Chapter 7: Celeritas vs Peach Blossom

Yeah, my siblings came back from vacation yesterday so yeah. Anyways, here's the chapter. Remember to leave a comment in the comment section below, Seriously, I need comments, the thirst is real.

Lin Feng led Murong Yanran and the other two arriving outside of Stone Village, the area of battle before had not been cleaned up yet, the ground was littered with dried corpses and it was as terrifying as hell on earth.

It's not just Murong Yanran who nearly dry heaved when seeing this miserable scene, Ye Ge and the white-robed youth also had a big frown on their faces and felt nauseous.

The strong contrast of the charred withered tree trunk of the old peach tree at the village entrance matched with the charming peach blossoms entering the eyes made people feel a wave of uncomfortableness.

In this living hell like environment, the more exuberant the peach blossoms were the more eerier they appeared.

Lin Feng was just about to speak when a disturbance suddenly rose up in Stone Village. The swearing of adults and the crying of children mixed together, everybody ran towards the outside of the village from different directions. all of them keeping away from the old peach tree at the village entrance.

Lin Feng focused his eyes looking over, seeing that in the village, brilliant red peach blossom petals were flying in the air, chasing behind the villagers.

People that the flower petals attached to immediately had their vital essence sucked clean, turning into dried corpses.

Seeing in the crowd Xiao Budian who was protecting other people and running away with everybody, Lin Feng let out a long sigh of relief, calling out lucky in his heart.

Fortunately he encountered Murong Yanran and co., or else with the old peach tree striking out this quickly he really wouldn't have had any way to deal with the demon.

Against the peach blossoms chasing outside of the village, with a loud yell Lin Feng held his head and ran away, seemingly receiving a great fright.

Murong Yanran and the white-robed youth stared at the back of Lin Feng's figure that had already run far away, releasing a cold snort in unison: "Coward."

Lin Feng didn't know that his actions were in the middle of being looked down upon by people, even if he knew he also wouldn't care.

Of course he has to run, if he lets Xiao Budian and the village elder see him like this then how would he continue to act like a

peerless master?

On the other hand, Lin Feng also needs to leave the sights of the three people from the Celeritas Sword Sect as quick as possible to make preparations for himself striking out.

Regardless of who wins and loses Lin Feng will still make a move.

If the old peach tree wins Lin Feng naturally would not be happy, Right now it's not just the safety of Xiao Budian, he also has to ensure that if Murong Yanran and co. lose that they do not die and are able to escape alive. At least Murong Yanran this little chick absolutely cannot die.

Or else who would go to the Xiao family to break off the marriage?

But if Ye Ge and co. win too easily, then for Lin Feng that is also definitely not a good thing. God knows if they will take an eye towards Xiao Budian's potential and take him into the Celeritas Sword Sect's door?

Then Lin Feng will have lost everything.

A lose-lose situation for both sides is the result that Lin Feng is most happy to see.

And so, carefully finding a place and hiding himself, Lin Feng took out the Northern Aurora Sword, closely paying attention to

the battle.

The white-robed youth had already pulled his sword out of the scabbard, engaging the old peach tree first.

Only even though a level of Qi Disciple level 10 is impressive and he cut down a couple of peach blossoms, it is far from being the old peach tree's opponent.

When the white-robed youth's sword aura was about to cut the tree trunk, a change suddenly occurred to the old peach tree. The peach blossoms on the tree branches together released a pink coloured mist, connecting together and enveloping the old peach tree.

When the white-robed youth's sword cut into the pink mist, it was immediately like being caught in quicksand, unable to move.

"Vile spawn thou darest?" The white-robed youth's expression changed, wanting to call back the flying sword but it was caught by the pink mist, no matter how hard he tried he could not take it back.

Not only so, the red mist followed the white-robed youth's mana eroding over, counterattacking him. The white-robed youth's face was instantly flushed red, as if drunk from alcohol, only able to difficulty hold on.

The situation drastically plummeted, Ye Ge and Murong Yanran

were all greatly alarmed. Murong Yanran wanted to help out but was stopped by Ye Ge: “There’s something strange about this tree demon, don’t interfere.”

Ye Ge extended his arm and released an invisible sword qi with a sweep of his arm, cutting off the connection between the white-robed youth and the old peach tree. Saving the white-robed youth he handed him over to Murong Yanran: “You guys stand down, I will face this demon.”

Finishing speaking he pulled his sword out of the scabbard, stabbing forward and also releasing a golden coloured sword aura.

Ye Ge’s sword aura is a lot fiercer than the white-robed youth’s, like a fogbow streaking across the sky, the dazzling sword aura cut straight towards the old peach tree. (TL: Fogbow – a phenomenon similar to a rainbow, produced by sunlight shining on fog.)

The old peach tree repeated the same trick, the red mist became increasingly thicker blocking Ye Ge’s sword aura. Waves of ripples like water rose up on the red mist, the strength of Ye Ge’s fierce attack was actually also averted by her.

Lin Feng secretly said: “Thank god.” Taking head on the attack of Ye Ge who is a Foundation Establishment rank cultivator, this old peachtree really also has Foundation Establishment rank strength.

Good thing I wasn’t rash before or else even with the Northern Aurora Sword, running over to solo the old peach tree would just be a futile attempt without return.

Ye Ge gave a cold snort, the bright sword aura turned into a mist, suddenly expanding. The sword qi spread upward, forming a very imposing cloud pillar.

The cloud pillar expanded to the extreme, the mist directly burst apart becoming a rain of sword qi like a swarm of locusts, hundreds of thousands of sword qi together shooting in all directions.

The old peach tree was in no rush, the peach blossoms on the tree branches all floated down, forming a rain of flowers in the air and shooting towards Ye Ge.

Unlike the seemingly weak and floaty appearance seen before, the flower petals this time were like sharp arrows, soaring through the clouds and splitting rocks

The rain of flowers all over the sky met in mid air with the boundless sword qi, breaking out a striking collision.

Flower petals split, sword qi vanished, the two sides mingled together, the world was turned into a haze.

Lin Feng was hiding in cover and watching enraptured: "This is the power of Foundation Establishment rank cultivators, they are indeed skilled."

Lin Feng thought while watching, if he met a Foundation

Establishment rank cultivator, how should he deal with the person?

Naturally it would be best if he didn't have to fight, but if he had to attack then he has to first set up Nine Heavens Thunder Summoning to ambush, and then immediately use the Northern Aurora Sword to do a pincer attack while the person is dealing with being stuck by lightning.

Success is between these two moves, if even this kind of attack cannot defeat the opponent then he will immediately run away, running as fast as he can.

Overall, under the premise of first plotting against the opponent and ambushing, it's not that he can't win, but his chances of winning are still pretty low.

While Lin Feng was in the middle of his thoughts, the battle over there had already gradually intensified.

Between the collision of the sword qi and the flower storm, it seemed like Ye Ge was the better. After the sword qi crushed over a hundred peach blossoms, the remaining momentum did not stop, continuing to bombard towards the old peach tree.

Concentrated sword qi like a storm landed on the old peach tree.

The entire body of the old peach tree rippled with a layer of crimson red demonic aura, gorgeous and brilliant, bearing the

bombardment of the sword storm head on.

Like a rainstorm hitting water, wave after wave of ripples rose up on the red demonic aura. Maybe one beam of sword qi cannot break open the old peach tree's defense, but the attack this time is more than thousands of beams of sword qi. Being repeatedly attacked by such concentrated sword qi non-stop the old peach tree really does have a sort of precarious feeling.

Murong Yanran and the white-robed youth were all loudly cheering.

The Stone Village villagers that had escaped far away also stopped their footsteps, paying attention to the battle. Seeing Ye Ge have the advantage they also cheered together.

Only Lin Feng's eyes were slightly focused, his heart tightening a bit: "Something's wrong."

Naturally he wouldn't be worried about the old peach tree, it's that he sensed that the old peach tree seemed to be holding back.

Seeing the old peach tree only have the ability to withstand the attacks and not have the strength to retaliate, Ye Ge who has a cautious nature was also in high-spirits, the sword sign of his hands changed, his body fusing with the sword and together flying upwards.

The mist like sword qi also instantly became a brilliant sword

aura at this instant, human and sword as one, cutting straight down towards the old peach tree.

This attack gave up on the formless, fluctuating characteristic of the mist and focused all of the strength into lethality and destructive power. Ye Ge's mana surged, forming a powerful sword aura dozens of meters long and as wide as a door with peerless might and an invincible aura.

But right at this moment, a light laughed rang beside Lin Feng's ear.

It was that low and hoarse female voice, her laughing voice was filled with disdain and contempt.

Lin Feng's eyes jolted wide open, seeing the bright red demon aura around the old peach tree suddenly condense into a ball of light only the size of a fist.

The light orb looks unremarkable, but watching that light orb Lin Feng felt even his soul slightly tremble.

That is a strength compressed to the extreme, the destructive power has also reached the extreme. Lin Feng even saw that even the air around the light orb had already distorted, the space had a trend of collapsing towards the inside of the light orb.

Ye Ge's expression dramatically changed: "What a cunning demon!"

But he had already reached the end of his move, there was no more time to change. He could only brace himself and attack.

Ye Ge's sword aura collided with the old peach tree's light orb, a dazzling light burst forth causing everyone to be unable to open their eyes.

The instant that both sides made contact there was not much activity, but the next instant a deafening roar rose up.

A massive shockwave expanded in all directions, the Stone Village villagers far away were like blades of straw being blown all over the place by the powerful wind.

Against the shockwave, Lin Feng who was very far away also felt his chest tighten, the breath that he was originally about to exhale was actually suppressed, unable to breath out.

At the heart of the explosion, a human figure flew out, heavily falling onto the ground, it was exactly Ye Ge.

The Ye Ge right now no longer had the sage like appearance when they first met, the white robe on his body had already been dyed red with fresh blood.

Murong Yanran and the white-robed youth were all aghast, hastily going up and helping up Ye Ge. Before they could even speak they were cut off by Ye Ge, the old man hurriedly yelled:

“Go, go quick!”

Before his voice has died away, the old peach tree’s flowers fluttered in the wind, already preparing for a new round of attacks.

The three people of the Celeritas Sword Sect did not dare to hesitate, supporting each other and running away in a fluster. Right now their minds no longer had any thought of slaying evil, their only thought was one word: Run!

Yet at this moment Lin Feng summoned the Northern Aurora Sword, its blade pointing straight at the old peach tree.

“Now is the time!”

Chapter 8: I've Remembered You

The showdown between two Foundation Establishment rank powerhouses came to a close with the old peach tree's victory.

First appearing weak to the enemy and then after luring Ye Ge to advance rashly decisively using the strongest strength to engage, beating the complete crap out of this Foundation Establishment ranked cultivator of the Celeritas Sword Sect.

But the old peach tree herself also paid a relatively big price, that brilliant red protective demonic aura of hers had also vanished at this moment, only able to use the red mist and flower rain to organize a new offensive.

Even like this she is still not what the injured Ye Ge and co. can withstand, Ye Ge and co. hurriedly escaped.

Right at this time from a different direction, a powerful wave of mana fluctuations suddenly burst out, lightning and thunder surged making people breathless.

Lin Feng's face was pale, drenched in sweat.

Above his head the Northern Aurora Sword floated in the air. The sword was covered with arcs of lightning, sparks continuously jumped, the "Crackling" sound of electric currents roared.

Lin Feng's hand formed spell signs, his mouth complaining:

“This thing consumes too much mana, but this is still far from enough.” He felt his mana was practically about to be sucked dry by the Northern Aurora Sword.

Lin Feng didn't have a lot of chances, taking advantage of while the old peach tree has been heavily exhausted by Ye Ge is the best opportunity to defeat the old peach tree. this is a golden opportunity.

Suddenly, Lin Feng thought of something: “Oh right, how did I forget about that thing?”

He hurriedly took out the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade, attempting to draw out thunder energy from within.

With this he almost screwed up, the thunder essence in the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade is pure and so colossal, flowing into Lin Feng's body in an instant it almost turned him into charcoal.

Lin Feng's entire body was covered by lightning, from top to bottom his body was coursing with dense blue and purple lightning aura.

Don't mention sparks flying out from his entire body, even the hairs on his body had thunder energy that could not be held in blowing out.

At the crucial moment, Lin Feng circulated his Nine Heavens Thunder Technique to the extreme, his mind linking with the

Northern Aurora Sword above his head.

The colossal thunder energy finally found an outlet, immediately charging into the Northern Aurora Sword like a flood breaking through a dike.

Lin Feng carefully controlled the flow of the mana and spirit energy in his body, making himself become the bridge of communication between the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade and Northern Aurora Sword.

With the massive power supply of the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade the Northern Aurora Sword instantly became powerful, the lightning aura on the sword became increasingly condensed, in the end becoming a pure white, even the Northern Aurora Sword itself turned into a lightsaber.

At the tip of the lightsaber, lightning aura converged into a lightning ball. The size became increasingly bigger, revealing a power of mass destruction. Compared to the lightning that Lin Feng summoned before using the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning it was also even stronger.

The scariness of this lightning ball could already rival the light orb that the old peach tree created.

The commotion over at Lin Feng's side had already alarmed the people in the battle, both sides stopped fighting in uncertainty. Even though they couldn't see Lin Feng, they were all paying attention to the movement over at Lin Feng's side.

But before they could react, Lin Feng had already let loose.

An incredibly overbearing and powerful beam of dazzling lightning burst across the sky, striking towards the burnt old peach tree.

Northern Aurora Mystic Light!

The flowers of the old peach tree all violently shook, boundless red mist and an endless flower storm went to engage the Northern Aurora Mystic Light.

The lightning along with the red mist and flower storm met in mid-air, time seemed to stop at this instant, becoming infinitely slow. It was clearly just an instant, yet it was like a century had passed.

Every person looking discovered that they could clearly see the the flower rain and red mist bit by bit fragment, becoming specks of dust and then being swallowed by the lightning.

The enchanting flowers, inch by inch, foot by foot, all disintegrated like dust.

Lastly the old peach tree itself that is 8,9 meters tall with a diameter of a whole dozen meters was also covered in cracks like fractured porcelain.

Breaking, disintegrating, constantly fracturing, breaking again!

Countless pieces of wood charcoal fell onto the ground, this incredibly massive old peach tree was directly obliterated by this Northern Aurora Mystic Light of Lin Feng's!

Too bad for it that it had already been struck by lightning before and is now suffering a lightning calamity again, it is unable to hold on anymore.

Lin Feng saw the result of his one sword blow letting out a long sigh of relief. His mind felt a wave of weakness, he does not have the ability to do it again.

A sea of thunder energy was poured into the Northern Aurora Sword through his body causing his body to also bear a huge bearden, especially his heart which was suffering from waves of numbness.

But he quickly pulled himself together because he faintly saw that after the old peach tree was destroyed there was a while light that flashed by.

Even though it was just a split second, Lin Feng's expression still greatly changed.

That is a bare-footed woman with snow white clothes, her beauty is one that Lin Feng has never seen in his life before.

Murong Yanran could already be considered incredibly beautiful, but in front of this woman she was still a step below.

The beauty of this woman was in that her entire body did not have any imperfections, her beauty was breathtaking, her beauty was intoxicating... Her beauty was inhuman.

But Lin Feng's heart did not have the fiery feeling of seeing a beautiful woman like before.

He only felt a bone chilling coldness, his back drenched in cold sweat.

The white-clothed woman had her hair loose, her entire body did not have any accessories but she naturally revealed a tempting beauty.

Lin Feng felt her look over towards him, that low and hoarse female voice once again sounded beside his ears.

“My name is Long Ye, please remember it, because...” (TL: Long Ye, 胧夜, hazy night.)

Different from her elegant and enchanting appearance, her voice is extremely deep, yet it formed a sort of special allure, attracting people to willingly indulge in it.

But Lin Feng's mind did not have any romantic or amorous thoughts because the other half of this woman's sentence is like

this.

“... because, I’ve remembered you!”

Finishing speaking one sentence, with a flash the white figure had already disappeared, only leaving behind the remains of the wrecked old peach tree all over the ground.

Lin Feng brushed his nose, if it was possible he really wanted to say: “ Big sis, please don’t have good memory.”

Being remembered by a hot chick is a good thing, but that definitely doesn’t include Long Ye.

At this time, the other people were also like they had woken up from a dream.

The villagers of Stone Village were all cheering in joy when Ye Ge had the advantage, who knew that the situation would take a sudden turn for the worst and that the three people of the Celeritas Sword Sect would be defeated and flee. Right when people were in a panic, a sudden bolt of lightning from the sky directly killed the tree demon.

The ups and downs of life are honestly too quick, when the villagers returned to their senses a lot of people cried from joy, one by one they kowtowed in the direct that the lightning was released.

Ye Ge and co. who had escaped for a while were also dumbstruck at this moment. The white-robed youth said angrily: “Isn’t this guy a bit too good at picking up opportunities? Only attacking while taking advantage of after Elder Ye and that tree demon took each other down.”

Ye Ge shook his head: “Seeing the power of that lightning, that person’s strength is only above mine and not below.”

Murong Yanran said hesitantly: “Should we go back and take a look?”

While speaking, a hostile aura suddenly came over from the direction of the lightning, powerful mana fluctuations once again sprang up.

Ye Ge and co. all had an unhappy look, the white-robed youth said furiously: “Actually daring to provoke us the Celeritas Sword Sect?”

Murong Yanran glared at him: “Elder Ye is currently hurt, we can only let him be cocky.”

“Forget it, let’s go. In any case the tree demon has been eliminated.” Ye Ge sighed, looking towards Murong Yanran: “It’s just that we’ll need to delay a period of your time, I can only accompany you to the Wuzhou province Xiao family after I’ve recovered.”

Murong Yanran hurriedly said: “Of course it’s elder’s injury that is more important.”

Scaring off Murong Yanran and co., Lin Feng let out a breath of relief. He looked towards Xiao Budian in the crowd far off, his heart instantly becoming fervent: “Busying about for half a day it’s finally about to reach harvest time.”

As for the future trouble brought by Long Ye, Lin Feng could only first put it in the back of his mind. Right now all of his thoughts are about how he is finally about to have his first disciple.

Hurriedly changing into the taoist clothes and reverting back to that sage-like master appearance, Lin Feng snuck back to the elder’s house, finding a most comfortable position and then sitting in the elder’s house yard, quietly waiting for Xiao Budian and them to return.

After a moment, a group of people followed the elder and Xiao Budian walking into the yard, originally they were going to discuss the matters of taking care of the aftermath.

Who knew that just entering the door he saw Lin Feng carefree and content, sitting cross-legged, a magic sword placed horizontally across his knees. The lightning arcs that occasionally jumped on the magic sword instantly flashed them blind.

Xiao Budian was the first to react: “Daozhang, it was you that got rid of that old peach tree?” (TL: 道长, dao Zhang, a way to refer to taoist priests. I just left it out before or changed it to you, but I’ve

just decided to leave it as dao Zhang from now on.)

Lin Feng lightly smiled but did not speak.

Thinking of that talisman he gave to Xiao Budian before that summoned lightning and then seeing the Northern Aurora Sword on Lin Feng's knees, thinking of that miraculous lightning strike that destroyed the old peach tree, the Stone Village villagers immediately started cheering.

Everybody looked at Lin Feng in reverence, all of them kneeling down and thanking Lin Feng for saving them.

Even with the thickness of Lin Feng's skin he still felt embarrassed, but he still had to continue acting like a master so he could only force himself to hold on.

The old elder also walked over at this time thanking Lin Feng. After thanking him he seemed to have something to say, his gaze hesitantly shifting between Lin Feng and Xiao Budian.

Lin Feng's appearance was indifferent, but the corners of his eyes were looking at Xiao Budian the entire time, his inner heart calling out affectionately.

"Xiao Budian you little guy, hurry up and come into master's bowl." (TL: Come into his bowl, become his, you get it.)

Chapter 9: Hurry Up And Come Into Master's Bowl

The old elder's gaze hesitantly shifted between Lin Feng and Xiao Budian.

"Xiao Budian you little guy, hurry up and come in master's bowl." Lin Feng loudly cried in his heart, but on the appearance he still indifferently looked at Xiao Budian, calmly asking: "The talisman master left with you, you used it?"

Xiao Budian scratched his head in embarrassment, his face slightly red: "Eyah, I used it, I also looked for it later but I couldn't find it."

Lin Feng coolly laughed: "No harm, it was originally left for you to protect yourself, master also sensed the change in the talisman which is why I returned again."

Xiao Budian smiled saying: "Thank you dao Zhang for getting rid of the old peach tree and saving everybody."

Lin Feng lightly smiled, taking out another talisman and handing it to Xiao Budian: "Keep it safe and be careful in the future, master still has things to do so we'll split here, we'll meet again if fate wills it."

The exchanged thunder crystals have already been exhausted, just this talisman alone cannot activate the Nine Heaven Thunder

Summoning, but this didn't stop Lin Feng from pretending.

Finishing speaking Lin Feng straightened his body and got up. He put away the Northern Aurora Sword and headed towards the door.

Xiao Budian nodded his head innocently, but the old elders stared blankly on the spot. He thought Lin Feng would revisit the issue and take in Xiao Budian as his disciple.

The old man wants Lin Feng to take Xiao Budian as his disciple, but is also afraid of Xiao Budian's background being leaked and is in the middle of wrestling with himself, who knew Lin Feng is actually directly leaving.

Lin Feng's face was flat, walking towards the outside of the yard. The surrounding Stone Village villagers all made way for him with faces of reverence and gratitude.

"1, 2, 3..." Lin Feng walked while silently counting in his heart. Of course he couldn't just walk away like this or else what has he been working all day for?

It's just that you've gotta go all the way when acting, since he's playing the part of a sage-like master, then he needs to have the airs of a sage-like master.

Often times people will not value things that are obtained too easily, between masters and disciples it is also like so. If I am too

aggressive then the old elder and Xiao Budian would instead have doubts. If I am not that enthusiastic, then they will actively come over.

Sure enough, when Lin Feng counted to “10” in his heart, from behind him came the elder’s voice: “Xianzhang please wait!” (TL: Xianzhang, 仙长, a more venerable way of referring to daoist priests when people think they’re special, magical, godly.)

“Excellent.” Lin Feng laughed in his heart, the expression on his face not changing. He turned around but didn’t speak, just calmly looking at the old elder.

It’s clear that the old man made up his mind. He held Xiao Budian’s hand walking over, humbly but solemnly saying: “This child has had many hardships since he was born, being able to gain xianzhang’s favour is his good fortune. May xianzhang have mercy and take in this child.”

Lin Feng knew he had to display his magnanimity at this time, and so he didn’t create any difficulties, only calmly saying: “It’s not favouring and taking mercy, being able to continue our master-disciple relationship from last life I am also very happy. But whether or not he is willing to return as my disciple still requires this child to make up his own mind.”

After the old elder thought for a bit, he said towards the surrounding people: “Go home guys, in the past few days a chain of major events has happened, everyone’s family is a mess, why don’t you all go home first.”

Even though the villagers found it odd, but since the elder has spoken they all left one by one. Before leaving they profusely thanked Lin Feng again.

After a moment, only Lin Feng, the old elder and Xiao Budian remained in the yard. The old elder bowed saying: "I still have some secrets, if xianzhang allows it please enter into the house to speak."

Lin Feng nodded his head not minding. The three people went into the stone house together and sat down, the old elder looked at Xiao Budian affectionately: "Xiao Budian, are you willing to take this xianzhang as your master?"

Xiao Budian's dark eyes lit up like they were glowing, looking at Lin Feng: "Can I learn great skills like xianzhang?"

Lin Feng lightly smiled: "There's even greater ones."

Xiao Budian repeatedly nodded his head, a face of anticipation: "Ah, I'm willing, I'm willing."

Lin Feng put away his smile, slowly saying: "Although, if you want to be my disciple you'll have to leave the village with master, master will not stay here long."

Hearing this Xiao Budian immediately started hesitating, anxiously looking at Lin Feng and then looking towards the old

elder.

The old elder gave a dry cough, saying with a serious face: “Xiao Budian, aren’t you always asking me where your father and mother went?”

Xiao Budian blinked his eyes, saying: “I have a slight impression in my mind but I’m always unable to remember it. Grandpa you’re finally willing to tell me?”

The elder nodded his head and then looked towards Lin Feng: “Allow me to tell Xian Zhang, this child... His background is very special, it might bring you trouble in the future. He... He comes from the royal family of the Great Qin dynasty and is also related to the Yu family of the great Qin dynasty.

Lin Feng’s heart slightly jumped, the dynasties of this Heaven Primal world are different from the dynasties of Earth’s history, the ones that can be crowned as kings to rule a country are all powerful truth cultivators.

The so-called royal family of a dynasty, it’s better to call them extremely powerful cultivator families, enough to compete with great sects.

Lin Feng knows this is the last test of the old man, but he will absolutely not give up on Xiao Budian this disciple.

Are you joking, in front of Xiao Budian this kind of MC level

character, who cares if you're a 10 thousand year sect or a thousand year dynasty, they're all just backgrounds and stepping stones. The path may be bumpy, but the future is destined to be bright.

Not to mention, if you take a step back the ultimate goal of Lin Feng's Super Founder System is to establish history's number 1 sect. To complete this task he'll naturally have to collide with the current forces of the world.

Lin Feng's eyes became a bit serious, the corners of his lips drawing up a light smile but not speaking.

The change in his expression already clearly told the old elder, he knows the weight of the opponent but is still confident and not afraid.

Sure enough, the old elder let out a breath of relief, saying with a smile: "It's I that was not knowledgeable, do not be offended xianzhang." Speaking he let out a sigh, looking towards Xiao Budian: "This child's origin is incredibly precious, but he has had many hardships..."

Xiao Budian naturally has a name, his true name is Shi Tianhao, born in the line of the Great Qin dynasty's royal family. Even though he is not part of the main branch, he is still of nobility.

Shi Tianhao's grandfather and father are all great cultivators with very high levels. Shi Tianhao is especially extraordinary, a natural-born Foundation Establishment rank. Just being born he'd

already crossed a threshold that the myriad of living beings might not be able to pass even if they try for their entire lives.

Mundane martial artists being able to guide qi into their bodies are Qi Disciple cultivators, Qi Disciple cultivators advance to Foundation Establishment rank cultivators when they forge their dao root.

There is also a distinction between dao roots. The rank of the practised dao technique and the cultivator's own talent will also affect the dao root's grade. Usually they are classified as mortal class, spirit class, earth class and heaven class these four ranks.

The quality of one's dao root not only causes a difference in strength of same level cultivators, but also determines the future prospect of one's cultivation path.

And Shi Tianhao this little guy, was not only born with a dao root, his dao root was also the incredibly rare sovereign dao root that is above heaven class dao roots.

While listening the expression on Lin Feng's face didn't change, but he was actually bursting with joy in secret, constantly muttering in his heart: "a bone root of 10, a bone root of 10..."

Listening to here Lin Feng was also a bit confused. With such amazing talent Xiao Budian should be treated like a treasure no matter where you put him. Afraid to drop him while holding him and afraid that he'll melt in the mouth, how come he suffered disaster?

The old elder's following explanation solved Lin Feng's question.

It turns out that even though Xiao Budian had a natural born dao root it was not exhibited at the first moment. But when his parents discovered it, it was just when his grandfather had gone missing in a dangerous place. Xiao Budian's parents were anxious to look for and save his grandfather so they were forced to place Xiao Budian who was not even half-a-year old in a different family.

With this a problem occurred. This family also had a little prodigy, his name was Shi Tianyi and he was a few years older than Xiao Budian. He was born with two pupils in each eye and saw through Xiao Budian possessing a sovereign dao root. (TL: In Chinese ancient legends, those with two pupils are usually saints, in this case having special powers.)

In the end Shi Tianyi's mother plotted against Xiao Budian, finding a person to use a spell and robbing Xiao Budian's sovereign dao root, transplanting it onto her son Shi Tianyi.

When Xiao Budian's parents returned everything was already too late. The sovereign dao root had already completely fused with Shi Tianyi, to take it back they would need to kill Shi Tianyi. This is something that the imperial family the Shi family could not accept.

As a result Xiao Budian's parents created a big uproar, fighting their way out of Great Qin's imperial capital. In the end to save Xiao Budian who was dying they were forced to go to a dangerous place to look for medicine.

When the old elder was young he once adventured in the outer world and learned some basic dao techniques. He also befriended Xiao Budian's father. Even though today the level between the two people is already the difference between the sky and the earth, their friendship still exists. Thus Xiao Budian was temporarily placed at the old elder's house.

Only they haven't heard a word from Xiao Budian's parents for 3 years since they went out to look for medicine.

The old elder let out a sigh: "Before the old tree demon caused trouble, there were already Yu family's people that found this place. The Yu family is the family of Shi Tianyi's maternal grandfather. Who knew that they are actually so cruel, not stopping after robbing Xiao Budian's sovereign dao root and actually also wanting to finish him off.

The Yu family is ranked as the Great Qin dynasty's 4 great clans and is also a powerful cultivator family. Strong people appear in the clan every generation, the two people that arrived in this mountain this time were just the lowest grade servants.

Finishing speaking the old elder fell into silence, anxiously looking at Lin Feng, Lin Feng in turn was observing Xiao Budian.

In the process of the old elder's explanation, Xiao Budian was first shocked, but then after a moment his entire body shook. His gaze was filled with confusion, in the end it was filled with sadness, tears flowed down without stop.

“Grandpa, I remember now, I remember...” Xiao Budian’s face was filled with tears. He was born with a dao root and developed his intelligence far earlier than normal children. He knew everything about his bitter childhood experience, but exactly because it was too miserable so a lot of things were actually purposely forgotten by him.

The old elder repeatedly sighed, Lin Feng himself was calmly staring at Xiao Budian, asking: “You’ve remember the matters from before, what do you think right now?”

“I am very pained, father mother, where are you guys now?” Xiao Budian continuously shed tears.

Lin Feng nodded his head: “A kind child.” Following he opened his mouth saying: “You have lost your sovereign dao root, don’t you hate that clan brother called Shi Tianyi. He himself was already born with dual pupils and has also obtained your sovereign dao root, now even other prodigies probably also have difficulty approaching his greatness.”

Xiao Budian gradually calmed down, wiping his tears and saying: “Isn’t it just a dao root. A sovereign is not appointed, it is carved by one’s own footsteps step by step, I will wait for him at Primordial Soul!” (TL: Primordial Soul is a rank.)

Lin Feng smiled, Xiao Budian was struck by a thought, getting down on his knees: “Please take me in master and teach me dao techniques.”

At this moment the system notification sound rang in his mind, like the voice of a goddess to Lin Feng.

“Congratulations on host taking in your first disciple Shi Tianhao.”

“Host has obtained reward of one lottery chance and 500 trading points.”

Chapter 10: The Second Lottery Chance

Fighting the Yu family's cultivators, screwing over Murong Yanran and co., the fierce battle with the old peach tree.

Working hard for so long Lin Feng finally reached harvest time. Looking at Xiao Budian who was following behind him Lin Feng's mood was unprecedentedly happy.

Bidding farewell to the people of Stone Village and inquiring about the path towards Wuzhou city, Lin Feng brought Xiao Budian and hit the road.

At Wuzhou there is still a Xiao Yan who is suspected to be a main character waiting for him.

From Stone Village to Wuzhou one must go through the vast mountains and traverse the primitive jungles in the mountains.

The primitive jungles are definitely not the forests in human society, only people that have come before can understand this point.

Giant trees that shroud the sky and cover the sun, every year they create an astronomical number of fallen leaves. And in this damp and humid area the defoliation cannot turn into dry soil but will instead go through a very long decaying process, becoming a flat marsh together with the moist soil and turning into the scariest traps in the jungle.

And the bugs in the jungle are many times bigger than the regular ones seen outside. Swarms of hovering mosquitos are practically like flocks and flocks of birds!

The tree trunks on the side are covered with some old green tree vines, discreetly intertwined, layer after layer circle after circle. But one time when Lin Feng walked past, a dark green snake hiding in the tree vines suddenly sprang out!

Lin Feng had to admit, having him trek in this primitive jungle alone is a very dangerous matter. But now with Xiao Budian everything is different.

Despite him being not even 4 years old, Xiao Budian who has grown up in these mountains is already a veteran of jungle life.

With him leading in front, Lin Feng even had the time to check out his own Super Founder System while walking.

After Xiao Budian became his disciple, a new disciple system branch appeared in the system.

Right now in the disciple system's name list there's still only just Xiao Budian.

Name: Shi Tianhao

Age: 3 years 07 months

Current Level: Qi Disciple Level 2

Potential Attributes: Bone Root → 10; Comprehension → 8; Will → 8; Luck → 8

Note: A very strong body, far superior to regular Qi Disciple level 2 truth cultivators.

Recommended Teaching Plan: Recommended to practice thunder class dao techniques, in terms of abilities he can train in both spells and martial arts.

Lin Feng nodded his head in satisfaction, he can just perfectly pass onto Xiao Budian the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique.

He entered into the lottery system again. When he took in Xiao Budian as his disciple the system rewarded him with a lottery chance.

The dice system and the wheel system, Lin Feng looked at all of the randomly chosen lottery prizes and was slightly disappointed. There was nothing particularly good, he could only place his hopes on the mystery chest.

After the Northern Aurora Sword last time, Lin Feng already knows that this mystery chest is actually equivalent to a special big prize and can usually give a good item.

This time Lin Feng chose the wheel system.

In the void, 18 grids formed a round circle. 15 items were placed within plus a mystery chest with a question mark. There also

remains two empty spaces.

“Chest, chest, chest... Start!”

With a thought, a dot of light appeared in the wheel and started rapidly spinning around the wheel.

Approximately after two rounds the dot of light's speed slowed down. Lin Feng closely stared at the light spot, calculating where it will stop in his heart.

The further the dot of light went the slower it became, it was also increasingly closer to the mystery chest.

The three things are respectively the spell Flame Saber, the Evil Suppression Talisman and the mystery chest.

Flame Saber is a higher level spell compared to Fireball and Palm Thunder these kinds of common spells. For Lin Feng who is currently at Qi Disciple rank it is just perfect for use. Spells that are too high grade have high demands and are instead not so easy to use.

The Evil Suppression Talisman is a type of very versatile talisman, it specially destroys demons and spirits. Even though it's just a one-time use item, if it's used properly it is even more useful than Flame Saber.

These two item are both in the trading system, they both require

a couple hundred trading points.

But their appeal evidently still cannot compete with the mystery chest.

The light dot arrived at Flame Saber, seemingly wanting to stop. Lin Feng held his breath, not daring to release any sounds but he was constantly yelling in his heart: “Past, past, past!”

As if hearing Lin Feng’s thoughts the dot of light slowly moved past Flame Saber arriving at the grid of the Evil Suppression Talisman.

“Past again, past again, past again!”

The dot of light did not disappoint, once more moving past the Evil Suppression Talisman as Lin Feng wished.

Lin Feng was delighted in his heart. My luck is pretty good, a total of two lotteries and I got the special prize each time.

“Could it be that my luck is also very high?” Lin Feng delightfully thought in his heart, the corners of his eyes glancing towards the wheel and almost being scared to death.

The light dot was actually still moving and was about to move past the mystery chest.

Lin Feng was immediately anxious: “Stop! Stop! Stop... Fuck!”

The dot of light finally shakily stopped, but it had already passed by the mystery chest landing on the grid after it.

Lin Feng looked over, becoming dazed.

Spirit Calming Grass.

Has the effect of calming and stabilizing one's soul and is the main material of the Soul Anchoring Pill. Their numbers are very few and are hard to find.

Lin Feng frowned, his gaze freezing on the Spirit Calming Grass that had already fallen into his hands.

Just now he sensed a thought flash across his mind, this Spirit Calming Grass seems to have a great use towards him.

But this thought was very hazy, Lin Feng hastily entered the trading system and found the Soul Anchoring Pill, looking at the description.

The Soul Anchoring Pill is useless to regular people but can allow spirits and ghosts that have lost their physical body to stabilize their spirit bodies. They can travel long distances during the day, wander for 10 thousand miles and not damage or break their souls.

Lin Feng pondered for a moment, gradually having an idea but it was still not clear enough. He still needs to plan things out for a long time, and so he put away the Spirit Calming Grass continuing to look through the trading system.

Taking in Xiao Budian as his disciple this time, besides the lottery chance he was also rewarded 500 trading point, even more than the initial capital the novice gift provided him.

Lin Feng prepared to trade for a spell or an ability.

For techniques he already has the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique, for magic items he has the Northern Aurora Sword so he isn't in a urgent need of both. On the contrary in terms of spells, even though the power of Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning is extraordinary, it has too many restrictions and has many inconveniences when in actual combat.

Ultimately, Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning is actually a formation technique. The user plants the spell formation in advance and then draws on the power of the world with the aid of the formation.

But everything has its advantages and disadvantages. The power of formations is great but planting the formation is not easy. Not talking about how spell formations are dead and cannot be moved, just setting up the spell formation requires many materials and time. When encountering sudden situations it is very easy to be taken by surprise.

So this time Lin Feng decided to trade for a spell or ability, he has his eyes on a spell called Cloud Dragon Escape.

Escape techniques are very important towards cultivators. If one is skillful in escape techniques, they can run away if they are no match for the opponent and chase after the opponent if they can beat the opponent and they escape.

Cloud Dragon Escape is actually a branch of a great escape technique. This great ability is called “Dragon Escape” which includes Cloud Dragon Escape, Shadow Dragon Escape, Water Dragon Escape and many other escape techniques with different uses.

Only the amount of trading points to trade for the entire Dragon Escape is too much, it is entirely not what Lin Feng can afford at the moment. He could only take a step back. After seriously thinking and screening, he chose Cloud Dragon Escape this branch.

The escape technique of the Cloud Dragon Escape Technique is mainly used in short distance movement and dodging in small areas. The practitioner’s feet move like a snake and dragon, like riding on a cloud making the opponent unable to touch the corner of your clothes. It has a very great value in practical combat.

His consciousness backed out of the system and discovered that Xiao Budian was staring at him in anticipation: “Master, when can I learn dao techniques with you?”

Lin Feng lightly smiled, patting his head: “Relax you are master’s

senior disciple, how could master forget about you?”

Xiao Budian’s big black eyes turned: “Master, I don’t want to be the senior disciple. I... I want to be the youngest disciple.”

Lin Feng was a bit confused, looking at Xiao Budian in front of him who was like a porcelain doll with rosy red lips and pretty white teeth: “Don’t worry, even though you are still young you have entered the sect the longest, there is no problem in you being the eldest disciple. In the future when master takes in disciples they’ll all have to quietly be your juniors.

Xiao Budian grabbed Lin Feng’s hand and shook it: “But master, I really want to be the youngest disciple.”

Lin Feng said in wonder: “Why?”

The tips of Xiao Budian’s feet grinded the ground, lowering his head in embarrassment: “In the village it was like this, whoever’s family has multiple children, usually it’s always the youngest one that people dote on more... In the village I was the youngest child so everybody adored me the most...”

Lin Feng looked dumbfounded at Xiao Budian in front of him who was filled with mischief, after a long while Lin Feng said half-angrily half-laughingly: “You little imp, I don’t know if I should call you smart or foolish. That’s in your Stone Village, not every place is the same.”

“On the contrary, in some places the younger one is the more they are bullied.” Lin Feng looked at Xiao Budian with a faint smile: “Have you thought clearly, if you want to always be the smallest then there’s also no problem with that. Don’t regret it in the future when those seniors of yours tell you to go get washing water and scrub the toilet.

Xiao Budian’s eyes turned, holding onto Lin Feng’s hand and shaking it while grinning. He said smilingly: “I’ll get washing water, scrub the toilet and massage the shoulders for master. With master around and Xiao Budian being so good, surely my seniors won’t trouble me.”

Lin Feng looked at the little imp in front of his eyes, silently for a short while. In the end he let out a laugh, poking Xiao Budian’s forehead: “Oh you...”

Xiao Budian revealed an innocent smile, laughing with a smile.

Chapter 11: Master Must Strive To Strengthen Himself

Dropping from the eldest disciple of the head of the sect straight down to the youngest disciple, Xiao Budian himself laughed heartlessly, like he'd picked up a huge bargain.

Lin Feng secretly let out a breath of relief in his heart. Regardless if it's intentional or unintentional Xiao Budian solved a big problem for him by doing this.

Or else if he takes in more disciples later and they know that above their heads there is a little 4 year old kid as their senior, it's inevitable that there will be concerns.

Lin Feng looked at Xiao Budian smilingly, saying in his heart: "Atta boy, just for you being so understanding master will also cover you."

Regardless if he's the eldest disciple or the youngest disciple right now Lin Feng only has Xiao Budian this one disciple, he is only able to experience the pleasure of being a teacher from him.

But very quickly Lin Feng was secretly depressed, because he discovered that Xiao Budian's comprehension in cultivation is extremely high, he is able to see how things will develop from one small clue and is able to infer other things from one fact. Even the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique this kind of high-end dao technique Xiao Budian is able to learn it effortlessly.

The escape technique Cloud Dragon Escape is even more effortless for him.

Compared to his max level bone root of 10, Xiao Budian's comprehension of 8 didn't seem to be that eye-catching.

But in reality?

A comprehension of 8 is still super genius level, one in a million.

Lin Feng didn't even need to guide him. Teaching everything to Xiao Budian like stuffing a duck and then letting him figure it out on his own was enough.

Facing this kind of disciple, while Lin Feng sighed about the extraordinariness of the main character aura he also felt pressure as big as a mountain.

He needs to quickly increase his own strength, or else if in the end any one of his disciples are all even stronger than him this master, that would be too shameful.

Lin Feng clearly understands that regardless if it's Xiao Budian in front of him or that Xiao Yan in Wuzhou City, in the future these main characters are destined to step on a path of the strong filled with thorns and fire.

They will be like giant magnets of infinite magnetism, attracting all kinds of savage, cunning, powerful, or sinister enemies from all over the world in all directions like moths flying into a fire, crying and shouting and jumping at them.

Of course, after these chains of soul-stirring, earth shaking epic battles, Xiao Budian and co. are destined to obtain victory, writing their own legend. The problem is, what role will he, Lin Feng, play in the story?

Just looking at the current situation, he can only be considered a mentor of initiation.

And this kind of mentor of initiation, usually only has two types of results.

One, they are an important figure, life teacher or even spiritual pillar towards the main character on a spiritual level. Once they die it will usually ignite the main character's inner cosmos driving them to wreak hell.

Old grandpas aren't omnipotent, on the contrary old grandpas are usually in a downed state which is why they are able to meet the main character when he is still insignificant and yet to rise up. Even if old grandpas don't die they could also be captured by the main character's arch-enemy, being tortured, suffering hardships, waiting for the main character to go save them.

Two, as their mentor of initiation, they only play the role of a guide, responsible for bring the main character into the world of

the strong. Afterwards it's none of the mentor's business, there will naturally be higher-levelled masters or big sects to take over the main character. They are the true characters responsible for teaching the main character.

One is cannon fodder, the other is just a bystander.

Evidently no matter which one they are all not what Lin Feng can accept.

To avoid these two circumstances there is only one path, that is to get stronger himself.

Even though they are hurrying towards Wuzhou, but while they are travelling Lin Feng is also grabbing hold of every possible moment to train and increase his strength.

For the current Lin Feng the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade is a priceless treasure that he wouldn't trade for anything. Through absorbing the pure thunder energy inside Lin Feng's training speed is many times faster than under his normal condition.

If not for the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade acting as the Northern Aurora Sword's energy source, Lin Feng would continue to suck clean all of the thunder energy within.

Xiao Budian is also training diligently, although while training Xiao Budian also has some other thoughts.

Lin Feng looked at Xiao Budian who was blushing, unable to help but being a bit dazed: “Are you sure?”

Xiao Budian lowered his head in embarrassment: “Eyah, it’s not like I have to drink it, I just like to drink it, like... Just like how grandpa elder likes to drink alcohol!”

Seemingly thinking of a pretty good reason Xiao Budian immediately became energetic, a pair of black shining eyes glowing and looking at Lin Feng with a face of hope.

But Lin Feng had a throbbing headache, no matter what he didn’t think that Xiao Budian who is a main character level figure, actually still hasn’t cut off milk at three and a half years old.

Although thinking of how there were still some adults in his previous life on Earth who drank milk, Lin Feng felt at ease: “Fine then, drinking milk is beneficial to the body’s health.”

The difficulty of hunting instantly rose up a lot, it has to be a female beast at the lactation period and it has to be caught alive.

After searching for several days Lin Feng finally captured a five-pawed violet gold leopard.

This is an abnormal species, compared to regular leopards it has an extra paw below its stomach. It runs like the wind and can travel on cliffs like walking on flat land. It can also spit out fire and lightning from its mouth, its nature is extremely aggressive.

It isn't hard for Lin Feng to kill this mother leopard, but wanting to subdue her and have her obediently provide animal milk for Xiao Budian, that is a technical skill.

In the end, Lin Feng was tired of its dawdling and directly held its cub hostage. Under Lin Feng's despicable blackmailing the mother leopard finally submitted.

And so Lin Feng and Xiao Budian also gained a mount, when travelling they sat on the five-pawed violet gold leopard, when resting Xiao Budian delightfully muzzled over below the mother leopard's belly.

After a couple of days the five-pawed violet gold leopard was finally released, it was not Lin Feng showing mercy but instead Xiao Budian wanting to change flavours.

Xiao Budian spoke plausibly: "Hundred animal milk is actually the most delicious, it's a lot better than the taste of a single animal's milk."

Lin Feng knocked on his little head: "You brat, this mouth of yours is not only gluttonous, it's also very picky. Right now there's no hundred animal milk, we'll switch around the single ones." Unable to help but sigh, not only does he have to be a master, he also has to be a milk dad. (TL: Milk dad is what the Chinese call fathers that take care of the child instead of the mother... But it's pretty literal in this case.)

Master and disciple travelled through the mountains, very quickly going through the mountain range. Outside of the mountain range Wuzhou City is already very close.

In a month's time, with the help of the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade Lin Feng already advanced from Qi Disciple level 4 to the peak of Qi Disciple level 6. He can already attack the level of Qi Disciple level 7.

But comparisons are odious, also in one month's time, also practising the the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique, Xiao Budian also advanced from Qi Disciple level 2 to Qi Disciple level 4.

Lin Feng was a bit speechless, I've got the help of the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade dammit...

"We've already reached the outer circle of the mountain range, we'll probably get out of the mountains in just a few days." Lin Feng gathered his thoughts, his mind slowly immersed in training: "I'll strive to reach Qi Disciple level 7 before we leave the mountains."

Lin Feng quietly did breathing exercises, constantly drawing energy from the outside world and bringing it into his body.

The energy stored in his dantian was constantly being refined and purified, and then flowing in the veins of his entire body, nourishing his soul and altering his body.

After the energy circulated throughout his entire body 36 times Lin Feng's eyes suddenly opened, all of the energy was gathered together and then charging at the seventh nerve point under the drive of the mana in the first six nerve points.

Following the constant passage of time Lin Feng gradually felt a slight feeling of exhaustion and the seventh nerve point still had no movement. This is a very dangerous signal, it means that Lin Feng's attempt this time could very likely end in failure.

If he fails this time everything he will need to start over from the beginning again.

“Success or failure it's a one shot deal!” Even though a layer of fine sweat had already slowly appeared on his head, Lin Feng's expression was filled with determination. His mind linked with the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade absorbing thunder energy from within it to support himself to continue charging at the nerve point.

Lin Feng didn't use brute force, instead turning the mana and energy in his body into a type of spiral manner to break through the nerve point.

While the spiral shaped energy acted as the main force and attacked from the front, Lin Feng carefully pulled out a few slivers of weak energy, adopting the method of going around from the side and slowly massaging the nerve point, bit by bit penetrating within causing it to constantly loosen.

Under the simultaneous methods of attacking from the front and penetrating from the sides, a change finally happened to the seventh nerve point right before Lin Feng was about to become exhausted again!

The invisible barrier that had originally been constantly obstructing the circulation of the mana and energy, like the dam blocking the river finally collapsed under the constant assault of the river water. The energy in Lin Feng's body roared downwards, entering into the seventh nerve point.

An abundance of energy circled in the nerve point, as if it were a constantly revolving stardust universe. Here, energy was constantly being converted into Lin Feng's own mana.

Qi Disciple level 7, complete.

Lin Feng's face revealed a smile. He exhaled a long breath discharging all of the muddy air without any spiritual power out of his body.

Exhaling and inhaling a few more times and nourishing the newly opened nerve point for a moment, Lin Feng stood up and stretched: "It wasn't easy this time! Hehe, although I still succeeded."

Lin Feng just felt rejoiceful when he found that Xiao Budian had disappeared, he helplessly sighed. Xiao Budian who was not even four years old fully displayed the so called naughty child characteristic, jumping up and down not willing to calm down for

an instant, who knows where he's gone off to this time to go bananas.

After mastering Cloud Dragon Escape's ability, all of the birds and beasts in the forest suffered a calamity.

This time while Lin Feng was in the middle of breaking through the seventh nerve point, Xiao Budian had his mind hooked away by a beautiful yellow coloured sparrow.

Xiao Budian pursued the yellow sparrow deep into the woods. The yellow sparrow doesn't look big but it is an abnormal species, it's flying speed is fast like lightning. The Qi Disciple level 4 Xiao Budian pounced at it a couple times and was unable to grab it.

Xiao Budian was not discouraged and thought of Lin Feng's teachings: "Recklessness and impatience have no use, attentively figure out the details of the target and you'll naturally have it in the bag."

Thinking here Xiao Budian no longer blindly pounced, instead patiently observing the yellow sparrow's flight pattern. After a moment Xiao Budian suddenly jumped up, Qi Disciple level 4 mana surging in his tiny body, arriving in front of the yellow bird in an instant.

It was too late for the yellow sparrow to run away again and it was grabbed by Xiao Budian.

Xiao Budian happily laughed, shaking the yellow sparrow's feathers. He was in the middle of happily playing when he suddenly sensed something. Turning his head he saw a red robed youth underneath a tree looking at him with an expression of shock.

Chapter 12: Encountering A Disciple Stealer

Of course the red-robed is shocked, this little guy in front of him has actually already reached the level of Qi Disciple level 4 at such a young age. Even in his sect this kind of talent is also unique.

“If I bring this little guy back the elders in the sect will definitely go crazy, even the sect master will not be able to sit tight. At this time I’ve made a great contribution...” Thinking here the red-robed youth’s heart instantly heated up, looking at Xiao Budian with a grin.

Xiao Budian glanced at this red-robed youth a bit cautiously but on the surface he still had an innocent and naive look.

The red-robed youth said smilingly: “Kid, where is your family?”

Xiao Budian blinked his eyes: “I came out with my master.”

The red-robed youth asked: “Which sect are you? Who is your master?” Xiao Budian shook his head: “I don’t have a sect, master is master.”

“There’s a chance, looks like his master isn’t from some kind of big sect, he’s probably a wandering cultivator.” The red-robed youth completely relaxed, his face unconsciously revealing a hint of arrogance: “Kid, you and I meeting today is your immortal opportunity. Come, return with me to the sect and you will be taught supreme dao techniques, achieving the way of the universe.”

Xiao Budian blinked his big, black eyes, his face filled with an expression of blankness.

The red-robed youth woke up in realization, calling himself a fool. No matter how high the talent of the little guy in front of him, he is still just a child.

Thus he changed his tone: “Big brother is a disciple of the Blaze Sword Sect, have you heard of the Blaze Sword Sect? In the entire world the strongest sect is us the Blaze Sword Sect. If you enter the sword sect no one will dare to bully you again. You’ll be entirely able to do whatever you want.”

Xiao Budian opened his mouth, in the end saying: “But I have a master already.”

The red-robed youth smiled faintly: “There’s no harm, you can still enter into the Blaze Sword Sect. Bring me to go see your master, I’ll speak with him. He will naturally agree.”

He laughed lightly shaking his head: “If that master of yours is really thinking about what’s best for you he will naturally agree to you changing to under the Blaze Sword Sect. Because only like this can you obtain the best development and not let your talent go unrecognised. What can a wandering cultivator teach you? That’s completely wasting and burying your talent.”

After the red-robed youth glanced at Xiao Budian he continued to say slowly: “Of course, if he wants he can also join our Blaze Sword

Sect and be a guest elder, we naturally won't treat him poorly. Like this you can also meet up with him regularly, for everybody this is the best result."

In the red-robed youths mind, a tiny wandering cultivator being able to be a guest elder at his sect is really his good fortune.

When he obtains this promise he'll be head over heels to give out his disciple. At that point I won't even need to convince him any more and this little guy's master will be rushing him to come over to the sect.

The red-robed youth was in the middle of thinking happily when he saw the little guy in front of him turn around and run backwards after smiling, only leaving behind an increasingly smaller figure of his back.

"What is this?" The red-robed youth blanked: "He's too happy so he rushed back to tell that master of his?"

The red-robed youth hoped so much that it was this result, but his instincts told him that things were not going well. The red-robed youth didn't dare to hesitate anymore, rapidly chasing after Xiao Budian.

Originally he thought that it would not take too much effort to catch up to Xiao Budian, but after only chasing after him for two steps the red-robed youth received a big surprise.

Xiao Budian let out a long, clear cry, under the surging of his mana the skeleton and muscles of his whole body were like they'd connected into a line, turning in a giant dragon flying outside of the heavens, floundering and shifting in the clouds, appearing and disappearing.

The ability of Cloud Dragon Escape was used by Xiao Budian, he was truly like a dragon appearing at one moment and disappearing the next, like a dragon hiding its head and disappearing in the clouds.

A couple of ups and downs in the thick forest and Xiao Budian disappeared from the red-robed youth's sight causing him to stop his steps from shock. He said dumbfounded: "My level is Qi Disciple level 6, to think that I would actually be ditched by a Qi Disciple level 4 little kid?!"

Yet he didn't know that Xiao Budian was also very unsatisfied in his heart: "I still haven't exerted this escape technique to the limit. If it was master he would ditch that big red monkey out of sight in a flash."

Xiao Budian was careful and purposely went around in the forest a couple of circles. After confirming that he'd already completely ditched the red-robed youth he ran back and met up with Lin Feng.

Hearing Xiao Budian retell what happened Lin Feng secretly furrowed his eyebrows.

Blaze Sword Sect.

Even though the Stone Village elder's level isn't high, he traveled extensively when he was young and is quite knowledgeable. Before leaving Lin Feng had talked with him a couple of times and secretly obtained a lot of information from him.

This Blaze Sword Sect is the same as the Celeritas Sword Sect, they are both one of the few top-level sects in the borders of the Great Qin Dynasty. The sect has countless people of strength, like Ye Ge that kind of Foundation Establishment stage cultivator is just a minor character.

Even worse is that these two sword sects are both members of the Nine Heavens Sword Alliance.

The Nine Heavens Sword Alliance is formed by the alliance of the 9 great sword sects. They have always been very close, moreover the leader of the alliance the Mt. Shu Sword Sect is the supreme holy land of the way of the sword. Together with the Buddhist Great Thunder Monastery and the Taoist Void Temple they are called the 3 great holy lands of the cultivating world of the Heaven Primal world. (TL: The Great Thunder Monastery is also the place where Buddha resides in Journey to the West, there are also places in China called Thunder Monastery.)

The red-robed youth saying to Xiao Budian that his sect is the strongest sect is undoubtedly a big bluff. Not speaking of the 3 great holy lands and a couple of the other top-level sects, just in the Nine Heavens Sword Alliance the Blaze Sword Sect is also just a mid-tier level.

But the Blaze Sword Sect is indeed a powerful top notch force in the Heaven Primal world, this point is without doubt.

Lin Feng glanced at Xiao Budian, the little guy's black hair reaches down to his shoulders, his big eyes are black and bright, very energetic. His appearance is white and clean, pretty and cute.

“My good disciple, you are like that firefly in the dark, so bright and outstanding. That melancholic look in your eyes, the milk stains remaining at the corners of your lips and your godly talent have all deeply betrayed you, attracting all kinds of people to approach you one after another...”

Lin Feng secretly smiled wryly, the matter of the attempt of someone trying to take his disciple from him reminded him.

Right now he could also be considered an innocent man in trouble due to his wealth.

Right now Xiao Budian who Lin Feng has already taken in as his disciple along with the disciples that he might take in in the future are all destined to be a couple of uber prodigy level characters with OP talent due to the rigid standards of the system.

With him not having enough strength, even if these disciples themselves don't betray him they will still attract the greed of other forces.

This is different from him leading the Celeritas Sword Sect to

fight the peach demon Long Ye before. The reason that he dared to screw over the Celeritas Sword Sect is because as the enemy of Xiao Yan that kind of main character, the Celeritas Sword Sect is destined to become a stepping stone and background.

But the current Blaze Sword Sect is different, this is an opponent that Lin Feng created himself.

But so what?

Lin Feng laughed coldly. Against this kind of big force naturally it's best to not offend them if possible, but since the matter is related to Xiao Budian then there's nothing to say. There's only two words, fuck them!

He spent such a great effort before finally taking Xiao Budian as his disciple, how can he hand him over?

Not to mention the system is still waiting for him. If he doesn't gather up 4 disciples approved by the system in a year, then the system is not going to be polite with him.

Chapter 13: The Fallen Prodigy

After making up his mind the gears in Lin Feng's mind started to turn rapidly: "The person Xiao Budian met is most likely just a small fry, should I go back to find him and directly eliminate him so as to avoid the cultivators of the Blaze Sword Sect coming to find us?"

After thinking Lin Feng still gave up on the plan of going back to trouble the dude. Lin Feng doesn't not know whether or not the red-robed youth is moving alone or if he has companions in the surroundings, in the end he still didn't plan on taking a risk.

Lin Feng knocked on Xiao Budian noggin: "You brat, do you still dare to run around from now on?" Xiao Budian scratched his head in embarrassment and laughed

Out of the mountains is a flat stretch of land, Lin Feng and Xiao Budian very quickly arrived at Wuzhou City.

Walking on the streets of Wuzhou City and looking at the endless stream of people Lin Feng's face revealed a smile. Arriving at this world for almost three months he's been in the mountains the entire time, it's been a long time since he's seen such a lively scenery.

Three months... Lin Feng lightly sighed, one quarter of the quest time has already passed and he has also only completed one quarter of the quest. There's still a long way to go.

Lin Feng pulled himself together and started asking about the Xiao family's location.

Even though Wuzhou City is located at the south-eastern frontier of the Great Qin Dynasty it is an important commercial city of south-eastern Qin. This place is close to the Boundless Mountains, the valuable medicines and animal skins, animal bones and other goods in the mountain are all distributed in Wuzhou City and then sold across the country of Great Qin.

The Xiao family that Xiao Yan is from can also be considered a big power in Wuzhou City, they control over one third of the the medicine trade in Wuzhou.

Of course, the Xiao family this kind of local power has no comparability to the Celeritas Sword Sect this kind of behemoth. After Xiao Yan transformed from a prodigy to trash it's also no wonder that Murong Yanran would come break off the engagement under the support of the sect.

The main point Lin Feng asked about was if anything big had happened to the Xiao family recently and if any outsiders came to the Xiao family.

When he heard that Murong Yanran and co. still hadn't visited, Lin Feng relaxed his mind and knew that he didn't arrive late.

Ye Ge fought with the old peach tree and was injured by the old peach tree. Looks like his injury is not light and requires a long time to recover. Murong Yanran most likely needs to wait for Ye

Ge's injury to pretty much recover fully before coming to Wuzhou to end the engagement.

Right now Lin Feng is a bit hesitant. What if Ye Ge recuperates for like half a year or a year, do I wait like an idiot for him in Wuzhou City the whole time?

“First find a chance to see Xiao Yan in person and use the talent probe to test him.

In this Wuzhou City Xiao Yan could also be considered a famous person.

Started cultivating at age 8, reached Qi Disciple level 5 one year later, achieved Qi Disciple great perfection at age 12. Don't mention that this kind of cultivating speed is unprecedented in the history of the Xiao family and Wuzhou City, even in the entire Great Qin Dynasty he is also well known far and near.

The Xiao family may also be a cultivator family, but it is just a local power of Wuzhou City. The dao technique practised is just a third-rate level and Xiao Yan is able to have such astonishing accomplishments, if he practises a superior dao technique than his accomplishments will be even more limitless.

Rumours say that Xiao Yan's reputation even startled one of the 3 great holy lands, the Void Temple and that they prepared to send someone to test him and take him into the sect.

The youth at that time was confident and had a very promising future. Soon he was about to turn thirteen years of age and achieve the Foundation Establishment stage that countless cultivators might not be able to attain with their entire lives, furthermore becoming a disciple of a holy land, writing his own legend.

Such high and vigorous spirit! Such radiance!

But in the year the Xiao Yan was 12 years old the progression of the situation took a sharp turn for the worse.

All of the mana of Xiao Yan who had already unlocked the 12 levels and was at the peak of the Qi Disciple stage suddenly vanished in a day's time. The nerve points that were originally already unlocked also resealed themselves one after another.

His Qi Disciple great perfection level bizarrely fell back to Qi Disciple level 1, Xiao Yan also instantly fell from the clouds to the ground.

The Void Temple that was rumored to come and observe him had no movement, the sounds of praise beside him turned into sighs, even malicious ridicule.

All of the people of Wuzhou City used a gaze of pity staring at that former prodigy fall from the sky.

After Xiao Budian at Lin Feng's side heard Xiao Yan's encounter he also had a gloomy face: "He also doesn't have it easy."

“Yeah, yeah.” Lin Feng echoed without care, but his heart was burning with passion.

Holy shit, this is entirely a person chosen by the heavens, a main character template!

Even using your knees one can imagine that there is definitely a secret to Xiao Yan suddenly transforming from a prodigy to trash.

As they say, first suppress and then develop. Without suppression to the limit right now how can there be an explosion?

And that Murong Yanran visiting to humiliate him and break off the engagement is the critical point of the explosion. Once the marriage is annulled this Xiao Yan’s situation should improve, from then on stepping of a golden path of being a beast and taking in all virgin girls.

Lin Feng calculated in his heart: “There is definitely some kind of reason to Xiao Yan transforming from a prodigy to trash. This thing is also usually the cheat to Xiao Yan rising up in the future, in other words... It is my competitor. “

Murong Yanran and co. still haven’t arrived, Lin Feng still has time to calmly arrange things. After first finding a place to stay in the city and settling down Xiao Budian Lin Feng went nearby the Xiao family mansion.

Hanging around for a couple of days he did not see Xiao Yan and did not see the arrival of Murong Yanran, Lin Feng couldn't help but become anxious.

Lin Feng considered about directly visiting and acting like a master, first taking in Xiao Yan and not waiting for Murong Yanran to break off the engagement.

But like this there will be a lot of problems.

A more profound way of saying it is that without the matter of the marriage annulment there might not be a turning point to Xiao Yan's fate.

A more practical way is that without the marriage annulment matter, Xiao Yan's desire for strength won't be that urgent. His self-esteem will not be hurt and he will not be angered due to having his marriage broken off and humiliated.

Unlike Xiao Budian, Xiao Yan is already a 15 years old teen and has the most basic sense of judgement. If Lin Feng doesn't wait for him to be angered after the marriage annulment and lose his calm, he probably won't be that easy to fool.

After pondering Lin Feng decided it would be better for him to quietly wait for Murong Yanran to visit and then make his move.

While thinking the system's notification sound suddenly rang in his head: "Discovered target, suitable to become host's disciple."

Lin Feng was dazed for an instant: “Holy shit!” He hurriedly lifted his head, seeing a black-clothed teen walk out from the Xiao family mansion.

Seeing the black-clothed youth come out the street outside of the mansion became silent for an instant. Everybody’s gaze flashed past the black-clothed teen and the sounds of whispers rose up, they were clearly all talking about the black-clothed teen.

The teen is handsome, his face is expressionless. Seeing the reactions of the people on the street the corners of his lips revealed a smile of slight self-mockery, his footsteps walking forward without stopping.

Lin Feng’s gaze was focused on the black-clothed teen’s body the entire time, the system notification sound rang in Lin Feng’s head non-stop.

“Talent system has finished organizing, target number two’s data is as so.”

“Bone Root → 8; Comprehension → 9; Will → 9; Luck → 8.”

“Conclusion: Target’s talent is extremely high, recommended to take in as a disciple and carefully guide him, he will definitely become a pillar of the sect.”

Lin Feng took a deep breath in, his face revealing a warm and

sunny smile: “Number 2!”

His gaze started to search Xiao Yan’s body. If there is some kind of cheat item, out of the need for convenience of carrying it is most like a ring, bracelet, necklace or something like that...

His hands, nothing.

His neck, hm, there’s a string. On the string there are two rings, a very black appearance and very unassuming.

Lin Feng scratched his nose and smiled: “There is indeed a ring, and there’s two. I can bet that inside there definitely lives an old grand... pa...”

Wait a sec, something doesn’t seem right...

Two rings?

The fuck, what kind of situation is this.

Lin Feng’s eyes were a bit dazed, his gaze blankly staring at the two rings in front of Xiao Yan’s chest swinging and hitting together, releasing a low, crisp ring.

Chapter 14: 2 Rings

Only until Xiao Yan's figure gradually went away did Lin Feng return to his senses, hurriedly following over.

Xiao Yan actually has two rings, this is a situation that Lin Feng did not anticipate before. Lin Feng felt uneasy in his heart: "Could it be that Xiao Yan actually carries around two old grandpas with him?"

Fuck, coach, I want to make a report, this is entirely against the rules!

Maybe only one ring has an old grandpa and the other one is just a normal ring?

Lin Feng thought about it, this possibility is not impossible. Or even the two rings are both normal and there isn't an old grandpa in either?

Or maybe one has an old grandpa living in it and the other is hiding some kind of godly item or something like that.

A multitude of questions hovered in Lin Feng's mind making him puzzled. While thinking he had already followed behind Xiao Yan and arrived at the side of a small lake in the norther part of the city.

Lin Feng observed the surrounding scenery, there are very few

people. Looks like this is that Xiao Yan's private area, when he's troubled he will come here to be by himself.

Remembering this place Lin Feng secretly nodded his head. After the marriage annulment Xiao Yan will most likely hide here by himself to lick his wounds, and then it's the debut of the old grandpa.

By the lake the black-clothed teen had his hands behind his head, his head resting on his hands and just lying down like that on the grass, a grass stalk dangling in his mouth and swaying.

Lin Feng stood far away looking at Xiao Yan, his expression uncertain.

Right now he started to seriously think about how to first take Xiao Yan as his disciple before Murong Yanran breaks off the engagement. Or else when the marriage annulment matter occurs, if he activates two old grandpas at once then the pressure would be too great.

Lin Feng was in the middle of thinking when he saw a couple of teenagers walk over towards Xiao Yan, from the looks of it they don't have good intention.

Secretly sighing Lin Feng shook his head with an expression of pity.

Don't get him wrong, he's not pitying Xiao Yan being bullied

after falling from the sky, but instead sighing about those couple of people acting recklessly.

Yes, it's true that Xiao Yan is having bad luck right now and looks easy to bully, but it needs to be known that one must pay a price when bullying this kind of main character.

After the marriage annulment Xiao Yan will be instantly re-energized. At that time he'll be able to blow away hundreds of these little characters with a sneeze.

But not needing to wait for Xiao Yan to be re-energized, these people are unable to take advantage of him even right now.

For Lin Feng this is entirely an opportunity delivered straight to him.

Lowering his head checking his taoist robe and adjusting the taoist crown on his head, after confirming that his image was without flaw Lin Feng let out a dry cough and prepared to make his appearance.

“If you guys want to spar then Xiao Yan ge-ge doesn't need fight, Zhen Er play around with you guys.” (TL: Zhen Er is the name of the girl that is talking. She refers to herself in third-person in this case. Also ge-ge means brother, the meaning here is like “oppa”.)

Hearing this Lin Feng almost stepped on his taoist robe and fell over. He hastily stopped his footsteps and looked over, seeing a

young girl wearing a purple dress beautifully standing in front of Xiao Yan, quietly staring at those people that were provoking Xiao Yan.

The girl's cold, indifferent aura was like a newly blossoming lotus. Such a young age but she already had the shape of a refined aura. It's hard to imagine how beautiful this girl will be when she grows up in the future.

Lin Feng who was watching far away also secretly praised her. This girl is already a stunning beauty at such a young age and is slightly superior to Murong Yanran, almost equal to that peach tree demon Long Ye. When this Zhen Er grows up a bit more she'll probably be able to rival Long Ye.

Only she really came at the wrong time.

Before Lin Feng had the time to feel regret he suddenly heard the system notification sound rise up: "Discovered target, suitable to become host's disciple."

"Hm? Could it be that my luck has taken a turn for the better?" Lin Feng was dazed for a moment and was then overjoyed. His gaze once again looked towards the purple-clothed girl like looking at a golden hen that can lay golden eggs.

"Talent system has finished organizing, target number 3's data is as so."

“Bone Root → 9; Comprehension → 8; Will → 7; Luck → 6.”

“Conclusion: Target’s talent is extremely high, recommended to take in as a disciple and carefully guide her, she will definitely become a pillar of the sect.”

“Special Note: The target’s current level is a stage higher than host’s.”

Lin Feng was listening cheerfully to the system notification sounds but when he heard the last sentence he became speechless.

A stage higher than me, isn’t that a Foundation Establishment stage cultivator?

Lin Feng swallowed his saliva, closely observing the purple-clothed girl. He saw that the mana in her body was abundant and formed a loop, as if it were inexhaustible, this is exactly the symbol of Qi Disciple level 12 great perfection.

Qi Disciple level 12 great perfection, the 12 nerve points are all unlocked and connected as one. The mana stored in the nerve points is no longer isolated as pools of dead water like before but has instead turned into a surging river, constantly circulating in the truth cultivator’s body.

Generally speaking Qi Disciple level 12 cultivators are far stronger than Qi Disciple level 11 cultivators.

But Foundation Establishment stage is an entirely different concept. If Qi Disciple level 12 is a river, then Foundation Establishment stage is an ocean. The two cannot be compared.

Even though no matter how Lin Feng looked the purple-clothed girl was still a level of peak Qi Disciple, but since the system said she is Foundation Establishment stage Lin Feng still decided to believe it. Who knows if this little chick has some sort of means to hide her level.

Knowing that this girl has Foundation Establishment stage strength Lin Feng immediately got rid of his thought of trying to take her as his disciple in the recent future.

There's no other reason, this girl definitely has a big background.

Reaching Foundation Establishment stage at 13, 14 years of age, this kind of cultivating speed is even scarier than Xiao Yan's. The two people's bone root and comprehension aren't that different, that means this purple-clothed girl has obtained much better cultivating resources than Xiao Yan since she was little.

Before figuring out her background Lin Feng will not act rashly. Of course, she can be a long term target.

The focal point in the short term is still Xiao Yan this main character.

With the purple-clothed girl standing out the couple of teens

attempting to provoke Xiao Yan could naturally only retreat. The group of people left the lake, cursing while walking.

“Really don’t understand why Miss Zhen Er protects that trash.”

“Exactly, it’s practically inconceivable.”

Lin Feng secretly laughed after listening. This Miss Zhen Er is 9 out of 10 the queen prepared for Xiao Yan this king.

A deep background and she is able to bring help to Xiao Yan.

Her own talent is high and her cultivating speed can also keep up with Xiao Yan’s advancing footsteps so she won’t be sidelined.

Her personality is also good, gentle and strong, soft on the outside and tough on the inside, moreover she loves Xiao Yan to her very core...

Tut tut, this is practically the perfect main woman template.

While randomly think Lin Feng followed those teenagers, walking to a place that Xiao Yan and Zhen Er cannot see. Lin Feng asked smilingly: “That is the Xiao family prodigy that everybody in the city knows? How come he only knows how to hide under the skirts of women?”

Those teenagers were all stunned for a moment and then had the

feeling of meeting a BFF, feeling that Lin Feng's sentence virtually said what was in their hearts.

One person sighed saying: "You don't understand, that's Miss Zhen Er keeping old friendships in mind. She and Xiao Yan grew up together so after Xiao Yan turned into trash she still protected him."

One of the teens beside him snorted coldly: "It's just that that trash is too thick-skinned, taking advantage of Miss Zhen Er. If I was him I'd have crawled into a hole long ago."

After laughing and going along with them for a couple lines he seemingly asked by chance: "Why is that Xiao Yan wearing a string around his neck with two rings on it? This is pretty interesting, it's my first time seeing that."

One of the teens curled his lips: "One is left to him by his father, one is left to him by his mother. His father and mother are both dead right now, we all say that those two rings are cursed. It's just Xiao Yan that still treats them like treasure and carries them around with him afraid to lose them."

After hearing this everything in front of Lin Feng went black.

Fuck, relics of his parents, there's no mistake this time. Double the heritage, double the opportunity, double the old grandpas...

Lin Feng turned around and left.

Of course he's not giving up on Xiao Yan, instead he needs to make more adequate preparations, he will not stop if he doesn't succeed.

So what if it's two old grandpas? The disciple is still mine!

Chapter 15: It's Not Easy Being A Milk Dad

Lin Feng left the lake and went to the market, buying a good dozen different kinds of animal milk.

Returning to his place Xiao Budian was sitting cross-legged, quietly doing his breathing technique.

The little guy may still like to play around, but he who has matured early is very serious in terms of cultivating, carrying a tenacity that regular people do not have and working extremely hard.

Lin Feng watched and secretly nodded his head. That clan brother of Xiao Buridan's has brought to Xiao Budian an enormous pressure.

Xiao Budian is in the middle of a meditating state. Lin Feng did not pay attention to him, going to sit at the side and taking out a crystal in the shape of a semi-circle recessed at the center, like the form of a big bowl.

This is the remaining stone shell left behind after Lin Feng cut it open and took out the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade. Even though it is not as valuable as the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade, it is still a type of natural treasure and harbors a large amount of thunder energy.

Being cut open by Lin Feng there were originally two pieces of the stone shell. One was left at Stone Village to help strengthen the

bodies of the villagers and children of Stone Village, the other piece the old village elder insisted on Lin Feng to bring it along.

Lin Feng scraped off a little piece from the stone shell. These little crystal pieces can be used by Lin Feng as the materials for setting up the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning, and it is also because of this stone shell that Lin Feng doesn't need to exchange for thunder crystals from the system, saving on additional expenses.

“Speaking of it, not only the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade, most likely even this stone shell was also originally a lucky treasure prepared for Xiao Budian.” Lin Feng thought in his heart: “Taking Xiao Budian as my disciple this lucky opportunity has also become mine.”

Putting away the scraped off crystal piece, Lin Feng placed the stone shell in front of him. Through his deliberate polishing the stone shell right now was already a large bowl, a large bowl grinded from an entire thunder crystal.

The animal milk that was placed in the kitchen to be heated up was also finished at this time. After the inn's waiter brought it in Lin Feng poured all of the animal milk into the big thunder crystal bowl. After thinking for a moment he then took out the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade.

The Heaven Thunder Moon Jade that was originally the size of a fist was now only the size of an egg after Lin Feng's constant use of it these past few days.

Lin Feng no longer prepared to absorb energy from within it again to help himself train, he needs to leave a portion to act as the Northern Aurora Sword's energy source.

But besides this he can also use it to add an extra meal for Xiao Budian.

Soaking the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade in the animal milk, Lin Feng used his own mana as a guide to assimilate a bit of thunder energy into the milk.

In the first place the thunder crystal bowl and the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade are from the same source. With the energy of the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade as a guide, the thunder energy in the big thunder crystal bowl also instantly flowed out and mixed into the animal milk in the bowl.

The milk white animal milk releasing a sweet milk fragrance instantly started tossing around like it was boiling. On the surface massive bubbles constantly rose up and then popped one after another.

Arcs of tiny blue and violet lightning shuttled and weaved in the milk, releasing crackling electrical current sounds.

At this time Xiao Budian finally finished training, waking up from his state of meditation. Just waking up his little nose took in two sniffs.

Xiao Budian opened his eyes. Seeing Lin Feng and the animal milk in the thunder crystal bowl he immediately let out a cry of joy: “Master!” He abruptly jumped up and went over to Lin Feng, circling around the big bowl, two big, black eyes staring straight at the animal milk and muttering: “Smells so good.”

Lin Feng laughed, taking out the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade from the bowl and handing the bowl over to Xiao Budian. He warning him saying: “Master has added some extra ingredients into the milk, be careful when you drink it. Use your mana to guide the energy in the milk, if you feel uncomfortable stop right away.”

Xiao Budian repeatedly nodded his head, taking over the bowl with a big smiling face and wolfing it down, drinking the bowl clean of animal milk in a moment.

Xiao Budian had a great time drinking it, but the side effects after drinking it also showed up.

Xiao Budian who was usually very cute transformed into a problem child, possessing a pair of big red eyes like a white rabbit and running around everywhere, yelling non-stop.

Lin Feng didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. He’d already told the little guy that he has to use his mana to guide the energy in the milk while drinking it. But look at what this guy did, he only cared about eating happily and completely threw the matter of guiding the energy to the back of his head.

Seeing Xiao Budian transform into a tiny beast, barging around everywhere and messing things up, if Lin Feng doesn't stop him soon he'll demolish the entire inn.

Helplessly Lin Feng could only take action himself to stop Xiao Budian. When Xiao Budian woke up and saw his master's black face he immediately understood what happened. He scratched his head in a daze, saying in a tiny voice: "Eyah, I screwed up."

Being sent away by the inn's manager, Lin Feng angrily and amusingly poked Xiao Budian's tiny noggin: "When we captured maternal animals in the jungle you always jumped straight in and started drinking. Now we've arrived in the city, if you want to drink milk again then buy it at the market."

"After you've bought the animal milk you have to use this bowl to drink it, from now on this is your personal food bowl. Take care of your own food bowl."

Xiao Budian repeatedly nodded his head, happily hugging the thunder crystal bowl: "Thank you master."

Seeing his happy look Lin Feng also felt happy in his heart. After advising him a bit more Lin Feng crossed his legs and sat down.

Lin Feng carefully studied the uses of the Northern Aurora Sword along with Cloud Dragon Escape and Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning these two spells. In his mind he thought about how he can put the cards already in his hands to the greatest use.

...I am a dividing line...

At the edge of the Boundless Mountains a couple of fiery, crimson red lights flashed by, landing on the ground.

A dozen red-clothed people stood together, their entire bodies surged with mana. Blazing fire energy thrashed around without stop like a furnace, the grass shrubs beneath their feet and the surrounding ancient, towering trees all slowly withered from the heat.

Of the leading three people, the mana of two of them was as deep as the ocean, mighty and endless. They were Foundation Establishment stage cultivators.

But right now these two Foundation Establishment stage cultivators were both respectfully standing behind the other old man.

The old man has a head of red hair that is very showy, his appearance is very fierce but not a shred of his body reveals the aura of one with power, he is just like a regular human.

But behind the old man, all of the red-clothed people including the two Foundation Establishment stage cultivators are all using a gaze of reverence to look at him.

An aurous core big shot, even if not a shred of aura is revealed it

is still enough to make everybody afraid.

Everybody's gaze looked in the distance outside of the mountains, that is the direction of Wuzhou City.

One of the Foundation Establishment stage cultivators suddenly opened his mouth asking: "You're certain they left the mountains?"

One of the people behind him stood out and bowed. It was precisely the red-robed youth that Xiao Budian tricked before. He replied respectfully: "According to the traces that they left behind they were indeed heading outside of the mountains."

A fiery light flickered in the Foundation Establishment stage cultivator's eyes. He looked towards the direction of Wuzhou City: "Exiting the mountains from here the closest big city is Wuzhou City. We'll go check out over there first."

The red-robed youth hesitated for a moment and asked: "Even though Wuzhou is located at the border, from the geography it is closer to the Celeritas Sword Sect's territory..."

The other Foundation Establishment stage cultivator waved his hands: "If that kid really does possess the talent that you say he has, then even if it's the Mt. Shu Sword Sect's territory we still need to give it a go..."

The red-haired old man that did not speak the entire time

suddenly opened his mouth saying: “Enough with the nonsense. Let’s go, our target is Wuzhou!” Before his voice had even died away he patted the flying sword on his back, the sword aura that was already like a burning fire charged into the sky.

The group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators all followed closely behind him, one after another streaks of fiery red light soared across the sky like meteors, rushing towards Wuzhou City.

...I am a dividing line...

At the same time, Lin Feng was quietly meditating in an inn in Wuzhou City when someone suddenly knocked on the door.

Lin Feng opened the room door, the waiter was standing outside of the door with a fawning smile. Seeing Lin Feng he said with a smile: “Sir, didn’t you tell me to pay attention to anything interesting that happens in the city and to tell you at the first moment? Well there really is something now.”

Lin Feng smiled lightly, casually throwing a piece of silver to him. The waiter instantly became overjoyed, he didn’t dare to keep Lin Feng guessing and hurriedly said: “You know how the Xiao family’s young master Xiao Yan can no longer cultivate? Before when he was still a cultivating prodigy he had a marriage engagement, now the female side has come knocking on the door!”

Murong Yanran has finally arrive at Wuzhou.

Chapter 16: Fighting For The Post Of Old Grandpa

Lin Feng sent away the waiter with an indifferent expression. Closing the door, he could no longer control his smile, a smile blossoming on his face.

Murong Yanran has arrived at Wuzhou City, the legendary marriage annulment is finally about to happen.

Lin Feng turned his head towards Xiao Budian and said: “Silly boy, come with master.”

Xiao Budian’s big, black eyes started turning: “Master, where are we going?”

Lin Feng smiled saying: “Originally you were about to have your first junior, but you volunteered to be the smallest so you’re about to have your first senior.”

Bringing along Xiao Budian Lin Feng arrived at the side of the little lake that Xiao Yan comes to regularly. He spread the polished thunder crystals on the grassfield beside the lake in the pattern of a formation to set up the magic formation for activating the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning.

Even though based on Lin Feng’s plan he doesn’t necessarily have to fight, but you always need to prepare for everything.

Finishing doing everything Lin Feng brought along Xiao Budian and headed towards the Xiao family's mansion.

When they arrived outside of the mansion they just perfectly saw Xiao Yan in his body of black clothes walk out from the door.

The black-clothed teen stopped his footsteps but did not look back, only spitting out a cold line.

“Three years later I will find you!”

The teen's shadow was stretched out extremely long under the illumination of the sun. He looks lonely and desolate.

At the big door behind him you can see Murong Yanran's small mouth slightly opened, staring at Xiao Yan's back a bit blankly. In the young girl's hand she is holding a contract that is shaking as if about to fall, seemingly becoming as heavy as a thousand pounds.

Finishing speaking Xiao Yan walked out of the door by himself.

“Since you guy's have already reached your goal then please leave now.” An old voice came from within the yard, that is the Xiao family's clan leader, Xiao Yan's grandfather.

“Grandpa Xiao, Yanran apologizes to you for the matter today. If you have time in the future please visit the Murong family!”

Her goal has already been reached and Murong Yanran also doesn't want to stay any longer, she left the Xiao family's mansion together with the white-robed youth and Ye Ge.

“The young lady of the Murong family, I hope that in the future you will not feel regret due to your pompous actions today. In addition, don't think that you can do whatever you want because you have the Celeritas Sword Sect at your back. The Heaven Primal world is very big, forces stronger than the Celeritas Sword Sect are also not in the little...” The moment that Murong Yanran and co. were about to walk out of the door a brisk voice carrying a slight coldness suddenly rose up.

The three people's footsteps abruptly stopped, turning their heads and looking over.

Xiao Zhener was beautifully standing on top of the walls of the mansion, rays of sunlight shone past her back just perfectly wrapping her within it. From far away she is like a violet lotus flower blossoming in the mundane world, pure and graceful, not dirtied by this world...

Lin Feng also praised Xiao Zhener's charm, but in his heart he was secretly delighted: “The good and the bad between the people is too obvious, I don't even need to think about how to take you as a disciple. Once I take in Xiao Yan then you'll also be in my palms.”

Facing the gazes of Murong Yanran and co., a slender golden flame suddenly appeared in the girl's beautiful, limpid eyes.

Looking at the tiny golden fire in the girl's eyes Ye Ge's body violently shook for an instant, a terrified expression covered his old face in an instant. In a panic his dried hands grabbed onto Murong Yanran and the white-robed youth who were in the middle of being puzzled and then running for his life.

Looking at Ye Ge's actions, besides the Xiao family's old clan leader everybody else couldn't help but have a dumbfounded expression.

Lin Feng felt a jolt in his heart: "Even if she is already at Foundation Establishment stage at such a young age she still shouldn't frighten so badly Ye Ge who is also at the Foundation Establishment stage. Looks like there's something strange about the golden flame in her eyes just now..."

"This chick's background is odd, based on the routine if she isn't the holy maiden of an ancient clan then she is the princess of some sort of big country. If I'm wrong then I'll write my name backwards."

Lin Feng was secretly glad that he didn't rashly go and mess with this little girl whose background is suspected to be extremely terrifying.

Let's just take in Xiao Yan first and then talk about it. Everything has already demonstrated that this little girl will definitely follow to wherever Xiao Yan goes. When Xiao Yan becomes my disciple then Xiao Zhener won't be far away.

When doing something one has to be good at grasping the principal contradiction.

While thinking Lin Feng brought Xiao Budian and quietly left the Xiao family's mansion, chasing after Xiao Yan following the direction he left.

Xiao Yan at this time will definitely go to the little lake at the northern part of the city and lick his wounds.

Sure enough in a bit Lin Feng had already caught up to Xiao Yan.

The black-clothed teen right now is like an injured lone wolf, his entire body is emitting a cold, unwelcoming aura.

“Hehe, strength... Without strength you're even worse than a pile of dogshit. At least no one dares to step on dogshit!” His shoulders lightly trembling, the teen's hoarse and self-mocking laughter lingered in the air carrying an air of grief and anger.

Xiao Yan's teeth tightly bit his lips, allowing that faint blood to spread at the corners of his lips. Even though he did not display any inappropriate emotions in the hall, the words that Murong Yanran said were like blades cutting into his heart making his entire body shake.

“Dad, mom...”

Grabbing the two rings in front of his chest hanging on a string,

Xiao Yan's expression was sad.

His mother died of sickness many years ago, three years ago his father was seriously injured in a fight and died in the end only leaving these two rings to him.

Before his father died Xiao Yan once swore that he would definitely become a powerful truth cultivator and get revenge for his father.

But who knew that after just swearing his oath a day before, a great change happened to his body and he transformed from a prodigy into trash. After this no matter how hard he worked he was only able march on the spot at Qi Disciple level 1.

“I must not give up, for father, for mother and for today!” Opening his left hand that has a bloodstain on it, Xiao Yan's voice was hoarse but firm: “I don't want to suffer again the humiliation today!”

In the front, Xiao Yan was walking while setting his determination while behind him Lin Feng was watching with his blood boiling.

Sure enough, after the marriage annulment this kid's SEED factor explodes. Just looking from the side it feels like his body is harbouring an endless aura of domination, like a surging river about to flood the lands. (TL: SEED factor, from [gundam SEED destiny](#))

Seeing that the old grandpas in those two rings still didn't have any movement Lin Feng did not dare to have any hesitation, walking forward and blocking in front of Xiao Yan.

Are you kidding me, those guys are being carried around everywhere by a main character, they are in a favorable position. If I don't grasp hold of the chance I won't even be able to get any soup.

Nowadays you also need to fight for the post of old grandpa.

“Hehe, kid, looks like you need some help?”

Lin Feng casually said with a light chuckle.

Xiao Yan looked with a stunned expression at the youthful daoist wearing white daoist robes and a daoist crown in front of him. After being stunned for a moment he wrinkled his brows asking: “Who are you? What do you want to do?”

Lin Feng laughed coolly: “There is no rush in asking who I am, don't you think that the problem you should be caring about the most is why you've reached such a stage?”

Xiao Yan's gaze immediately became as cold as a blade: “You know?” Beneath his cold gaze was a blazing fire.

Lin Feng let out a long laugh: “Follow me and you will naturally know all of the details.”

Finishing speaking Lin Feng used the ability of Cloud Dragon Escape, grabbing Xiao Yan and flying into the air, flying towards the little lake at the northern part of the city.

Xiao Yan was greatly startled but right now his level is only Qi Disciple level 1, he is simply unable to break free from Lin Feng's hand. He calmed down and started observing, immediately being struck with awe in his heart.

Using Cloud Dragon Escape it was like Lin Feng had turned into a preeminent divine dragon outside of the heavens soaring in the clouds.

A divine dragon, when it moves, it soars above the nine heavens, when hidden, it roams within the four seas. It's breath becomes clouds, it's spit becomes rain, controlling the winds and thunder with endless might.

The essence and spirit of Cloud Dragon Escape was displayed perfectly by Lin Feng.

But what made Xiao Yan the most shocked was still Xiao Budian who looks to be only 3, 4 years of age and following closely behind Lin Feng.

“Master, wait for me.” Xiao Budian was also using the body movements of Cloud Dragon Escape. His doll-like appearance also carried a sort of a heavenly aura like an immortal, making him look even more remarkable.

Xiao Yan has seen many Qi Disciple level 4 truth cultivators, but kids that are able to reach a level of Qi Disciple level 4 at Xiao Budian's age, don't mention seeing it, Xiao Yan has never even heard of it before.

Xiao Yan did not feel much pressure from Lin Feng. The feeling that Lin Feng gave him was like a completely normal person that hasn't practised any dao techniques.

But it is exactly this young daoist wearing a white daoist robe with a daoist crown that produced Xiao Budian. Being able to produce such an outstanding disciple his own level naturally can't be too low and especially can't be a normal human.

Then there's only one explanation left. This seemingly young daoist has already reached the level of returning to one's original nature which is why he cannot see through him.

"Maybe... He really does know what's wrong with my body?" Xiao Yan couldn't resist thinking.

Lin Feng wasn't clear about Xiao Yan's psychological state, but seeing his expression he knows that he has already successfully established the image of a master in Xiao Yan's heart.

This is precisely the reason why he wanted to bring Xiao Budian along.

He had no choice, this kid was honestly too outstanding of an advertisement. He fully displayed to the outer world the results of Lin Feng's teachings. Sometimes Lin Feng himself also rejoices about him encountering Xiao Budian the earliest. This will directly reduce the difficulty in the future of him tricking people to be his disciple.

Reaching the lakeside in the blink of an eye, Lin Feng put down Xiao Yan. Xiao Yan looked at Xiao Budian and then looked at Lin Feng, asking after taking a deep breath: "Please tell me senior, exactly what is wrong with my body?"

Lin Feng smiled lightly, extending his finger and lightly tapping Xiao Yan's chest: "Your problem is in these two rings!"

Chapter 17: Old Grandma...

“Your problem lies in these two rings.”

Lin Feng smiled lightly, his finger lightly tapping the two rings hanging before Xiao Yan’s chest.

Xiao Yan’s expression became a bit cold: “This senior also believes that there is a curse on these two rings of mine?”

Towards Xiao Yan’s change in expression Lin Feng treated it like he didn’t see it, his tone suddenly changing: “But these two rings of yours have nothing to do with curses. Instead of saying that the massive change in your body is a natural disaster, it would be better to say that it is man-made disaster.”

“Man-made disaster?” Xiao Yan was slightly confused, and then closely following his face became extremely somber: “Senior is saying that someone is deliberately harming me? It’s definitely not my parents... Then that means even the death of my parents is also related to the person harming me?”

Lin Feng secretly gave a big thumbs up in his heart: “Good kid, nice connection, you have a bright future!”

He waved his hands, casually looking at Xiao Xan’s small, overcast face: “Right now I cannot lay claim to whether or not the deaths of your parents have something to do with these rings, but the massive change in your body is precisely the result caused by these two rings.”

“In the rings there lives spirits, these spirits are constantly absorbing your mana to strengthen themselves.” Lin Feng slowly said, his voice was calm but it weighed on Xiao Yan’s heart like a massive mountain: “This is the reason why your level suddenly regressed three years ago. This is also the crux of the matter as to why even though you also trained hard in the three years afterwards, you didn’t obtain any advancements.”

“Because the mana you trained hard for to obtain all became the nourishment of the spirits!”

Xiao Yan lowered his head looking towards the two rings at his chest, his dazed expression slowly revealing hatred.

Looking at the change in his expression Lin Feng let out a breath of relief in his heart, secretly laughing.

“This is what’s called a preemptive strike!”

Putting you guys in the role of the villain first, let’s see how you guys fight with me?

Didn’t you guys think that you guys were in a favourable position? Still there putting on noble and magnificent airs, waiting for Xiao Yan to come and beg you guys? Are you dumbfounded now?

Lin Feng was complacent in his heart, he was not framing people.

Maybe those old grandpas in the rings can help Xiao Yan soar to success, but it is also most likely them that caused Xiao Yan to fall from the clouds before.

Without the addition of Lin Feng they would naturally be able to trick Xiao Yan and use large amounts of techniques and medicines to atone for themselves. But now with Lin Feng's preemptive strike and not giving them a chance to fix things, all that remains between them and Xiao Yan is hatred.

At the same time as being smug Lin Feng was also secretly on guard, next up he might have to go head on against the old grandpas in the rings.

Lin Feng lifted his head glancing at the sky. Summer's weather is like a child's mood, changing without notice, before it was still bright and sunny, now it is already cloudy and overcast with rolling thunder.

Lin Feng breathed a slight breath of relief in his heart: "Good thing the weather changed or else Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning wouldn't be able to exert its full power. Now, I have enough cards up my sleeves to play with you guys."

Arriving at the point where the only thing that remains is a crippled soul and living in a ring waiting to be the old grandpa for people, regardless of how great their backgrounds were in the past and how powerful their strength was, right now they are still in an extremely weakened state.

The eastern wind blows, the war drums sound, we're all old grandpas who's afraid of who?

Right when Xiao Yan was grinding his teeth and grabbing the rings at his chest, a long, soft sigh rose up beside his and Lin Feng's ears.

"If not for your sacrifice I don't know how much longer I'd have to sleep for."

Xiao Yan blankly stared at the ring in his hand. A white mist of light surfaced on the ring gradually forming a human figure in the air, from hazy to clear, in the end becoming intricately detailed and vivid.

Lin Feng also stared at the figure of light blankly. Accurately speaking, since the person's voice rose up Lin Feng had already descended into a blank state.

Because that is clearly a woman's voice!

... It's not an old grandpa but an old grandma?

Lin Feng's mind was in a bit of a mess. Looking closely at the figure of light, saying that she is an old grandma is undoubtedly a bit rude.

This is an extremely beautiful woman, a light green long gown blowing with the wind. She possesses an indescribable elegance,

gazing at the clear stream from above with a calm composure.

The green-gowned woman's eyes turned, her gaze landing on Lin Feng's body after only taking a glance at Xiao Yan.

Looking at her, a literary work that he had read in his past life suddenly appeared in Lin Feng's mind, "On the Goddess of Luo River": Her body soars lightly like a startled swan, gracefully like a dragon in flight, in splendor brighter than the autumn chrysanthemum, in bloom more flourishing than the pine in the spring. Dim as the moon mantled in filmy clouds, restless as snow whirled by the driving wind.

"This is the feeling of [Cao Zhi](#) when he first saw the Goddess of Luo River?" Lin Feng's mind thought randomly, but in his heart there sounded the highest-level of alert.

Compared to the green-gowned woman's beauty, Murong Yanran lacks composure and Xiao Zhen appears a bit too young. Of all the people that Lin Feng has seen in his life there is probably only that peach tree demon Long Ye that can compare to her.

Long Ye and her are both fine blossoms in their season, equally matched.

But just like when he faced Long Ye before, facing this stunning beauty right now Lin Feng could not muster up a single shred of passion in his heart, on the contrary his heart felt a bit cold. This green-gowned woman's danger level is definitely at the level as Long Ye.

Maybe spending everyday with Xiao Zhener and growing up with her trained Xiao Yan's outlook. Right now Xiao Yan also has no thoughts of praise or admiration, instead staring at the green-gowned woman with a face of hostility.

“Sacrifice?” Xiao Yan's tone was deathly cold: “The change in my body is really your doing?”

The green-gowned woman lightly sighed: “Mingyue also had no choice, please do not blame me.” (TL: Mingyue is the name of the woman speaking, her full name is 燕明月, Yan Mingyue, mingyue means bright moon and her surname means swallow (bird))

“I don't blame you... Fuck you!” Xiao Yan could no longer hold back, tugging apart the string around his neck and throwing out the ring the green-robed woman's figure of light takes shelter in. (TL: For the fuck you part, directly translated he says something like “I blame fuck you”, in Chinese it sounds like I blame your mom)

The ring strangely stopped in mid-air, just silently floating in the air like that. After slightly shaking the projected figure of light re-stabilized itself.

The green-gowned woman lightly sighed: “Mingyue can understand that you are mad, but please note that the other ring you are wearing is actually the true source of your misfortune these past three years.

While speaking her gaze looked towards Lin Feng: “This fellow daoist has eyes like a torch that pierces through the dark, the mana that Xiao Yan painstakingly cultivated these past three years was indeed absorbed by me, for this I express my deep apologies.”

“But the misfortune three years ago of Xiao Yan regressing from Qi Disciple great perfection to Qi Disciple level one has nothing to do with me.”

Xiao Yan’s face was cold like a pool of frozen water, looking at the green-gowned woman and then looking at Lin Feng, in the end his gaze landing on the second ring in his hand.

Lin Feng’s expression was indifferent as if everything was in his control, outsiders could not tell what he was truly thinking from his expression.

But in actuality the sense of crisis in Lin Feng’s heart was becoming increasingly more serious.

This woman is not easy to deal with, with just a few short lines not only did she get rid of the majority of her responsibility, she also obtained the leading position in the conversation making Xiao Yan’s attention start to follow her rhythm

The green-gowned woman calmly stared at Lin Feng and Xiao Yan: “In that ring there lives the crippled soul of an ancient beast, a Taotie.”

“Taotie?” Xiao Yan was shocked. In legends Tao Tie is one of the ancient four great fiends, known together with Hundun, Qiongqi and Taowu as the king of fiends.

Tao Tie’s nature is avarice, devouring all. At their peak they can even swallow the heavens and devour the earth, destroying all life.

Even great Primordial Spirit cultivators get a headache if they encounter this kind of fierce beast. All attacks against Tao Tie will be swallowed by it with its large mouth, being so savage and gluttonous it is truly difficult to deal with.

Lin Feng also slightly wrinkled his brows, looking towards the second ring in Xiao Yan’s hands.

The green-gowned woman continued saying: “10 years ago due to being seriously injured, I was forced to place my soul in this ring of yours. After that I was asleep the whole time until three years ago when I discovered that Taotie had devoured all of your mana and even wanted to devour your life force.”

“I used the Heaven Cage Sigil to seal that Tao Tie’s soul but my own soul had expended too much energy and was forced to enter a deep sleep again.” The green-gowned woman had an apologetic expression: “It is also in the process of this second deep sleep that I unconsciously absorbed the new mana that you cultivated to repair my soul, and yet this created trouble for you, please forgive me.”

Even though Xiao Yan had a face of doubt, his expression had clearly already softened down.

The expression on Lin Feng's face didn't change, but his heart became increasingly heavier

Especially when he flipped through the trading system and found the ability of the Heaven Cage Sigil, after he saw the description of it his heart sank to the bottom.

Heaven Cage Sigil, a sigil using one's own mana to set down a cage, sealing the mana of others, against spiritual targets the effect is increased.

Note: A unique esoteric ability of the number 1 sect in Heaven Primal's cultivating world, the leader of the three great holy lands the Void Temple!

Chapter 18: So What If It's The Number 1 Holy Land

When Lin Feng discovered that the green-gowned woman's background is the Void Temple his heart suddenly sank.

In this Heaven Primal world even women and children know that the strongest three sects are the daoist holy land the Void Temple, the buddhist holy land the Great Thunder Monastery and the holy land of the way of the sword the Mt. Shu Sword Sect.

But even the Great Thunder Monastery and the Mt. Shu Sword Sect, they may not say it but in their hearts they have to admit that there is also a distinction between the three great holy lands. And the Void Temple is undoubtedly the head of the three great holy lands, the number one sect in the world.

Different from the two holy lands having many followers and disciples all across the land, the Void Temple is actually very low-profile and its number of disciples is also not high. But as long as there are disciples of the Void Temple entering the world it will definitely shake the entire world.

The Void Temple walks the elite path in taking disciples, their threshold is ridiculously high. The disciples taken in are all extremely talented cultivating prodigies.

Not considering other aspects, just speaking of bone root and comprehension the average value of the Void Temple's disciples is definitely number one in the world. Without exaggeration that

place has the highest density of the Heaven Primal world's cultivating prodigies.

The Void Temple's dao techniques and abilities are also famous throughout Heaven Primal, their supreme taoist scripture "Profundity of the Void Dao" is hailed as the dao technique closest to the way of the heavens. As long as it is practised one is guaranteed to achieve the great realm of Primordial Spirit.

Moreover the Heaven Cage Sigil is the Void Temple's signature spell, its name is widespread in the cultivating world.

Even Xiao Yan thought of the Heaven Cage Sigil's origins after a short period of confusion, unable to help but be surprised: "Did you just say the Heaven Cage Sigil? You're a disciple of the Void Temple?"

The green-gowned woman lightly nodded her head: "My name is Yan Mingyue, my sect is precisely the Void Temple."

Xiao Yan's expression became complicated and a bit saddened: "The Void Temple..."

Lin Feng was bitter in the mouth, he thought of the numerous rumours related to Xiao Yan in Wuzhou City, one of which is that when Xiao Yan displayed astounding talent in that past he once caught the attention of the Void Temple and they had intentions of taking in Xiao Yan.

Looking at Xiao Yan's expression right now you can tell that this rumour is real.

Even using his toes to think Lin Feng understands Xiao Yan's current feelings. After all, that is the publically acknowledge number one holy land in the world. Being able to become a disciple of the Void Temple, not only does Xiao Yan himself step upon a brilliant path of cultivation, even the entire Xiao family will gain prestige and honour.

And afterwards Xiao Yan suddenly changed from a prodigy to a scrub, thus the Void Temple brushed past his shoulders. What you cannot have is always the best, the Void Temple might have become a knot in his heart, a massive regret.

Even worse it might also involve the regrets of his deceased parents, such as "Even until death we did not get to see our son become a disciple of the Void Temple" and other such words.

Under this kind of circumstance, if there is a new chance to enter into the Void Temple placed in front of Xiao Yan, how will he choose?

Lin Feng was a bit afraid to think any further...

"So what if it's the Void Temple? So what if it's the number one holy land?" Lin Feng steeled his heart: "If I get this Xiao Yan I might even be able to catch a Xiao Zhener, missing this kind of amazing buy one get one free deal is sacrilegious!"

Lin Feng closely observed her and discovered that Yan Mingyue's tone of voice is calm and composed, her gaze looking at Xiao Yan is apologetic but not fervent.

Yan Mingyue's expression does not look faked, this means that she is only apologetic towards Xiao Yan and might refer Xiao Yan into the Void Temple out of compensation. But she does not think highly of Xiao Yan's talent and is not determined to take him as her disciple.

It's not surprising. She comes from the Void Temple, since she was little she grew up in a pile of prodigies, what kind of astounding prodigies has she not seen? She herself is probably a cultivating genius with shocking talent.

Since it's like this it's given Lin Feng an opportunity. Lin Feng pondered non-stop in his heart, suddenly a thought flashed across in his mind.

Lin Feng's face revealed a warm smile like a ray of sunlight, his gaze turning towards Xiao Yan beside him.

"Taotie? It's really been a long time since I last saw one..." Lin Feng's gaze sized up the second ring in Xiao Yan's palm, the corners of his lips revealing an interesting smile.

Xiao Yan blanked, Yan Mingyue's gaze also looked towards Lin Feng, her eyes flashing a difficult to understand brilliance.

“This fellow daoist has seen a living pure-blooded Taotie before?” Yan Mingyue stared at Lin Feng, her red lips lightly opening: “How do you call yourself?”

Lin Feng lightly smiled: “I am but a humble man from the mountains, my name is not worth mentioning. My surname is Lin, you can just call me Daoist Lin.”

Finishing speaking, not waiting for Yan Mingyue to respond Lin Feng followed saying: “Just now I heard fellow daoist Yan mention that ten years ago you were injured and then took shelter in this ring, right?”

Right now Lin Feng has to take back the initiative of this conversation, he absolutely cannot give Yan Mingyue a chance. He cannot allow her to mention the matter of referring Xiao Yan to the Void Temple as compensation or else Xiao Yan will immediately lower his head and bow down, then it'll be none of Lin Feng's business anymore.

Yan Mingyue glanced at Lin Feng, this glance seemed to see right into his heart. Maybe she doesn't know exactly what Lin Feng is thinking, but she clearly sees Lin Feng's intent of controlling the initiative of the conversation.

Lin Feng's expression was normal but the back of his palms were already sweating. This woman is too clever, it's like she can see through the hearts of people. She is clearly as calm as water without any aggressive intentions but she brings to Lin Feng pressure as big as a mountain.

Although luckily Yan Mingyue did not continue probing, only calmly nodding her head: “It was indeed ten years ago.”

Due to the protection of the system she cannot see the depths of Lin Feng’s level, but in this world the number of people that can make her unable to see through them is honestly too little. Due to this even though it’s their first time meeting, Yan Mingyue’s attitude towards Lin Feng displayed a certain degree of respect.

Lin Feng nodded his head: “Not long ago I once met a demon, that demon was evidently also gravely injured and was forced to place its spirit in an old peach tree.”

Xiao Yan looked at Lin Feng a bit strangely, not understanding why he suddenly mentioned this seemingly unrelated topic.

Yan Mingyue’s expression did not change, only silently looking at Lin Feng and waiting for the next part.

Lin Feng lifted his eyes and looked straight at her eyes, the gazes of the two people were both calm and distant. Lin Feng said coolly: “According to the locals that demon also suddenly appeared ten years ago. Oh right, it’s a female demon.”

A change finally occurred in Yan Mingyue’s expression, lowering her eyes, her thin, long eyelashes slightly trembling: “Does this fellow daoist know that female demon’s origins?”

Lin Feng shook his head and then looked at her, pausing after each word and saying: “I only know she calls herself Long Ye.”

Yan Mingyue’s face revealed a slight smile, her gaze looking towards the distant but without focus.

After a long while she let out a long sigh: “I didn’t die and sure enough she didn’t die either...”

Yan Mingyue turned her head towards Lin Feng, saying seriously: “Thank you fellow daoist for telling me this news, do you know the whereabouts of that Long Ye?”

In his heart Lin Feng said he didn’t know, but once that female demon recovers she’s most likely going to come and find my trouble.

He lightly shook his head: “This I do not know.”

While he spoke Lin Feng was always closely observing Yan Mingyue, paying attention to every little change in her expression.

After she heard the news that Long Ye is still alive, Yan Mingyue’s two eyes as brilliant as the bright moon were dyed with a hint of melancholy, even revealing slight anxiety.

Lin Feng let out a long breath of relief in his heart, he knows that he made the right gamble.

This Yan Mingyue and that Long Yue are your standard arch-rival relationship, it could very likely be some sort of daoist holy maiden versus demon holy maiden drama.

The beauty, talent and dao techniques of these two people are all at the same level, they mutually admire and understand each other but they are also in a life and death opposition. There exists an irreconcilable conflict entangling them for their entire lives, playing out an act of love and hatred... Wrong, it's a good show of frenemies.

... Generally speaking they might even fall in love with the same main character?

But that's not important, what's important is that after hearing Long Ye's news Yan Mingyue was sure enough not calm.

Even though her ability to maintain composure and keep calm is not bad, Lin Feng can still tell that right now she wishes that she can immediately find Long Ye and fight another 300 rounds with her.

Under this kind of circumstance she shouldn't still be thinking about compensating Xiao Yan, right?

At the very least it's no longer the most important matter.

Lin Feng decided to add some more wood to the fire, and so he

opened his mouth asking: “Fellow daoist Yan, you have lost your physical body with just your soul remaining residing in this ring, it’s probably very inconvenient for you to move, right?”

Yan Mingyue’s eyes flashed. After taking a deep look at Lin Feng she said openly: “I have a way to reconstruct my physical body. it’s just that before it I need to make a lot of preparations. During this period I do indeed need to continue taking shelter in this ring, or else even though it won’t harm my soul I will lose my mana for nothing.”

Looking at Yan Mingyue who had already completely recovered her composure, alarms went off in Lin Feng’s mind, he did not dare to relax at the slightest.

Seeing Yan Mingyue speak openly Lin Feng also did not speak in circles, directly saying: “I might be able to help you.”

Finishing speaking Lin Feng took out the spirit calming grass. Seeing it Yan Mingyue immediately recognized it: “Spirit calming grass? The main ingredient of the soul anchoring pill. With the soul anchoring pill I can indeed leave the ring and stabilize my soul, traveling ten thousand miles during the day is not out of the question.”

She took a deep look at Lin Feng and then suddenly did not speak anymore, instead using her mana to transmit her voice to Lin Feng, not letting Xiao Yan hear.

“Fellow daoist, the reason you are trying so hard, is it for this

Xiao Yan?”

Chapter 19: Helping And Testing

In an instant Lin Feng felt his heart stop for half a beat.

Since they met Yan Mingyue has always displayed a very polite, peaceful and calm mannerism.

She comes from the world's number 1 holy land but is easy to approach, without a single shred of a high-up, almighty feeling.

Right now she has fallen into trouble but she does not have any sort of feeling like she is in a difficult position, instead she is as calm as the wind, as if everything is within her control.

But Lin Feng can sharply sense that this Yan Mingyue who appears humble and kind, has a pride within her that goes deep into her soul.

On the appearance she is easy to approach but her soul is prideful, it is very easy for people to develop a misconception of her on first contact.

This is a person whose mind and heart are extremely strong, strong to the point that she neglects the trivial matters, she simply does not care about the opinions of others.

Her pride is not belittlement, it is not arrogance and it is not conceitment. The exact opposite, her pride is her friendliness, her politeness and her patience.

Why? Because in her knowledge, you are inferior to me, so I am polite towards you, I will not think over your rudeness, I will especially patiently guide you.

In her heart she assumes preemptively that the other side is inferior to her, she will not become angered due to the rudeness of others and will not look down on someone because of it. She will only think that the other side's level is too low, unable to comprehend her.

Like how humans won't pay attention to the provocations of creatures like snakes, insects, rats and ants, will people think that this is pride? No, everyone will think that this is natural, and this is Yan Mingyue's mentality.

In the conversation before, regardless if it was against Xiao Yan who is just qi disciple level 1 or Lin Feng whom she cannot see through, Yan Mingyue's appearance was always very calm, practically not like one favoured by the heavens who comes from the world's number 1 holy land and once roamed freely in the world.

But right now she is not holding back, pointing straight to the bottom of Lin Feng's heart with one sentence, straightforward and sharp.

At the same time that he is shocked in his heart Lin Feng is also a bit excited. Yan Mingyue's change in behaviour shows that she's put away her pride and put Lin Feng at the same level as herself.

“The more it’s these kinds of times the calmer one has to be.” Lin Feng calmed down his state of mind, casually saying: “I am but a humble man from the mountains, naturally I cannot compare to the Void Temple. It is truly quite difficult to find a couple of successors.”

“So I ask that you please step down, I would be very grateful.”

Since the other side has already made things clear, Lin Feng also openly admitted.

Only, even though he’s praising the Void Temple, Lin Feng’s tone is calm and natural, clearly placing both sides on the same level.

The more he’s like this the more Yan Mingyue is instead unable to grasp his bottom line. After slightly pondering for a moment Yan Mingyue finally decided give him a favour, not using her mana to transmit her voice anymore and opening her mouth saying: “If it’s like so than I thank you for your spirit calming grass.”

Lin Feng smiled faintly nodding his head, turning his head towards Xiao Yan beside him.

Xiao Yan also calmed down at this moment, his gaze looking at Yan Mingyue extremely complicated.

Yan Mingyue stared at the second ring in Xiao Yan’s hand, lightly saying: “The Heaven Cage Sigil I planted before is already greatly

weakened, the taotie's remnant spirit could awaken at any moment. It's better if Xiao Yan does not carry this ring around with him."

Yet while speaking her gaze looked towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng instantly understood that Yan Mingyue wants him to take action to help deal with the remnant taotie spirit in the ring. Like this Xiao Yan will be increasingly grateful and Lin Feng taking him in as a disciple will be even more natural.

Looking at this from another angle, is this not also another of Yan Mingyue's tests targeted at him?

Lin Feng secretly cursed in his heart, this woman really isn't a slouch. But admittedly if Lin Feng really can smoothly and cleanly deal with the remnant taotie spirit he'll be able to display his strength before Xiao Yan and attract him to become his disciple.

Everything depends on if Lin Feng has any real skill. If he does then this is a good thing without any harm, Yan Mingyue clearly did him a great favour.

If he doesn't have any skill then he'll reveal his true form, naturally there won't be anything to say.

Yan Mingyue stared at Lin Feng with the shadow of a smile on her face, surprisingly carrying a few hints of the mischievous expression of a little girl and giving Lin Feng a massive headache.

“Birds of the same feather with that Long Ye, both of them aren’t good birds. Serves you guys right to go down together. Why didn’t you guy’s perish together and let the world be rid of two disasters!”

Lin Feng secretly cursed in his heart but on the surface he was still the appearance of an enigmatic master, saying with a smile: “Small case, leave it to me.”

While speaking Lin Feng unceremoniously took the ring from Xiao Yan’s hand.

The more it’s at these kinds of times the more one has to not act diffidently. He cannot reveal his true situation.

Lin Feng took over the ring and sent his mana into it, his consciousness instantly entering into an independant space.

In the dark space dozens of beams of disorderly light formed a massive cage. In the cage a savage beast was roaring ferociously.

The appearance of the beast is like a goat with a human’s face, its eyes are beneath its pits and it possesses teeth of a tiger with human hands. Its voice is like an infant’s, constantly ramming the cage formed by light. It is precisely the form of one of the four great ancient beasts of legend, the taotie.

Right now the beams of light are already very thin, compared to the taotie it’s practically like using rope the thickness of a finger to

tie an elephant.

If not for the overall cage formed by the beams of light that releases a unified light every time the taotie rams into it, the beams of light would have already been torn apart a long time ago.

Lin Feng felt his blood freeze whilst staring at it. Even though this isn't a true taotie and is just a remnant spirit, its strength is at least foundation establishment stage and it can also devour all things, it is far more terrifying than the average human foundation establishment stage cultivator.

While heavily injured Yan Mingyue's level is also just foundation establishment stage. If not for the profundity of the Void Temple's secret technique the Heaven Cage Sigil she simply would not be able to contain this savage beast.

Before when Xiao Yan was at the great circle of perfection of qi disciple level 12, he was forcefully sucked into a useless loser by this taotie.

Lin Feng's current level is qi disciple level 7, being put on the spot to face this savage beast the pressure on him is not your average big.

Not paying attention to the struggling and roaring taotie, Lin Feng focused all of his attention on the light cage formed by the Heaven Cage Sigil. To take care of this beast he'll probably have to depend on this Heaven Cage Sigil.

Even time the taotie rams into it once the beams of light become a bit thinner, representing a portion of the mana of the Heaven Cage Sigil being consumed.

When Yan Mingyue just set up the Heaven Cage Sigil in the past the light beams were presumably very thick. Only after three years time of depletion did it become like this.

Understanding this point Lin Feng had an idea. He started to try and infuse his own mana into the light cage to “recharge” the cage and help it to continue working.

This is not an easy matter. As the signature spell of the Void Temple, the Heaven Cage Sigil’s appearance looks like a simple light cage, but the inner mana workings are actually extremely complicated.

Countless incantation sigils worked together like an incredibly sophisticated machine.

When Lin Feng just infused his mana within, it was like a bull barging into a flock of sheep. Not only did it not achieve the effect of replenishing it, he nearly affected the regular operation of the Heaven Cage Sigil.

Lin Feng did not dare to continue taking risks, only integrating bits of mana within and first patiently grasping the workings of the sigil. This is actually the same as learning the Heaven Cage Sigil.

But he is like a [blind man feeling an elephant](#), his learning efficiency is extremely low.

Lin Feng right now has no other choice, he's already been forced into a corner, he must succeed.

Secretly dealing with the Heaven Cage Sigil, on the surface Lin Feng had a poised appearance, calmly looking towards Xiao Yan: "You set a three year promise with your fiancée, what are your plans now?"

Some things you'll only understand their value when you lose them, recovering what was lost will make people value it even more.

Xiao Yan is like so. Knowing the reason behind the change in his body he has already regained his confidence. Leaving these two rings his talent has definitely already returned.

Only, when hearing the word fiancée and thinking of the matter before, Xiao Yan's expression still changed.

He took a deep breath saying: "Of course I'll do all I can to catch up and take back everything that I lost before."

Lin Feng smiled faintly: "Your talent is very good, but that little girl's talent is also not bad. While you are improving she is also improving, but her starting point is a lot higher than yours."

“Even if you transform back into the prodigy from the past, based on your original cultivating speed are you sure you can catch up to her within three years?” Lin Feng’s smile was enigmatic: “Not to mention she has the support of the Celeritas Sword Sect, her training resources are far superior to yours.”

Xiao Yan felt a jolt, glancing at Lin Feng and then subconsciously looking towards Yan Mingyue.

Yan Mingyue smiled faintly: “As an outsider I can’t say too much about the grudge between you and Ms. Murong, but your body suffering a great change is more or less related to me. Here I express my deep apologies, I will use a spell of the Void Temple as compensation, I ask that you forgive me.”

Hearing this at the side, Lin Feng secretly shouted out in his heart: “Excellent!” This chick may be cunning but her character is not bad.

Xiao Yan is also very happy. The spell that Yan Mingyue wants to pass onto him definitely won’t be shabby, but very quickly his mood dropped back down. Even with this spell will he for sure be able to defeat Murong Yanran three years later and avenge the humiliation today?

He knows best about himself, in the past he used four years time to cultivate to the great circle of perfection of qi disciple level 12. How high will his level be three years later?

Even if both sides are at the same level, the Xiao family dao

technique that he practises is only third rate, yet Murong Yanran is a direct disciple of the Celeritas Sword Sect. What she practices is the Celeritas Sword Sect's best dao technique, best spells and abilities, mountains of pills and panaceas open to eat, maybe she even has powerful magic items passed down by her master or sect...

Letting out a dejected sigh, Xiao Yan secretly glanced at Lin Feng who is carrying a faint smile on his face, his eyes slowly becoming brighter.

Lin Feng's eyes also lit up: "That's right, my good disciple, hurry up and come into master's bowl!"

Chapter 20: Lots Of Surprises

His gaze looking at Lin Feng, Xiao Yan opened his mouth asking: “Since senior is saying this, are you indicating that you have a way to help me defeat Murong Yanran three years later?”

Lin Feng smiled coolly: “Naturally I have a way, but the final result still has to look at how determined you are and how much effort you are willing to give.”

“The master initiates the apprentice, but their skill depends on their own efforts. A rotten tree is in the end unable to achieve greatness.”

Xiao Yan’s twin brows rose up high: “I don’t know if in senior’s eyes I am a rotten tree or a rough diamond, but I dare to say that my determination will absolutely not falter, I will do my utter best.”

The black-clothed youth’s gaze was filled with resolution: “No matter how much pain, I am able to bear it. No matter how great the trouble I will overcome it!”

Lin Feng nodded his head: “If it’s like this then acknowledge me as your master, I will take you in.”

“I also have to acknowledge you as my master?” Xiao Yan was a bit hesitant.

Lin Feng said as a matter of factly: “Anyone who enters under my teaching I will definitely teach them my all. What I want is a successor, not a half-minded opportunist.”

Xiao Yan thought for a moment and then prepared to accept it.

Seeing him about to accept, Lin Feng’s heart instantly heated up. But closely afterwards he sensed a slightly familiar mana fluctuation approaching the lakeside.

Twisting his head and looking over, he saw petite, purple figure rapidly rushing over.

Yan Mingyue also discovered it, her gaze looking towards the purple figure together with Lin Feng. Xiao Yan followed their gazes and looked over, becoming slightly dazed: “It’s Zhener?”

Lin Feng secretly frowned. At such a critical moment new problems unexpectedly cropping up is what he fears the most. Even if he covets Xiao Zhener’s talent, right now he doesn’t wish for her to get involved and bring about more variables to the matter of him taking in Xiao Yan as his disciple.

“I don’t wish to see other people. Go greet her and see what she wants, I will wait for you here.” Lin Feng said indisputably, directly ordering Xiao Yan to go and dismiss Xiao Zhener.

Xiao Yan looked at Lin Feng and then looked at Yan Mingyue at the side, in the end still nodding his head and heading towards

Xiao Zhener, stopping her far away.

Lin Feng could feel Xiao Zhener's surveying gaze sweeping towards him, but unsure of what excuse Xiao Yan used, he brought her and walked over towards a further area.

Yan Mingyue stared at Xiao Zhener's back, her gaze filled with a radiant splendour: "The relationship between Xiao Yan and this Miss Zhener is extremely good, this could also be considered another fortuitous opportunity."

Lin Feng knows that in these three years she's been hiding in Xiao Yan's ring the whole time, maybe she already discovered the abnormalities of Xiao Zhener.

"In this life, anybody that you meet is a type of opportunity, although whether or not it will affect your future is hard to say." Lin Feng very casually said.

Yan Mingyue glanced at him: "Fellow daoist Lin's opinion is somewhat similar to that of buddhism's."

Lin Feng smiled noncommittally, the majority of his concentration right now is all focused on the Heaven Cage Sigil in the ring.

He tried to use his own mana to grasp the principles of the Heaven Cage Sigil but was met with little success. Thinking of it it makes sense. if the Heaven Cage Sigil was so easy to see through

then how could it become the Void Temple's secret skill?

But for the current Lin Feng he has to crack and understand the principles of the Heaven Cage Sigil within a short period of time or else the remnant taotie spirit will reappear.

At that time Yan Mingyue will of course act to suppress it again, but Lin Feng will then have revealed his true situation. Naturally he won't be able to continue acting like a sagely master and Xiao Yan this disciple already in his hands will also be lost.

While they were talking Xiao Budian was standing at the side the whole time well-behaved, but in the end he is still just child who is not even four years old yet. Very quickly his attention was attracted by a little red bird that flit over the lake.

The corner of Lin Feng's eye swept over Xiao Budian who was restless, saying gruffly: "Go play by yourself, don't run too far."

"Thank you master!" Xiao Budian let out a cheer, stretching out his body and chasing after the little red bird.

Yan Mingyue's eyes stared at Xiao Budian's disappearing figure, exclaiming in a low voice: "And fellow daoist Lin says that it's not easy finding disciples, the talent of this little disciple of yours is virtually unmatched in the world."

"Besides one of my seniors I have never seen anyone able to reach the level of qi disciple level 4 at such a young age."

Lin Feng smiled uncaringly: “Don’t say this in front of him, little kids cannot be praised. Once they start to get smug it’ll be difficult to scale them back.”

Lin Feng was secretly laughing in his heart. You the Void Temple may be filled with prodigious geniuses, but the current Xiao Budian has still yet to display his true talent.

If not for the fact that he was harmed by his clan brother, Xiao Budian is a person that was born at the foundation establishment stage.

Although the Void Temple’s mega pool of prodigies still makes Lin Feng incredibly red-eyed.

He used the talent probe in the system tools before to secretly test Yan Mingyue, but he only obtained one notice from the system.

“Target matches the criterion but already has a master, needs to abolish the current master-disciple relationship to be able to become the host’s disciple.”

Lin Feng said in his heart: “Looks like those already with a master cannot be taken as disciples, if I want to steal disciples than I first need to incite the person to betray their original school and then I can take them as a disciple.”

Yan Mingyue frowned slightly: “That seems to be a fire

hummingbird, this kind of spiritual creature is very rare, before I've only seen them at the Blaze Sword Sect. I've never heard of fire hummingbirds in the Wuzhou region."

Lin Feng was busy in the middle of studying the Heaven Cage Sigil, casually replying: "Maybe someone brought it over..."

Half way through his sentence Lin Feng's voice abruptly stopped.

Dammit, it's the Blaze Sword Sect!

.....I am a dividing line.....

"Little red birdy, don't run!"

Xiao Budian chased after the little red bird from behind, passing through a little forest he saw the red little birdy land on the shoulder of a red-clothed person.

The person stood amongst a group of red-clothed people. A dozen people stood together, their mana surging and causing the area around them to be incredibly hot. Standing beside them was like standing beside the mouth of a volcano.

Amongst them two of the people had mana as deep as the sea, powerful and endless, they were foundation establishment stage cultivators.

And the red-haired old man with a fierce appearance at the very front, he looks calm but the pressure that he brings to Xiao Budian is even greater than all of the other people combined.

“Ah!” Even though Xiao Budian is little, he is a precocious child and his eyes are very sharp. With a glance he recognized one of the red-robed youths standing in the group of people, it was precisely that Blaze Sword Sect disciple that he left behind in the mountains.

This person was respectfully saying towards the red-haired old man: “Elder Li, this is this child that I saw.”

“You look everywhere but can’t find it, and then you turn around and it’s right there.” The red-haired old man sized up Xiao Budian, his gaze revealing a hint of astonishment, slowly nodding his head: “Excellent, excellent! Truly outstanding gift and talent.”

He walked over to Xiao Budian with big strides, bluntly saying: “Kid, come with me. From today onwards you are now a disciple of the Blaze Sword Sect!”

Xiao Budian blinked his eyes: “But old grandpa, I already have a master.”

Elder Li with his head of red-hair slightly cocked his eyebrows: “You don’t know how to behave kid, since I said you are a disciple of the Blaze Sword Sect, you are and can only be a disciple of the Blaze Sword Sect!”

“Old grandpa, I think it’s better if I go.” Xiao Budian retreated a few steps back, suddenly turning around and running away.

Elder Li let out a cold snort. A foundation establishment stage cultivator of the Blaze Sword Sect stood out beside him, extending his palm and opening it, his mana turned into boundless flames, directly detaining Xiao Budian below it like a massive cover.

Chapter 21: Enemy, Aurous Core Stage Cultivator

Boundless flames enveloped the entire area around Xiao Budian, leaving him without any path of retreat.

Xiao Budian shouted in anger: “You’re a bad person, I won’t go with you guys!”

The foundation establishment stage cultivator said with a frown: “A wild child from a mountain village, he doesn’t know what’s good for him. We the Blaze Sword Sect taking him in is his good fortune and he’s still here fooling around, it really is annoying.”

“Zhang Nan, just teach him a small lesson right now and teach him some manners, lest we return to the sect and he’s still making a fuss, it’s too shameful.”

The red-robed youth Zhang Nan that Xiao Budian first encountered responded and then walked over towards the fire barrier.

Looking at Xiao Budian Zhang Nan laughed coldly in his heart: “Little twerp, in the end you still land in my palms.” To begin with being ditched by Xiao Budian in the mountains made him extremely unhappy.

Right now seeing that Elder Li has decided to take in Xiao Budian as his disciple upon just meeting, Zhang Nan’s heart feels even

more uncomfortable. In the past in his hometown he could be considered a renowned prodigy, but to enter into the Blaze Sword Sect he still had to go through great lengths.

And yet this little twerp that once screwed around with him was so easily taken in as a disciple, this made Zhang Nan who was originally narrow-minded envious and hateful.

The foundation establishment stage cultivator purposely opened a hole in the fire barrier in convenience for Zhang Nan to enter.

Seeing a gap finally appear in the fire barrier Xiao Budian immediately dashed forward, attempting to escape.

But Zhang Nan was waiting for this exact moment, taking a step forward he blocked Xiao Budian's path. Xiao Budian yelled anxiously: "Move!"

"Stay inside like a good boy." Zhang Nan let out a cold laugh, his palm pushing towards Xiao Budian's chest.

The area of the gap is limited, Xiao Budian has no way to dodge and is forced to engage him, also thrusting his palm towards Zhang Nan.

Zhang Nan laughed coldly in his heart. He can see that even though Xiao Budian's escape technique is refined, his level is after all only qi disciple level 4. Going head-on against him who is at qi disciple level 6 is asking to be burnt.

While thinking Zhang Nan suddenly saw Xiao Budian flip his palm, clasp his wrist. Turns out that Xiao Budian's forward thrust was just a feint, after grabbing hold of Zhang Nan his abnormal body strength fiercely exploded.

Before Zhang Nan even reacted he was thrown by Xiao Budian over his head, being heavily smashed into the ground like waving a hammer.

The group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators were all dazed, nobody thought that Xiao Budian was actually so fierce.

Seeing Xiao Budian about to escape out of the gap in the fire barrier after throwing over Zhang Nan, the foundation establishment stage cultivator that set up the fire barrier felt embarrassed. Letting out a cold snort his powerful mana instantly overwhelmed Xiao Budian.

Xiao Budian lay on the ground constantly struggling. He may be young but the strength of his body is incredibly powerful. Going nuts right now and letting out low roars he was like the cub of a savage beast.

The foundation establishment stage cultivator was blue in the face. He did not make a killing move and the result is that he actually has a slight feeling of being unable to suppress Xiao Budian.

At this time Zhang Nan came back around. Outside of the fire

barrier the sound of laughter of his juniors and seniors travelled over, causing his face to turn red and his heart to be filled with a furious rage. Crawling back up he pounced onto Xiao Budian, slapping Xiao Budian in the head knocking Xiao Budian's head into the ground.

Zhang Nan cursed in a low voice: "You little bastard, today I'll teach you how to behave!" While speaking slap after slap landed on Xiao Budian's body.

Xiao Budian felt the burning pain on his body but he did not cry and did not yell in pain, not letting out a single sound.

All because his master once told him: "When you are in a disadvantageous position, the more you submit the happier your enemy will be and the more intensely they will bully you. No matter what you lose in you cannot lose in vigour, you have to be strong and do everything possible to transform defeat into victory!"

Seeing Xiao Budian not only not surrender but instead struggle increasingly more, Zhang Nan's ferociousness was aroused, his strength rising to the limit and chopping towards the back of Xiao Budian's neck with his palm.

"Stop!"

Just rushing over Lin Feng saw a scene in front of him that made his blood boil with anger, hurriedly letting out a loud shout like thunder exploding on the ground.

Accompanying the loud shout, a brilliant beam of Northern Aurora Mystic Light shot straight towards the fire barrier. Violent lightning directly shredded the fire barrier, causing it to turn into fiery meteors scattering all over the place.

The beam of lightning did not stop, striking towards Zhang Nan who was dumb as a wooden chicken.

Over at the side of the Blaze Sword Sect, a beam of light flashed in Elder Li's eyes, he let out a cold snort: "You have the face to show off these parlour tricks?" Lifting up his hand and pointing with his finger, a beam of crimson red sword aura shot forward.

With just the least bit of difference from Zhang Nan, the crimson red sword aura stopped the Northern Aurora Mystic Light, shattering the lightning in mid-air.

Lin Feng's pupils abruptly contracted: "Aurous core stage!"

The Northern Aurora Mystic Light is the strongest attack of the foundation establishment magic item the Northern Aurora Sword. Even with Lin Feng's own level he is unable to use it and has to rely on the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade to be able to use it. It is equivalent to the full-powered attack of a peak foundation establishment stage cultivator and is Lin Feng's strongest move.

From far away seeing the mana fluctuations of the fire barrier he knew that it was the ability of a foundation establishment stage cultivator. If he wants to save Xiao Budian he needs to first get rid

of the fire barrier, which is why he let out a big move at the get go and sure enough he destroyed the fire barrier with one hit.

But now the Northern Aurora Mystic Light has been casually dispelled by that red-haired old man, Lin Feng's heart also sank to the bottom with it.

Every stage of cultivation is a massive dividing line, a near insurmountable chasm for those of the mundane. Not mentioning that right now Lin Feng is only at qi disciple level 7, even if he successfully reaches foundation establishment, against Elder Li who is at the aurous core stage it would still be suicide for him.

There is simply no way to make up for such a great difference, the overwhelming difference in strength allows Elder Li to ignore all strategies and schemes, directly crushing Lin Feng.

Against a group of threatening Blaze Sword Sect cultivators, the cold sweat on Lin Feng's back had already completely soaked his clothes.

“Master!” Lin Feng's attack before was not entirely useless. The shockwaves of the collision between the crimson red sword aura and the Northern Aurora Mystic Light directly overturned Zhang Nan who was pressing on top of Xiao Budian. Xiao Budian struggled up, running over to Lin Feng.

But after taking just two steps his body abruptly paused, the next instant his body flew backwards landing in the hands of Elder Li, being held by the collar in mid-air by the red-haired old man.

Being grabbed by the old man Xiao Budian felt completely strengthless, he was unable to use any of his mana or strength.

Xiao Budian's four limbs helplessly flailed in the air: "Let go of me, let go of me! You bad old geezer! Master, master, save me, master!"

Lin Feng was bitter in the mouth, forcing himself to become energetic and maintaining the appearance of his masterly demeanor. He stared coldly at the group of Blaze Sword Sect Cultivators: "The dignified Blaze Sword Sect, a member of the Nine Heavens Sword Alliance, actually bullying a little child?"

Elder Li laughed coldly: "You are but a mere wandering cultivator with a level of just peak foundation establishment, do you think you are qualified to parade your tongue in front of me?"

"This kid possesses outstanding talent, learning from you is practically like casting pearls before swine, a waste of his talent. Me taking him under the door of our sword sect is precisely to not waste his talent. It is his good fortune and luck, as for you..."

Elder Li curled his lips in disdain: "Today I've accepted a good disciple and am in a good mood, I'll let you go, screw off as far as you can. From today onwards you're not allowed to appear in front of me or else I'll cut you down. I'd like to see who dares to speak wrong of me!"

He casually glanced at Lin Feng, and this is only because of Lin

Feng's Northern Aurora Mystic Light before or else he couldn't even be bothered to take a look at Lin Feng.

But just this glance made Lin Feng feel like he had fallen through ice. An unprecedentedly strong sense of danger emerged in his heart.

He'd never felt himself to be so close to death, his life withering, his soul shattering.

An aurous core stage cultivator exerting his pressure on the body of a qi disciple level 7 cultivator, just this pressure alone is virtually enough to crush the entire body of the opponent.

Lin Feng's finger moved, he had the impulse to clench his fists but he restrained himself at the first moment, becoming relaxed again.

Right now Lin Feng was having an internal battle with himself in his heart: "What should I do? Should I just endure it? The difference in strength is too great. If I fight I'll definitely be killed by this old geezer."

It's true that he will be killed by the system if he does not complete the system task within one year and gather four disciples, but if he doesn't step back today then he might be about to die right away.

"Ten years is not late for a gentleman's revenge. I'll first endure

it for today and then in the future when my level is higher I'll have this old geezer pay back twice as much. Knowing that you are no match and forcing yourself to fight is not bravery, it is stupidity..." Lin Feng constantly convinced himself in his heart, but when he came in contact with Xiao Budian's clear eyes, he suddenly couldn't keep on going.

The four year old child's gaze did not have any fear or worry, only endless hope. It's like he never worried that his master would be no match for the enemy and especially never thought that his master would abandon him.

Lin Feng's two fists suddenly clenched tight, roaring in his heart: "Fuck it, if it's an idiot than I'll be one. I didn't come over here to be someone's bitch, why live if I live so worthlessly?"

Your birdy faces the sky if you die, if you don't then long live forever, it's just two words.

Do it!

Lin Feng's action of clenching his fists was keenly sensed by Elder Li. He let out a cold laugh: "Looks like you're suicidal, then I'll fulfill your wish!"

One hand grabbing onto Xiao Budian, the fingers of his other hand came together like a sword. A dazzling fiery red sword aura started to gather and condense at the tip of his fingers.

Different from his juniors controlling flying swords, Elder Li had already completely refined his flying sword into a beam of blazing sword aura, human and sword as one. His strength is on an entirely different level.

The sword aura blazed like a flickering flame. He had yet to release it but it was already emitting waves of an incredibly terrifying aura.

In the surrounding hundreds of meters, all of the vegetation had already withered and the moisture was evaporated.

Lin Feng stood on the spot, the air the he breathed into his lungs was like it was about to burn up. Under the scorching environment he felt waves of dizziness, the sign of dehydration.

He could even see large amounts of steam like clouds and mist rise up from the little lake in the distance.

This is the terrifying strength of aurous core stage cultivators. Once Elder Li releases this attack it is enough to reduce to shambles the entire area around the little lake north of the city.

Lin Feng licked his chapped lips, right now he is the direct target of this sword.

Chapter 22: Start Up: New System Tool!

Against Elder Li's upcoming terrifying offensive, Lin Feng took in a deep breath, completely fearless.

Since he's already made his decision then there's nothing to be afraid about.

Lin Feng took back the mana he was using to probe the Heaven Cage Sigil. Even if he's gonna do it he's not going to do it by brute force, but instead by taking advantage of everything that can be used. He already has a plan, that is to simply destroy the already crumbling Heaven Cage Sigil and release that remnant taotie soul.

What Yan Mingyue will do is very hard to judge. To face a terrifying aurous core stage cultivator alone, Lin Feng's only option is to muddle the waters. Only under a situation of chaos does Lin Feng have a chance to fish in troubled waters with little risk.

Right after Lin Feng took back the mana from within the Heaven Cage Sigil, the long-forgotten system notification sound suddenly sounded in his head.

"Host failed self-analysis, does host wish to start up the system tool, the ability analyzer?"

Lin Feng subconsciously pressed "Yes", the system immediately reacted: "System tool ability analyzer starting up."

Up until right now, the Super Founder System has a total of three subsystems, the trading system, the lottery system and the disciple system.

Besides these there is also one system tool, the talent prober, specially used to probe the cultivating talent of the target using classifications of bone root, comprehension, will and blessing, creating a digitized summary.

And the effect of the newly unlocked ability analyzer is to help Lin Feng analyze a certain ability and resolve the principles of its structure. Its goal is to help Lin Feng grasp an ability within the shortest amount of time.

The ability analyzer also has its limits, the analysis requires a certain amount of time. For example the attack right now from the Blaze Sword Sect's Elder Li, after his power releases the attack will be finished, in such a short period of time the ability analyzer is unable to analyze the ability that he is using.

Thus this system tool is mainly targeted towards formations and sigils these kinds of abilities that have a long-term effect and where the mana circulation exists for a long time.

Such as the Heaven Cage Sigil.

Without hesitation Lin Feng started up the ability analyzer and started analyzing the Heaven Cage Sigil.

At the same time a thought flashed across in his mind and he had a bold plan.

Making preparations in secret, on the appearance Lin Feng still looked as steady as a mountain, standing on the spot expressionless and calmly facing Elder Li's attack that is part of the Blaze Sword Sect's esoteric sword path "Meteor Ember Sword".

... In appearance, his appearance right now could also be said to being scared out of his mind.

Zhang Nan laughed coldly, saying towards Xiao Budian: "Look closely, in front of we the Blaze Sword Sect that master of yours is just trash."

Xiao Budian didn't pay heed to Zhang Nan, his big eyes nervously staring at Lin Feng. With the mighty appearance of Elder Li's sword skill the Meteor Ember Sword, Xiao Budian's confidence was not so full.

Compared to the great momentum on Elder Li's side, there isn't the least bit of movement on Lin Feng's side, making it hard for people to have confidence in him.

The opponent's power increasingly grew and had already gradually reached its peak. Lin Feng was well aware that this Meteor Ember Sword of Elder Li's in actuality does not require such a long charging time.

The reason that he is putting on such airs is not to frighten Lin Feng, in his eyes Lin Feng is already a dead man, the one he wants to frighten is Xiao Budian.

Elder Li wants to completely subdue Xiao Budian and let Xiao Budian recognize the massive gap between Lin Feng and the Blaze Sword Sect, making him experience the strength of the Blaze Sword Sect, thus causing him to willingly become his disciple.

Finally, Elder Li's aura reached its peak, his index and middle fingers straightening together like a sword and pointing straight towards Lin Feng.

The burning fire at his fingertips exploded, turning into thousands of blazing sword aura, their long tails of fire flickering in the air like thousands of fire dragon roaring and charging forth, blotting out the sky and rushing towards Lin Feng.

For sword aura flying near the ground, the powerful force brought up in the process of flying directly plowed out deep grooves dozens of meters deep.

What kind of power is this?

Every beam of sword aura can destroy a small hill, every beam of sword aura is the same as the full powered attack of a foundation establishment stage cultivator, every beam is something that the current Lin Feng cannot withstand.

And right now there are hundreds of thousands of this kind of sword aura, blotting out the sky!

The areas that the sword aura passed through became scorched earth, at this moment the violent power shook all of Wuzhou City.

Xiao Budian opened his eyes wide: “Master, show them who’s boss!”

Elder Li who was grabbing on to him let out a cold snort: “Kid, open your eyes wide and look closely, this is the true ability of an immortal!”

Xiao Zhener and Xiao Yan were also startled and rushed over. Seeing the scenery of these thousands of sword aura shooting forward Xiao Yan’s expression changed greatly: “Aurous core stage cultivator!”

“Xiao ge-ge, this master of yours is probably a complete sham...” Xiao Zhener frowned while staring at Lin Feng who still did not have any reaction as if he was scared dumb, hesitating in her heart: “Should I save him?” (TL: Ge-ge, brother, but the way she says it is like how the Koreans say oppa, so I didn’t translate it and left it as ge-ge.)

Yan Mingyue was actually hiding at the side the whole time, all of her concentration was focused on Lin Feng: “If you’ve got any cards up your sleeves then it’s time to use them or else it’ll be too late.”

Everybody was looking with their breaths held, but right now Lin Feng who was at the heart of the storm only had one feeling, and that was hot.

Incomparable heat, like he was within a furnace and was about to be completely burnt into ashes.

His vision was a sea of fiery red, the dazzling crimson red sword aura caused him unable to keep his eyes open.

Lin Feng could already smell the scent of death.

“Open!”

Right when Elder Li released his sword Lin Feng’s mana surged, attacking from the inside and the outside with the taotie and forcefully smashing apart the Heaven Cage Sigil in the ring.

“I’m out! I’m finally out!”

“Yan Mingyue, if I don’t eat you my hatred cannot be quelled!”

“Eat! Eat! Eat!”

A piercing voice sounded non-stop in Lin Feng’s mind.

The ring in his palm was like a black hole, releasing a massive force of suction wanting to devour everything in the vicinity that it can come in contact with.

Lin Feng immediately felt his mana uncontrollably gush into the ring, rushing downwards like the flooding water after the dam breaks.

The hundreds of thousands of beams of sword aura in front were already near at hand, in addition there was also a black hole constantly devouring his mana. Beset by external and internal troubles Lin Feng's face instead revealed a smile, quietly putting the ring on his finger.

Lin Feng flatly pushed his right arm forward, as if wanting to block the blazing fire rushing towards him.

“Foolish!”

All of the Blaze Sword Sect cultivators revealed an expression of disdain. A foundation establishment stage cultivator wanting to block an aurous core stage cultivator's sword skill like this is practically inviting humiliation.

His only result is being burnt to ashes.

The group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators could virtually already see the first beam of sword aura attacking Lin Feng and slicing off his extended right hand, following is the second beam, the third

beam...

Hundreds of thousands of beams of sword aura will shred him to pieces, and the sword aura will turn into blazing flames, turning to dust this tiny wandering cultivator that does not know how high the sky is and how thick the earth is.

What a perfect scene!

Elder Li and co. watched grinningly, but as time progressed all of their smiles froze on their faces.

What did they see?

Upon coming in contact with Lin Feng's extended hand, Elder Li's incomparably violent sword aura suddenly vanished out of sight.

That's right, vanished, without any sound or trace.

There was no violent collision, no awe-inspiring aura, just silently vanishing out of sight like that.

Following, the second beam, the third beam... At this moment Lin Feng's palm was like a bottomless abyss, silently and decisively devouring the hundreds of thousands of sword aura released by Elder Li's Meteor Ember Sword.

The next instant, the lakeside was utterly silent. Both sides were still standing face to face, it was as if the Meteor Ember Sword that was enough to flatten the surrounding area for miles around had never appeared before.

Only the hot atmosphere that still remained in the air and the black, messy ground proved that it really did exist before.

In the deathly silent crowd a loud, crisp child's voice suddenly rose up: "Master is amazing!"

It was precisely Xiao Budian, even though he's being held in the air by the collar by Elder Li, the little guy was still gleefully cheering for Lin Feng.

"This is impossible!"

At this time the group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators finally reacted, bursting out in an uproar.

Elder Li especially had his bull eyes wide open staring at Lin Feng, his throat released heavy sounds of panting but he was unable to say any words.

Only until this moment did Lin Feng let out a breath of relief, his back was already completely soaked.

The force of attraction from within the ring on his finger became extremely weak, beside his ears the sound of the taotie's whispers

travelled over: “Delicious, so good! I’ve made back all of my losses these past few years... But I still want to keep eating!”

While speaking, Lin Feng felt the force of attraction within the ring become stronger again!

Chapter 23: Kid, Have You Messed Around Enough Yet?

From beginning to end the expression on Lin Feng's face did not have any change, calmly and indifferently staring at the group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators in front.

A moment ago, this expression of his was considered by people as being scared dumb by Elder Li's monstrous offensive.

But, after Elder Li's menacing Meteor Ember Sword was dissolved into nothingness, everybody's expression changed.

Elder Li's crimson hair flew in the air, swinging his arms he threw Xiao Budian towards the Blaze Sword Sect cultivators behind him and then silently took great strides forward, walking towards Lin Feng.

Flipping his hand, endless flames spewed out from the red-haired elder's palm. The next instant it then rapidly condensed, forming a dark red light sword in his palm.

The light sword looked plain and ordinary, only a dim luster circulated on the blade of the sword.

But the pressure that this light sword brought to Lin Feng was far greater than the Meteor Ember Sword before with its towering aura.

Because this time the old geezer has pulled out his trump card, his powerful mana was all gathered on this light sword, his power condensed to the extreme. The blazing fire mana did not have the slightest bit of leakage, instead it was still absorbing heat from from the air.

The originally hot and dry air cooled down at this moment. The group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators were all gathered together and naturally forming an endless heat, but right now it had also completely vanished.

It was not that they'd restrained their mana, but that even this heat was also absorbed by Elder Li's light sword.

At this moment, the seemingly ordinary light sword faintly revealed a daunting power, an aura of destruction!

Lin Feng stared at the sword. He is certain that if he is struck once by the sword then he will not be enveloped by flames, there won't even be a process of burning. He will be directly turned into ashes and dust, the instant that he is hit he will be vaporized by the violent heat.

If this sword lands in the little lake far-off, the tens of thousands of cubic meters of lake water will be instantly evaporated dry. If it lands on the walls of Wuzhou City, it can cut down half of Wuzhou City.

Elder Li who became serious did not say any more nonsense, the light sword in his hand heading straight for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng understood clearly that competing against reaction speed with this great aurous core stage cultivator is complete suicide, so when Elder Li pointed the sword towards him Lin Feng retracted back the right hand wearing the ring in front of his chest.

With the lesson of the Meteor Ember Sword before, the old geezer is definitely not going to disperse his power but will instead gather all of his strength and attack one point.

Lin Feng is gambling, gambling on Elder Li's point of attack.

If he guesses wrong then even the ring cannot protect him, he will die for sure.

From the moment that Lin Feng decided not to retreat and resolutely confront the Blaze Sword Sect, he'd already known that he would be facing a near hopeless situation, but this instead stimulated his fighting spirit.

He wants to do his utmost best to plow open a path of survival.

At this moment Lin Feng's heart had practically stopped beating.

At the same time, the red-haired elder had already vanished on the spot.

His speed was so fast that Elder Li had already arrived in front of

him and Lin Feng could not even react, the dark red sword aura inches away.

Lin Feng roared wildly in his heart. He made the right bet, the sword aura is piercing straight towards his chest!

If he didn't predict the enemy's intention beforehand and take early action, Lin Feng would simply be unable to block this sure-kill sword.

But now everything is different, a powerful force of attraction exploded from within the ring, wildly devouring the mana contained in Elder Li's sword aura.

Beside Lin Feng's ears travelled over the furious roars of the taotie: "Maggot, you dare to use me? If I don't die today I will definitely eat you!"

Right now Elder Li's face was ghostly pale, he could feel that his mana was rapidly leaving him.

The taotie in the ring was going balls to the wall devouring Elder Li's mana. On one side it was the the taotie itself being gluttonous, rather willing to be stuffed to death than to let go of the delicacy already at its mouth.

On the other side it's that right now the taotie is already on thin ice. If it gives up at this moment then it will take the bullet for Lin Feng and will be the first to be eliminated by Elder Li's light sword.

Elder Li's speed is too fast, so much so that when everybody around could clearly see his movements, the light sword had already arrived at Lin Feng's chest.

Right now the light sword is like a black hole, all light that goes into it disappears out of sight. When people look over they immediately feel mentally unstable, like their entire soul is about to be sucked within.

The Blaze Sword Sect cultivators all released a cheer of joy.

“How are you gonna survive this time?” The group of people ecstatically looked at Elder Li succeed, excited to the point that their eyes were red.

But after a moment their cheers of joy came to a screeching halt, all that remained was a faint echo that trembled in the air.

Because they shockingly discovered that Lin Feng who had been struck by the sword was actually still standing there perfectly fine, safe and sound.

On the contrary it was Elder Li's light sword the was rapidly waning at a discernable rate.

Lin Feng still did not make any movements, calmly and casually standing on the spot. His entire body did not have the slightest mana fluctuations. His calm gaze looking at Elder Li was like

looking at an entertaining clown.

The next instant Elder Li's light sword disappeared, his forward thrusting arm still blankly stretching towards Lin Feng.

The elder's face was full of shock, his head of red-hair that was originally dancing in the air like blazing flames had also lost its energy, dropping on his two shoulders.

He used all of his strength but it was as if the opponent did not care at all. At this moment Elder Li finally felt fear: "I screwed up, the height of this person's level is completely out of my realm, it's practically... Practically like a child facing a grown man."

"Run, I have to run, everybody has to run, or else if we wait until he makes his move then we'll all die!"

Right when Elder Li wanted to retreat, Lin Feng who did not say anything this whole time finally opened his mouth.

"Kid, have you messed around enough yet?"

Lin Feng retracted his right hand at his chest and then re-extended it, his index and middle fingers also straightening together like a sword, forming a sword sign and thrusting towards Elder Li.

Only Lin Feng could hear the howling cries of the taotie within the ring: "I can't take it, can't take it!"

The crimson red sword aura that was devoured by the taotie is a condensation of an aurous core stage cultivator's purest energy. At the moment the taotie is just a remnant soul, ultimately its appetite has its limits. Not only was it unable to devour this sword aura, it was instead seriously injured by the sword aura.

Without any other choice the taotie could only spit back out the sword aura.

"Since you've messed around enough then I have something to return to you." Red light surged at Lin Feng's fingertips and dark red sword aura identical to Elder Li's from before appeared at his fingertips, shooting towards Elder Li!

"No!"

Elder Li had an expression of disbelief, he had not time to evade it and was pierced straight through by Lin Feng.

The sword aura exploded in Elder Li's body, violent fire mana wildly raged. Blazing flames spit out from Elder Li's face, large amounts of fire essence poured out from the pores around his body, instantly burning away the clothes on his body.

The completely naked old geezer was ashamed and angry, but he did not dare to make any movements. Just like that he stood upright on the spot, circulating his mana and difficulty resisting the raging fire in his body. The slightest bit of carelessness and he will be burnt into charcoal.

Even Xiao Budian who had the most confidence in Lin Feng was currently staring dumbfounded at the scene in front of him. Only after a long while did he finally squeeze out a couple of words from his teeth: “Master is so strong!”

At this moment the group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators around him were all dumb as wooden chickens. Hearing his words they all couldn't help but nod their heads. When they reacted over they all felt incredibly awkward, but they all stood there gazing at each other with nothing to say.

What did they see?

In this battle, from beginning to end Lin Feng never actually made a single move. Just standing on the spot unmoving, not blocking and not dodging, letting Elder Li play all of his cards and attack freely.

He did not use any abilities or skills and did fight using martial arts, just you hitting me and me not moving. When I become irritated I casually throw back your attack and directly put you on the ground!

Far-away Xiao Yan was also shocked speechless. The red-haired elder is a genuine aurous core stage cultivator and is moreover an aurous core stage cultivator of the Blaze Sword Sect this kind of big sect.

Before now the highest levelled cultivator that Xiao Yan had seen

before was the leader of Wuzhou City, and he is also just at the aurous core level. Moreover he cannot compare to this Elder Li in front of him.

And yet it is precisely this kind of great cultivator who did not have any strength to fight back in front of Lin Feng.

If I am able to become his disciple...

Thinking there Xiao Yan felt a fire in his heart. He thought of three years later, the Celeritas Sword Sect and Murong Yanran, thought of the enemy that caused his father to be seriously injured and die.

Xiao Zhener also looked with a shocked expression at Lin Feng who still had an indifferent expression, a radiant light flashing in her eyes: "I also committed the fault of underestimating the people of the world, in this world the sky is truly not the limit."

"Too bad my clan will not accept Xiao ge-ge, but if he can become this senior's disciple then his future will also be very promising."

Right now everybody at the scene was so shocked that they could not speak, only Lin Feng was as calm as usual. Lifting his eyes he looked towards the group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators, his gaze focusing on Xiao Budian in the crowd.

With this glance of his all of the Blaze Sword Sect cultivators felt a shudder, all of them retreating backwards. The surroundings

around Xiao Budian instantly became an empty space.

Chapter 24: You're Overthinking

Lin Feng's gaze silently looked over. All of the Blaze Sword Sect cultivators were as if they had been stung by scorpions, hastily distancing themselves from Xiao Budian.

The eyes of one of the foundation establishment stage cultivators flashed, his retreating body stopped and then wanted to pounce towards Xiao Budian.

He has to take this hostage or else they will be unable to retreat safely.

Lin Feng glanced at him, lightly saying: "Starting from this instant, if my disciple is missing one strand of hair, you guys leave behind one life."

The foundation establishment stage cultivator's body immediately froze on the spot, not daring to even move.

Seeing this Lin Feng secretly let out a breath of relief. Right now the condition of his body is also very bad. Even though the taotie devoured Elder Li's attack, just the shockwaves of a great aurous core stage cultivator's attack is not something that Lin Feng can withstand.

Afterwards Elder Li's mana surpassed the taotie's limits and the taotie was forced to spit out all of the mana that it swallowed.

Not only the dark red sword aura, even the mana of the Meteor Ember Sword from before was also released and a relative portion flowed into Lin Feng's body. Right now his internal organs were also as if they were on fire, feeling like all of the blood in his body was about to boil and bubble.

Right at this moment, the taotie's force of devourment appeared again within the ring on his finger. Even though it was gravely injured by Elder Li and the strength of the taotie who was just a remnant soul to begin with greatly decreased, its gluttonous nature did not change and its first reaction after just catching its breath is to eat.

“When I recover my strength I'll definitely eat you whole!” The taotie furiously roared in the ring.

Lin Feng let out a cold laugh: “I'm afraid that you don't have good enough teeth.”

Finishing speaking Lin Feng's mana rushed into the ring, turning into dozens of light pillars and intertwining with each other. In an instant they formed a massive cage, locking the taotie within.

The taotie pounced at the cage with a howl, wanting to devour the mana comprising the light pillars. But profound essence circulated on the pillars of light and the entire cage emitted a great light, tightly suppressing the taotie.

After being dazed for a moment the taotie immediately flew into a rage: “The Heaven Cage Sigil again! You're also from the Void

Temple? Wuahhhh! God dammit, one day I'm going to swallow all of you damned daoists from the Void Temple!"

Lin Feng did not pay attention to its clamor, feeling pleased in his heart. The system tools are indeed extraordinary, through the ability analyzer he was able to resolve the secrets of the Heaven Cage Sigil in a short period of time.

Lin Feng was able to quickly learn this secret technique of the Void Temple which is why he was able to re-suppress the taotie after using it as a shield. Or else even if he is able to get past Elder Li he'll still be sucked dry by this taotie.

Lin Feng glanced at Elder Li whose skin was completely red and releasing white steam, right now he was like a massive cooked shrimp.

Calling out lucky in his heart, Lin Feng knows that the reason he was able to succeed with one strike is moreover because he silently took Elder Li's strongest attack head-on and the result was too shocking, causing this aurous core stage cultivator to become flustered.

Not only was he unable to evade Lin Feng's counterattack, he did not even have the time to defend, just stiffly taking the attack head-on.

This attack was entirely the same as the full powered attack of an aurous core stage cultivator at the same level as Elder Li. Taking a hit like this without any defense, the old geezer is already very

lucky that he didn't die.

Xiao Budian dashed over to his side, smilingly saying: "Master, that move of yours just now was so amazing, can you teach me?"

Lin Feng patted his tiny noggin: "You can't learn it right now, train hard and master will naturally teach it to you later."

Finishing speaking Lin Feng lifted up his head looking towards Zhang Nan in the crowd, his voice slightly cold: "Just now you hit my disciple, did you enjoy it?"

Lin Feng is incredibly annoyed by Zhang Nan, if not for this guy why would he need to needlessly risk his life against a great aurous core stage cultivator?

Zhang Nan was absent minded, his attention was still focused on the unbelievable reality of Elder Li losing. Coming in contact with Lin Feng's gaze at this moment, he immediately felt like he'd fallen through ice.

"Se... Senior... I, I just..." Zhang Nan's face was ashen, he couldn't even speak properly.

Right now the group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators beside him all retreated to the side, avoiding him like the plague. Their gazes staring at Zhang Nan became increasingly unfriendly.

... It's all this guy's fault, if not for him why would Elder Li suffer

such a disaster and why would we be in this mess?

Before Elder Li was defeated, nobody thought that it would be this kind of result.

All of the Blaze Sword Sect cultivators thought that they could easily take Xiao Budian this prodigious disciple into the sect. That wandering cultivator master of Xiao Budian's better know what's best for him or else we'll teach him a lesson and let him know the power of the Blaze Sword Sect.

But at this moment everybody was in regret, their chests were uncomfortably tight. Lin Feng who was too profound to be understood was too terrifying, making them only think about getting as far away as possible from this monster.

The gap between both sides is too large making them only able to feel fear, they did not even dare to have the slightest bit of hatred.

Their built up anger requires a means of discharge and Zhang Nan who was the root of all this naturally became the punching bag of his fellow peers.

One of the foundation establishment stage cultivators stared at Zhang Nan, saying lividly: "This is all your fault!"

The other foundation establishment stage cultivator did not say anything, directly slapping him and smashing Zhang Nan away.

Poor Zhang Nan was slapped far away before he could even react, his body in mid-air did a couple of high difficulty reverse somersaults before heavily falling to the ground.

Beating your own disciple in front of outsiders is actually a very demoralizing and shameful matter.

You are no match for the opponent and yet you use your own disciple to vent your anger. You are unable to protect the disciples from your sect and even use your disciple as a scapegoat. This kind of sect undoubtedly loses its cohesive force very easily and easily causes the disciples of the sect to gravitate away from the sect.

But when this foundation establishment stage cultivator sharply hit Zhang Nan, at this moment all of the Blaze Sword Sect disciples all cheered loudly in their hearts, only feeling that it was well deserved. This kind of menace should be mercilessly beat, it serves him right.

The pressure that Lin Feng brought to them had already caused them to be incapable of thinking calmly, only feeling like there was a breath stuck in their chest and that if they didn't release it then they would go crazy.

Staring at Zhang Nan who was half-dead, Lin Fen couldn't help but secretly grin. This foundation establishment stage cultivator really did not hold back, knocking away half of Zhang Nan's life with a slap.

“Today I will not trouble you, but that does not mean that this is

over.” Lin Feng stared at Zhang Nan, lightly saying: “The reason that I let you go today is to leave you for my disciple, to give him the chance to personally take revenge.”

Lin Feng lowered his head looking at Xiao Budian: “What do you say?”

Xiao Budian stared at Zhang Nan who was like a dead dog, releasing a humph: “The way he is right now, me fighting him could not be considered skill. After some time once I’ve learnt some abilities from master then I will find him and take my revenge.”

Lin Feng said in his heart that relentlessly beating the dog in the water is what’s justice, but he was not the least bit worried about Xiao Budian, on the contrary he was silently giving his tributes to Zhang Nan in his heart.

Are you kidding, what kind of good ending can an enemy have after being remembered by a main character?

Lin Feng lifted up his eyes again and looked towards the people of the Blaze Sword Sect, calmly saying: “You guys all heard what my disciple said? Keep your eyes on this person, one day I will bring my disciple Haotian and visit the Blaze Sword Sect to bring this matter to an end.”

The two leading foundation establishment stage cultivators involuntarily nodded their heads.

Looking at the expressions of the foundation establishment stage cultivators and the look in their eyes looking at Zhang Nan, Lin Feng laughed in his heart. With his last remark, even if Xiao Budian forgets about this small fry in the future, Zhang Nan's days in the Blaze Sword Sect will definitely be a living hell.

The corner of Lin Feng's eyes swept across Elder Li. Right now the old geezer was just about to catch his breath, but with his grievous wounds he could only be considered to still having half his life.

Seeing Lin Feng looking at him Elder Li wanted to die from shame, wishing that he could go crawl into a hole.

Lin Feng did not continue to trouble him, his chin lightly pointing towards him: "Take your elder and leave, don't appear in front of my eyes again."

The group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators felt like they'd been pardoned of crime, hastily picking up Elder Li and swiftly taking their leave.

The spiritual projection of Yan Mingyue with her green gown reappeared in the air, her gaze complicatedly looking at Lin Feng, actually unable to say anything for the moment.

The reason she handed over the ring sealing the taotie to Lin Feng to deal with was not only with the intentions of helping him and to test him.

Besides this she also had a third intention of probing him, killing three birds with one arrow.

As long as Lin Feng touches the Heaven Cage Sigil in the ring, Yan Mingyue will develop a link with the mana that she left behind and would thus be able to get a clear idea of the depths of Lin Feng's strength along with dao technique and background.

At first Lin Feng only had a slight bit of mana probing the Heaven Cage Sigil and Yan Mingyue did not pay it any heed, but afterwards Yan Mingyue suddenly lost her connection with the Heaven Cage Sigil.

Naturally she does not know that Lin Feng used the ability analyzer, only thinking that Lin Feng had discovered her plot and so cut off the link between her and the Heaven Cage Sigil.

Afterwards Elder Li made his debut and was nonchalantly defeated by Lin Feng. Of everybody at the scene, only Yan Mingyue knows that Lin Feng made use of the taoties's power.

But she did not dare to look down on Lin Feng at the slightest because of this, on the contrary she thinks that Lin Feng used the taotie to engage the enemy precisely to not let her see his limits.

And the reality is exactly so. After a fierce battle Yan Mingyue was unable to perceive exactly what level Lin Feng is at and the origins of his dao technique.

From Yan Mingyue's point of view, in that confrontation just now the two sides battling were actually Lin Feng and her. She wants to grasp Lin Feng's details and Lin Feng does not want her to get her wish. That red-haired elder of the Blaze Sword Sect was nothing but their tool of confrontation.

The result is naturally her complete and utter loss.

Even against an aurous core stage cultivator Lin Feng is able to not reveal any of his strength and instead use the remnant taotie soul she gave him to defeat the enemy. This made Yan Mingyue have a sense of defeat like going for wool and coming home shorn.

Even the two lines that Lin Feng said towards Elder Li, Yan Mingyue also felt that Lin Feng was actually saying them towards her.

“Kid have you messed around enough yet?”

“Since you've messed around enough then I have something to return to you.”

These two lines made Yan Mingyue's tranquil heart develop a bit of vexation.

She is not a regular disciple of the Void Temple. Even in the Void Temple that number one holy land of the ages, she is an existence favoured by the heavens. Since she was little no one could make her develop such a distressed feeling.

Even her archrival Long Ye of whom she fought with until a bitter end did not achieve this.

At this moment, Yan Mingyue did not have the slightest bit of negligence facing Lin Feng, instead treating him as a target that she must take seriously.

Lin Feng was a bit perplexed by Yan Mingyue's gaze. If he knew the thoughts turning around in her head he would only give a one line assessment.

“The hundred and one ways of an expert's death, overthinking!”

Right now all of Lin Feng's attention was focused on Xiao Yan who was rushing over as he mumbled in his heart: “The second one, the second one...”

Chapter 25: Second! Third?

After Xiao Yan went through the master-disciple ceremony, listening to the system notification sound beside his ears Lin Feng's entire body was a bit exhausted.

“Congratulations to host taking in your second direct disciple Xiao Yan.”

“Host has obtained reward of one lottery chance and 500 trading points.”

Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan in front of him, sighing in his heart: “I really put my life on the line this time to settle things.”

In the disciple system, besides Xiao Budian there was the addition of Xiao Yan's data.

Name: Xiao Yan

Age: 15 years 1 month

Current Level: Qi Disciple Level 1

Potential Attributes: Bone Root → 8; Comprehension → 9; Will → 9; Luck → 8

Note: Has special talent in alchemy.

Recommended Teaching Plan: “Recommended to practice fire class dao techniques, in terms of abilities the recommended direction of development is a focus on martial arts, recommended to train his alchemy level as he possesses very great potential.”

Even though he's not like Xiao Budian and directly has one attribute that is an OP max value, Xiao Yan's comprehension and will is one step above. His four attributes are all very outstanding and he also has an extra talent in alchemy.

But the system recommends Xiao Yan to practice fire class dao techniques, seeing this point Lin Feng secretly frowned.

The system undoubtedly gave out the most suitable teaching plan, but Lin Feng only has a Nine Heavens Thunder Technique on his hands, where can he go to find a fire class dao technique?

... And it also has to be a comparatively sophisticated fire dao technique or else how can he make Xiao Yan accept it?

Even if Xiao Yan doesn't say anything, this purple-clothed little girl in front of him will not settle for it.

Xiao Zhener stared at Xiao Yan with a wistful expression and then turned around asking Lin Feng: "Are you going to bring Xiao Yan ge-ge and leave Wuzhou?"

Lin Feng faintly smiled: "I will not stay here for long, when your Xiao Yan ge-ge finishes handling things at home then it'll be time for us to leave."

Pausing for a moment, Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan and continued saying: "There is a very difficult objective waiting for

him to complete, if he trains according to routine then the time will be too late. Only by going outside to an even bigger world, experiencing even more trials and coming in contact with more opportunities can he advance by leaps and bounds.”

Xiao Zhener naturally knows what Xiao Yan’s goal is, hearing this she became slightly dejected.

“You can also go with him.”

This line arrived at the tip of his tongue, did a few spins and then went back down his throat, he did not say it.

His act just now of defeating Elder Li was incredibly domineering. This girl may have also been shocked, but that look of hers was clearly being shocked that “there is also this kind of expert here”, and not “there is actually this kind of expert in the world”.

His performance was unable to impress her and adding her potentially super amazing background, the chances of this little girl bowing her head to him with Xiao Yan are very slim.

Sure enough, Xiao Zhener wistfully grabbed Xiao Yan’s hand: “Sorry, Xiao ge-ge, Zhener is unable to be with you, sorry...”

If possible she really wants to keep following her Xiao Yan ge-ge, but not only will she not be able to help him like that, she will instead bring him harm...

Even if it's not been even half a year and he's already gained half of the four disciples, that one year time limit was still weighing on Lin Feng's heart: "Number three oh number three, where are you?"

Without any clues it's very easy for his time to be wasted in an aimless search.

Seeing Xiao Zhener's reluctance, Xiao Yan smiled in a carefree manner: "Don't worry about me Zhener, I won't be leaving that quickly. Moreover, I have a feeling that we'll be meeting again very soon."

Yan Mingyue's gaze lingered between these two little lovebirds, a gentle smile blooming at the corner of her lips: "Xiao Yan, I said before that I will teach you a skill of the Void Temple as compensation for your care over these past three years."

"Originally I was going to teach you the Heaven Cage Sigil, but it looks like I don't need to now."

Hearing this Xiao Yan was stunned, Xiao Zhener was also slightly moved.

The Heaven Cage Sigil is the Void Temples signature spell, amongst the Void Temple's vast multitude of skills it can be considered a more basic spell, but it is one that almost all of the Void Temple's disciples will learn.

There's no other reason, after the constant improvements and modifications made by countless predecessors, this spell has already reached near perfection and is extremely handy.

The Heaven Cage Sigil, when qi disciple stage cultivators use it, it is a type of power. When primordial soul stage cultivators use it, it is another kind of earthshaking power.

Different from a multitude of spells having their limits and when a cultivator's own level increases they will gradually fall behind until being discarded, the Heaven Cage Sigil's potential is near infinite. Even in the battles of mighty primordial spirit level magnates it is also a very handy spell.

Hearing this Lin Feng was first dazed for a moment and then reacted over, the vigilance in his eyes looking at Yan Mingyue became even greater but also more hidden.

Through Lin Feng's method of using the taotie to repulse the enemy, Yan Mingyue has clearly already guessed that the Heaven Cage Sigil she'd left in the ring was not only cracked by Lin Feng, Lin Feng also seized the opportunity and grasped hold of the Heaven Cage Sigil.

The Heaven Cage Sigil is the Void Temple's secret spell and is not easily taught to outsiders, because once it lands in the eyes of those who know it the user will usually use the name of the Void Temple and it's very easy for them to use their fame to cause trouble.

But right now Yan Mingyue clearly does not intend to pursue the matter. Against Lin Feng this kind of person who is of unknown origin yet enigmatic, under the pretense of no central conflicts Yan Mingyue carries a better friends than enemies attitude.

She looked at Xiao Yan saying: “The spell I’m teaching you is called Red Lotus Break, it is a fire class spell. Its shortcoming is that it’s not easy to practise and there is even a certain risk when practising it, but its power is definitely satisfactory.”

Yan Mingyue spent everyday with Xiao Yan for three years, naturally she can see that Xiao Yan is most suited to practising fire class dao techniques.

The same as the Heaven Cage Sigil, Red Lotus Break could also be considered famous within the world and is a very famous fire class spell of the Void Temple. It is famous for being able to release strength greater than the cultivator’s current level.

Even though this spell has its flaws, it is the most suited to fighting higher levelled opponents with the least risk. For the current Xiao Yan its attraction is greater than the Heaven Cage Sigil.

Xiao Yan happily nodded his head. Yan Mingyue glanced at Lin Feng and then continued saying: “Besides the main ingredient the soul calming grass provided by fellow daoist Lin, I still need a few extra ingredients for the materials of the soul anchoring pill.”

“These ingredients are all very common, Wuzhou City has them.

I need to trouble you again to help me collect them.”

Xiao Yan agreed frankly, Yan Mingyue started to teach him the skill Red Lotus Break on the spot, not avoiding Lin Feng and Xiao Zhener who are at the side.

Although Yan Mingyue is not avoiding them, Xiao Zhener will not disrespect the rules. She gave Xiao Yan a notice: “Xiao Yan gege, I’ll go back to the house first. With such a big commotion here the people at the house will all be startled, I’ll go back to stabilize them, you take your time.” Finishing speaking she turned around and left.

Lin Feng secretly curled his lips and also brought along Xiao Budian walking away to the distance. Regardless of whether or not Xiao Yan will pass it on to Lin Feng on his own, at this time he has to put out the dismissive attitude of a master.

“Spirit calming grass? Soul anchoring pill?! They all go to that stupid bitch, dammit, dammit! If I ate it then I could immediately recover at least 50% of my strength, then go off and devour a couple of aurous core stage cultivators and I’ll be able to recover my previous strength very quickly, dammit!!!”

The taoties violent howls filled with resentment came from within the ring: “The Void Temple! That stupid bitch is from the Void Temple, you’re also from the Void Temple, people from the Void Temple are all bastards!”

“You’re a bastard, that stupid bitch is even more of a bastard, I

curse all of you people from the Void Temple to all die of horrible deaths!”

“Just like the previous holy maiden of your temple, her resolve to pursue the universal path broken, the fruits of her cultivation destroyed, marrying another person as a concubine, being bullied by a mortal woman, vomiting blood and dying, giving birth to a son who is all alone, ignored by his father, oppressed by his stepmother...”

The taotie was yelling to its heart’s content when it suddenly discovered that Lin Feng had appeared before it, staring straight at it across from the Heaven Cage Sigil’s light cage.

Lin Feng’s current gaze was like a wolf that had starved for its entire life suddenly seeing meat, making even the taotie this kind of glutton feel scared.

“If I didn’t mishear just now, you said...” Lin Feng licked his lips, his eyes glowing: “You said, the previous holy maiden was killed by someone and left behind a son. He is the son of a concubine in a rich and powerful family but is oppressed by his father and stepmother and is living very miserably?”

The taotie subconsciously nodded its head, Lin Feng let out a wave of ecstatic cries in his heart: “Happiness comes too suddenly, catching people by surprise! No matter how you look at it this guy is a main character template, one chosen by the heavens, could it be that the third one is coming soon?”

Chapter 26: The Tragic Holy Maiden

Inside the ring Lin Feng's conscious also formed an illusionary image, facing across from the remnant taotie soul in the light cage.

Lin Feng stared at the taotie asking: "If I didn't mishear just now, you said, the previous holy maiden was killed by someone and left behind a son. He is the son of a concubine in a rich and powerful family but is oppressed by his father and stepmother and is living very miserably?"

The taotie subconsciously nodded its head but then reacted over, yelling in discontent: "Why should I tell you?"

Lin Feng smiled brilliantly, with a thought the light cage formed by the Heaven Cage Sigil immediately shrank, squishing the taotie. The bars formed by the light pillars pressed on the taotie's body, thick smoke rose up from the surface of the taotie's body causing the taotie to repeatedly scream in pain.

The Heaven Cage Sigil is not just a means of trapping enemies, it also possesses attack ability. It is especially powerful against souls and spirits.

"Ah, it hurts! It hurts!" The taotie's face was all squished together from the pain, a series of distortions occurred to the semitransparent soul, transforming into a tiny human figure and huddling together avoiding the compression of the light cage.

Seeing this Lin Feng was slightly stunned. The taotie before him

has astonishingly turned into a little girl with two pigtails that looks only 3, 4 years of age. She has snow white skin and looks very cute.

This taotie's human form is actually a little loli. Just based on the cuteness of her appearance she is able to challenge Xiao Budian that super moe shota.

Only, this loli is truly ferocious. Her appearance may be cute but her expression is extremely unreasonable and domineering. Seeing Lin Feng blankly staring at her she snorted angrily: "What are you looking at, at my age this is what I look like when turning into my human form, country bumpkin!"

The taotie is not a beast famous for its shapeshifting. The human form that it manifests usually won't be fake, so this taotie is actually a female taotie cub.

Lin Feng came back to his senses, nodding his head: "No wonder your speech and actions are so childish, so you're still just a little brat."

The little taotie instantly exploded with anger, hopping around and yelling: "Who are you calling a little brat?"

Lin Feng smiled looking at her: "If you really think you're a grown up then could you please have some more mature reasoning. At the very least figure out your current situation."

He poked the little taotie, the smile on his face gradually disappearing: “For example, figure out exactly who’s the boss here?”

The little taotie looked at the close-by light cage that was still gradually shrinking and constricting towards her. The little guy grudgingly quieted down, although her mouth was still muttering: “If I hadn’t taken a hard hit from that old geezer from the Blaze Sword Sect before, how could this kind of Heaven Cage Sigil created by mana contain me, I’d eat the whole thing with one bite...”

Lin Feng’s face exuded a warm smile like the spring sun: “So what you’re saying is, are you reminding me to take advantage of your weakest moment right now to completely get rid of you?”

The little taoties body shivered, hurriedly shaking her head, her little face squeezing out a smile: “Of course not, of course not.”

Lin Feng nodded his head: “But I think I should eliminate you right now though.”

He slanted his eyes looking at the loli shaped taotie cub, counting his fingers and saying: “Firstly, that kid whose mana was sucked dry by you three years ago is now my disciple. Screwing him over so badly, as his master shouldn’t I stand up for my disciple and help him take revenge?”

“And then, that Yan Mingyue whom you hate to the core, even though she and I can’t yet be considered friends our relationship at

least isn't too bad.

“Lastly and also most importantly, if I keep you then once you recover your strength it will definitely be disadvantageous for me.”

The little taotie's expression became increasingly worse, her eyes already carried an evident fear.

Lin Feng stared at her: “I have so many reasons to get rid of you. You tell me, why should I let you go?”

The little taotie swallowed her saliva, opening wide a pair of big, sparkling black eyes and looking at Lin Feng pitifully: “This... This senior, if there's anything I can do then I am at your service.”

Lin Feng smiled, casually saying: “That depends on your performance.”

The little taotie was helpless and could only obediently respond to Lin Feng's question.

When the Void Temple accepts disciples they value quality over quantity. Their disciples are few in numbers and many of them will never leave the sect in their entire lives, only wholeheartedly training in the sect and meditating on the way of the universe.

But every time the Void Temple has disciples entering into the world to train it will definitely set off huge waves. The most outstanding leader amongst the disciples will travel the world

acting as the Void Temple's representative in the world.

This disciple is usually called the Daoist Wayfarer by the outside world. If this person just so happens to be a female then she is often known as the Void Temple's Holy Maiden.

At the earliest this appellation was merely the ridicule of busybodies, but because of the Void Temple's transcendent status as the number one holy land and the extraordinary strength of past female Daoist Wayfarers, it gradually became an established honorific.

The name of the Void Temple's previous holy maiden is Meng Bingyun, her talent was absolutely astounding and she is the publically acknowledged most prominent disciple of the Void Temple to enter into the world in the last millennium

The name of the dao technique Meng Bingyue practised is the Supreme Path of Indifference, together with another of the Void Temple's dao techniques the Yin-Yang Way of the Void they are known as the two "Supreme" and "Void" scriptures. They are the strongest dao techniques recorded in the Void Temple's daoist scripture "Profundity of the Void Dao".

This dao technique is about first obtaining love and then forgetting it, seeking the Heavenly Path by means of the human way.

At the highest level one transforms heartlessness into great benevolence, commanding all life without words, subduing the

heavens and the earth without moving.

Its greatest taboo is becoming entangled in love, the attachment not broken and becoming lead along by love, trapped by love.

And yet Meng Bingyun just so happened to have met a man with whom she was entangled with for life, the Great Zhou Dynasty's Grand Preceptor, the Marquis of Xuanji, Zhu Hongwu.

Meng Bingyun underwent a trial of love because of Zhu Hongwu, in the end unable to resolve it causing her resolve to seek the universal path to shatter and the fruits of her cultivation turning into nothingness. It can be said to be the worst conclusion to practising the Supreme Path of Indifference.

The Great Zhou Dynasty is a country even more powerful and prosperous than the Great Qin Dynasty. The kings of the past all worked diligently to make the country prosperous resulting in the flourishing of the country. When the throne was passed onto the current emperor Liang Pan the country's power rapidly expanded even more.

Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu both advocate suppressing the development of sects and holy grounds with religious backgrounds in the country. Moreover, 20 years ago they teamed up with the Nine Heavens Sword Alliance and other powerful groups and engaged in an earthshaking event, changing the power grid of the entire Heaven Primal world.

The elimination of buddhism! (TL: Interesting fact, this has

occurred multiple times in the history of China.)

The Great Zhou Dynasty joined together with many other forces and led a campaign against one of the world's three great holy lands located in the borders of the Zhou Dynasty, the Great Thunder Monastery.

The battle was tragic to the extreme, countless masters died in battle and there were even numerous primordial spirit stage cultivators who died.

In the end Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu succeeded, from that point onwards the Great Thunder Monastery was erased from this world. Of the world's three great holy lands only the Void Temple and the Mt. Shu Sword Sect remained.

The Void Temple is the daoist holy land and is likewise in opposition against the Great Zhou Dynasty. Because of her relationship with Zhu Hongwu, Meng Bingyun was even swept out of the sect and moreover was nearly executed.

If the story ended there then Meng Bingyun living lovingly together with Zhu Hongwu could sort of be considered a beautiful story of love. But for Meng Bingyun, marrying into the house of the Marquis of Xuanji was just the start of the nightmare.

Because of the dao technique that she practiced, when Meng Bingyun entered into the world to train she went deep into the mundane world and became a courtesan in a brothel who only sells her talent and not her body. Marrying into the house of the

Marquis of Xuanji that attaches great importance to etiquette and education, regardless of how brightly she shone before her marriage she couldn't be anything but a small concubine.

No dao techniques and cultivation, no family status, the past holy maiden of the Void Temple was actually bullied to death by a woman of the house who was just a regular person.

Listening until here Lin Feng also deeply sighed: "The house of a noble is as deep as the sea, a strong figure like Zhu Hongwu, even if he falls in love, in the face of strength and power it is completely insignificant."

After sighing about it for a moment Lin Feng thought of his main goal: "Then what about that son of Meng Bingyun's?"

The little taotie shook her head: "I've only heard that Meng Bingyun had a son with Zhu Hongwu, I think his name is Zhu Yi? Strange name..."

"Like Meng Bingyun his situation is also very bad, things are probably even worse after Meng Bingyun's death. Although I don't know about the details and don't know if he's alive or dead right now."

Lin Feng slightly frowned: "Looks like I need to get to the Zhou Dynasty as soon as possible."

After reinforcing the Heaven Cage Sigil Lin Feng's consciousness

retreated from the ring. Even though he wants to immediately leave and go towards the Zhou Dynasty to search for Zhu Yi, there are still problems at hand that need to be solved. Such as the fire energy that invaded Lin Feng's body that he's been using his own mana to suppress the entire time.

“The lottery draw this time has to be good.” Lin Feng silently prayed, his consciousness entering into the lottery system.

Chapter 27: Hidden Benefit

The third time engaging in a lottery draw, Lin Feng's primary goal is a fire class dao technique, his second goal is an item that can resolve the remaining fire energy in his body,

A portion of the fire energy devoured and then spit out by the taotie remains in Lin Feng's body, causing his entire body to feel hot and his internal organs to feel as if they are on fire.

Even though he can resolve it using his own mana, he'll undoubtedly need to suffer for a longer period of time.

In practising a fire class dao technique, not only can he resolve this fire energy, he can instead use this energy to increase his own level.

As always, Lin Feng first looked at the possible rewards listed out by the wheel and dice system.

The dice system has a medicinal ingredient called Crimson Pearl Frost Pellet, it can effectively cure the damage caused by the fire mana.

The wheel system on the other hand has two fire class dao techniques, one Scorching Sun Battle Qi and one incomplete [Art of Acala](#).

Lin Feng pondered for a moment, not speaking of whether or not

he'll definitely get the Crimson Pearl Frost Pellet, even if he gets it he'll only be able to settle his own injuries and won't be able to resolve his urgent need for a fire class dao technique.

“Let's go with the wheel system.” Lin Feng made his decision, with two targets to shoot for the success rate is also a lot higher.

Of the dao techniques, relatively speaking Scorching Sun Battle Qi is more low-end and can cultivate Scorching Sun Fire.

Scorching Sun Fire can only be considered so-so, but it is the foundation of one of the seven great absolute flames, Absolute Solar Flame. If cultivators who have cultivated Scorching Sun Fire can obtain the Art of the Rising Sun then they can cultivate Absolute Oriana Fire. (TL: Oriana according to my google research is a name that means rising sun/sunrise in Latin.)

If those who have cultivated Absolute Oriana Fire can learn the Absolute Solar Flame Technique then they'll be able to cultivate the Absolute Solar Flame of the seven great absolute flames.

Even though it's very troublesome, at least it has room for improvement.

The other dao technique the Art of Acala is different, it can cultivate Fury Acala Fire. Its power is second only to the seven great absolute flames and is moreover above the Absolute Oriana Flame. Compared to the Scorching Sun Fire it is especially countless levels higher.

Originally at the current system's level it's unable to give out the Art of Acala, but because it's an incomplete fragment with just the first half it was able to randomly appear.

But facing these two dao techniques Lin Feng fell into a struggle.

Because based on the explanation, this Art of Acala is precisely one of the secret dao techniques of the past buddhist holy land the Great Thunder Monastery. Even in the Great Thunder Monastery that kind of holy land it was a highly-ranked top-notch dao technique, since the fall of the Great Thunder Monastery it's virtually been lost.

In the past it was too famous, now if he uses it after practising it, it'll be recognised by people with a glance.

Next up he's going to bring Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian to head towards the imperial capital of the Great Zhou Dynasty Tianjing City, at the time it was precisely the Great Zhou Dynasty that lead the siege against the Great Thunder Monastery. If their whereabouts are exposed will they be seen as survivors of the monastery and hunted?

This isn't a joke, to this day the Great Zhou Dynasty still forbids Buddhist activity within its borders, carrying out brutal hunts against monks who escaped after the fall of the Great Thunder Monastery.

The same line, with a main character like Xiao Yan, once he leaves Wuzhou City this novice village there will immediately be

countless enemies screaming and rushing towards him, completely unavoidable.

If he obtains the Art of Acala and passes it on to Xiao Yan, once he fights within the borders of the Great Zhou Dynasty and reveals it, Ling Feng and co. will immediately fall into trouble.

After thinking carefully Ling Feng felt that he should aim for the Scorching Sun Battle Qi. Even though currently its level is a bit low, it wins in having no future troubles.

For the moment he owes Xiao Yan a bit, all he can do is make up for it in the future and think of a way to get the Art of the Rising Sun and the Absolute Solar Flame Technique, that way it won't delay him.

The reason that he said to set the Scorching Sun Battle Qi as his target is because Lin Feng has a guess about the wheel system.

The spinning of the wheel follows Lin Feng's thoughts, it starts to spin when he wants it to spin.

This is different from a real, physical wheel. With a real wheel people use their hands to spin it, the amount of strength used will directly influence the spinning of the wheel.

This virtual wheel system, will its rotation have a set pattern?

Lin Feng stared at the wheel. Based on the experience last time of

getting the spirit calming grass, the wheel will rotate approximately three and a half times. If this pattern is fixed then the Scorching Sun Battle Qi is in the number '9' grid. Like this he should start spinning from number "18" or "1" this time.

Lin Feng chose "18", silently praying in his heart: "Come on!" The mystery chest may be nice but right now he doesn't want it, who knows if it'll give out what he needs the most right now.

After Lin Feng gave the confirmation in his heart, the wheel started to rapidly spin.

"One round, two rounds... Three!" Lin Feng closely stared at it, silently praying: "Half a circle, half a circle... Half a circle! Shit, stop!"

What made Lin Feng disappointed is that after the wheel spun around half a circle, it did not stop on the number 9 grid of the Scorching Sun Battle Qi but instead moved another four grids forwards and then slowly stopped.

The thirteenth grid... the Art of Acala!

Lin Feng already knew what it was without even needing to look. Before spinning the wheel he'd already observed everything. Right now he had a wry smile on his face: "System, are you purposely screwing with me?"

"Lottery finished." Following the mechanical system notification

sound, Lin Feng backed out of the lottery system with a wry smile. Lines of a scripture clearly appeared in his head, it is precisely the contents of the first half of the Art of Acala.

Is the Art of Acala good?

Just looking at it from the level of a dao technique of course it's good. If it were the full version then it would virtually be on the same level as the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique.

Lin Feng shook his head: "So be it, in any case it's also a pretty good dao technique. It's just who knows when I'll be able to get the lower half." He made up his mind, after leaving Wuzhou City he has to keep a close eye on Xiao Yan.

If something really does happen then he'll simply do what needs to be done. He absolutely will not allow this information to leak out, Lin Feng doesn't want to be wanted and hunted after just entering into the Great Zhou Dynasty.

Lin Feng started to circulate his mana according to the essentials of the Art of Acala, attempting to channel the fire energy in his body.

After just starting Lin Feng suddenly felt that something was wrong. His pure thunder mana that originates from the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique was actually rapidly being converted in his meridian points, turning into fiery flames.

The seven meridian points that he'd already unlocked were currently filled by blazing, pure fire mana.

Lin Feng's eyes flashed: "This feeling, it's practically like I was practising the Art of Acala from the very beginning and thus advanced to qi disciple level 7.

While thinking Lin Feng used the Art of Acala, using the blazing fire mana in his meridian points to channel the fire energy that had invaded his body.

This fire energy had been suppressed by Lin Feng's thunder mana the whole time. Even though it can't do anything big, it has always been strongly fighting back without any signs of yielding, stubbornly resisting until the end.

But right now coming in contact with the fire mana cultivated from the Art of Acala, it was immediately like a wanderer away from home who had suddenly seen his family, joyfully mixing within.

In an instant the fire mana in Lin Feng's body surged, unexpectedly rushing towards Lin Feng's not yet unlocked eighth meridian point.

"Boom!"

In the roaring sound, the fierce fire mana directly charged open the eighth meridian point like an explosive, twisting and spiraling

within it.

Lin Feng was pleasantly surprised, just like this he actually accidentally got to qi disciple level 8.

What made him even more pleasantly surprised is that with a single thought, the originally blazing fire mana instantly released the crackling sounds of an electric current, turning back into thunder class mana.

The thunder mana in his eighth meridian point did not have any discomfort, just as if Lin Feng had originally opened up the eighth meridian point using thunder class mana and thus advanced from qi disciple level 7 to qi disciple level 8.

Lin Feng was extremely excited: “Just like how people can’t see through my level, this can also be considered a hidden benefit of the system, right? I can freely change my core dao technique, regardless of what dao technique I learn the level of my mana can instantly be upgraded to my current level.

In the cultivating world there is no shortage of cultivators who practise multiple dao techniques together, but those are usually great cultivators at a very high stage who practise other dao techniques together to break through the bottleneck that they’ve reached. They hope to achieve the effect of comprehending by analogy and improving themselves.

As for lower levelled cultivators, there is not even enough time to practise one dao technique. If they go and practise multiple dao

techniques together, the final result will be that they are unable to comprehend the true profundities of any of them.

Not to mention a lot of the different kinds of mana cultivated from different dao techniques are incompatible, some even restrain each other like fire and water. After practising it not only are there no benefits, it will instead also affect one's cultivation.

Even great primordial spirit stage cultivators all have their own core dao technique. It is the basis of all cultivation, even if they practise other dao techniques they only have a supporting role.

But now no matter how many different dao techniques Lin Feng practises he will be able flexibly and freely switch between them. For his cultivation this has many benefits.

Not speaking of hiding his strength and identity thus causing the opponent to be unable to grasp his background, just in terms of cultivating speed Lin Feng has gained a big advantage.

For example today, originally relying upon the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique Lin Feng would not have advanced to qi disciple level 8 so soon. But because of special reasons this time his body accumulated a lot of fire energy, and so relying on the fire class dao technique the Art of Acala he used this outside spiritual energy that he'd assimilated to advance to qi disciple level 8 in one go.

Feeling the abundant mana in his body Lin Feng was full of delight, even the mixed feelings he had from getting the Art of

Acala before became a lot weaker.

He returned to Xiao Yan and Yan Mingyue's location. Yan Mingyue had already finished teaching the ability of Red Lotus Burst and Xiao Yan was in the middle of lowering his head and making his own understandings.

Yan Mingyue saw Lin Feng walking over, a light flashing by in her eyes: "Fellow Daoist Lin seems to have encountered a joyous event?"

Chapter 28: Senior And Junior

In the gentle breeze Yan Mingyue's green gown flew in the wind, like a faerie descended to the mortal realm, isolated in the world.

She lightly laughed saying: "Fellow Daoist Lin seems to have come across a joyous event?"

Lin Feng laughed lightly, his gaze sweeping towards Xiao Yan. As if nothing had happened he said: "Naturally it is a joyous event gaining such an amazing disciple."

Yan Mingyue smiled faintly, not saying anything else.

Xiao Yan who was originally indulged in comprehending the ability of Red Lotus Burst also returned to his senses at this time, his gaze looking at Lin Feng filled with earnest.

Lin Feng nodded his head, gradually retracting his smile and saying seriously: "Even though in this three year's time your level did not make the slightest advancements, you never gave up and instead practised unremittingly. This is very good and very rare."

Being able to be a main character he naturally possesses something special, Xiao Yan's will of 9 is definitely not a joke.

What is will, it is mind and spirit.

The Heaven Primal world has more than hundreds of millions of beings, there are actually a lot of prodigies with outstanding talent and comprehension, but only a few are able to truly make some achievements. What decides how far they can go in the future and to what degree they can exert their outstanding talent is their will.

Those with a strong will naturally will go further than those with the same talent.

Lin Feng stared at Xiao Yan, slowly saying: “It is precisely because you’ve persevered this entire time that your foundation is more solid than regular people and you’ve accumulated a deep enough understanding, thus in the future when you advance to higher stages you will have fewer bottlenecks. It appears as though you’ve wasted three years, but in the future you will discover that you can very easily make up for these three years.

Xiao Yan was a bit stunned. He really didn’t know that these nightmarish three years could bring about something good.

“Then when will you teach me dao techniques?” Turning his eyes Xiao Yan placed his sights on the most important thing.

Yan Mingyue at the side suddenly interrupted saying: “Fellow Daoist Lin, I see that little disciple of yours seems to be practising a thunder class dao technique.”

Hearing this Xiao Yan was surprised. Before when he was learning Red Lotus Burst Yan Mingyue told him that he is more suited to practising fire class dao techniques. If master only knows

thunder class dao techniques then no matter how profound and powerful the dao technique is, for him there will always be a slight feeling of regret.

Lin Feng smiled faintly: “This little guy is suited to practise thunder class dao techniques, thus I taught him a thunder class dao technique. As a teacher one must teach students in accordance to their aptitude.”

What this means is that he knows more than just one dao technique and naturally has a suitable dao technique to teach to Xiao Yan.

Hearing this Xiao Yan instantly relaxed.

In her heart she had a new evaluation towards Lin Feng's strength. Yan Mingyue also smiled and nodded her head, not saying anything more.

Your average wandering cultivators are all people who have obtained the legacies of great ancient cultivators by chance and thus stepped upon the path of cultivation. Being able to obtain one dao technique is already great fortune.

If Lin Feng possesses different dao techniques and they are all comparatively profound dao techniques, then Lin Feng's strength cannot be measured by the standards of regular wandering cultivators.

Right now Yan Mingyue even suspects if Lin Feng is a hermit cultivator from some big sect who suddenly entered into the world?

On the other hand, at this moment Xiao Yan secretly glanced at Xiao Budian. Thinking of something he instantly pulled a long face.

Lin Feng knew what he was thinking by looking at his expression. He couldn't help but laugh in his heart while on the surface he said towards him with a straight face: "From today onwards you are my eldest disciple, temporarily taking the position of the head disciple. As the eldest disciple, when I take in new disciples in the future you must act as an example for them."

Xiao Yan was dazed, his gaze floating towards Xiao Budian and seeing Xiao Budian looking at him with a grin.

Lin Feng disregarded Xiao Yan's little actions, patting Xiao Budian's noggin and continuing to say: "This is your junior, Shi Tianhao, as the senior take good care of him."

Xiao Yan promptly nodded his head, his little head like a chick pecking at rice and rejoicing in his heart. Just now he thought he would have to call this little guy senior and he felt really awkward. He had no idea that he was actually the head disciple.

In the future the disciples that Lin Feng takes in will all have to call him senior, Xiao Yan was delighted in his heart.

Xiao Budian walked forward, lifting up his youthful, little face and saluting scrupulously: “Greetings eldest apprentice brother.” He’s clearly just a little guy but he just has to act old and mature, no matter how you look at him he’s cute.

Xiao Yan was also amused by him: “Don’t worry, if there’s anything in the future come find me, I’ll cover...” Speaking up to here he abruptly stopped. At this time Xiao Yan suddenly remembered that this cute looking little guy before him is actually a true to god qi disciple level 4 cultivator.

A qi disciple level 4 cultivator not even four years of age...

Thinking here Xiao Yan’s forehead instantly started to sweat. Right now his level is only at qi disciple level 1, compared to this junior he’s a lot further behind, who knows who’ll be covering who.

Xiao Yan lifted his eyes looking at Lin Feng, seeing that Lin Feng was also staring at him, his gaze harboring motivational spur and also testing.

“Rest assured master, I will definitely put in double the effort in training.” Xiao Yan was instantly inspired, quieting down and saying seriously.

Are you kidding, as the eldest disciple his level isn’t even as high as his junior, what kind of joke is that?

Lin Feng nodded his head in satisfaction: “I’m not just joking about telling you to take care of your junior. Even regular mundane families know that older brothers should take care of their younger siblings. In the future when your juniors are in trouble you’ll have to stand up for them as the eldest apprentice brother.”

“If you get beat by other youngsters then fight back yourselves, don’t be like a child who hasn’t grown up and come crying to me. I don’t have such good-for-nothing disciples.”

“Don’t be afraid if you beat the young one and the old one comes out. At that time master will stand up for you guys.”

Xiao Budian at the side also shouted saying: “Yeah master, I will also go help eldest apprentice brother!”

Lin Feng couldn’t help laughing, poking his little head: “You just desire to stir up disaster.” He turned his head saying to Xiao Yan: “Go back and prepare, make your arrangements at home. We leave Wuzhou in three days.”

“In these three days you can also come to the lakeside at any time. I will teach you dao techniques.” Lin Feng glanced at Yan Mingyue: “In addition collect the other ingredients Fellow Daoist Yan requires to make the soul anchoring pill.”

Xiao Yan nodded his head saying yes. Yan Mingyue at the side smiled faintly and said: “Thank you for the trouble. I’ll also wait at this lakeside for these three days.” Xiao Yan has already taken Lin

Feng as his master, naturally she cannot move around with Xiao Yan anymore.

After Xiao Yan left Lin Feng and Yan Mingyue stood face to face, for a moment they were both silent.

Xiao Budian also did not make a sound, just quietly standing at Lin Feng's side. He may be playful but he is far more intelligent than children of the same age. He can sense that the atmosphere between his master and that beautiful big sister is quite strange.

After a long silence Lin Feng spoke out first: "What plans does Fellow Daoist Yan have for the future?"

He already knows from the little taotie that this green-gowned beauty before him is not a regular disciple of the Void Temple. She is the new Daoist Wayfarer after Meng Bingyun, namely the new Void Temple Holy Maiden as the outside world is used to saying.

After going down together with Long Ye 10 years ago, Yan Mingyue was forced to take shelter in this ring to recuperate. Towards the outside world Yan Mingyue is in a MIA status where her life and death is unknown.

Without doubt, the Void Temple's Holy Maiden going missing is like an earthquake for the entire Heaven Primal world.

The previous and later Daoist Wayfarer both had a bad fate, in terms of prestige the Void Temple also took a relatively big hit. To

recover and cope with it the Void Temple will most likely push out a new Daoist Wayfarer very quickly.

The Void Temple will put even more focus on training this new person, they will even bestow upon him/her some authority and resources not even his/her predecessor had.

With Yan Mingyue's intelligence how could she not have thought of all this? But she was still completely indifferent on the appearance, lightly saying with a smile: "I ask Fellow Daoist Lin to point out to me, where did you meet Long Ye before? After I stabilize my spirit I will go look for her first."

Lin Feng was slightly stunned. You two have so much hatred, did she steal your man?

Yan Mingyue smiled faintly, saying openly: "She has something in her hands that regardless of me or my sect have to try and get back."

Chapter 29: Farewell

“She has something in her hands that regardless of me or my sect have to try and get back.”

Yan Mingyue’s voice was calm but Lin Feng knows that the item in Long Ye’s hands is definitely not ordinary.

Now he also knows why Yan Mingyue is not worried about her circumstances after returning to her sect, and understands why Yan Mingyue is in a rush to go find Long Ye.

If she can successfully take back that item from Long Ye then when she returns to her sect in the future, nobody will dare to neglect her.

Understanding this Lin Feng gave a crisp response: “Where that Long Ye is right now I do not know. I just met this demon a month ago in the Boundless Mountains northeast of Wuzhou City.”

Lin Feng said in his heart, let these two archrivals keep fighting. With Yan Mingyue getting into action no matter how good that female demon’s memory is she won’t be able to remember to come looking for him, right?

He rubbed Xiao Budian’s head saying: “That is a little village in the mountains, the demon inhabited an old peach tree and suddenly woke up, endangering the lives of the villagers. I just happened to pass by and dispelled her evil ways, also saving this little guy.”

Lin Feng asked Yan Mingyue: “What is this Long Ye’s true form? I see that she is not a regular tree demon.”

Yan Mingyue lightly sighed: “Thou art correct. That peach tree is simply a place of shelter she found while injured. Her original body was slain by me 10 years, it is spiritual plant of the world, a Jade Tree of Knowledge.

Lin Feng’s heart skipped a beat.

All beings have a spirit, even plants and rocks can become demons, but the difficulty is a lot greater compared to your average beasts and demonkin. Although once plant demons achieve success in cultivation their vitality and mana are both incredibly powerful.

The cultivating potential of plant demons is directly related to their plant type, the highest-tier plants among them are the four great divine trees of the world.

They are the Sacred Phoenix Tree, the Shorea Sago Tree, the Ginseng Fruit Tree and... the Jade Tree of Knowledge!

Lin Feng never thought that that Long Ye who’s keeping her mind on him is actually a Jade Tree of Knowledge demon. Amongst the human race, this kind of base talent is definitely on the same level as Xiao Budian. No wonder she can be Yan Mingyue’s archrival.

Lin Feng's pressure is as big as a mountain from being remembered by such a great demon. On the surface he was indifferent, nodding his head: "No wonder she could still cause trouble and do evil under that kind of condition of having lost her original body with just her spirit remaining. At the time I did not know her background or else I would've have eliminated her while I was at it."

Yan Mingyue nodded her head: "Long Ye is the direct disciple of the demon clan's great saint Tian Mei. She practises the demon clan's supreme dao technique the "Heavenly Path Demon Scripture". I've fought many times against her in the past, ending in a draw each time. If we fought to the death it would be a result where we both perish together."

Speaking here Yan Mingyue lightly smiled: "I need to thank you. Long Ye was gravely wounded by you causing her 10 years of recovery to virtually be in vain. But I have obtained the aid of the spirit calming grass and have hope of taking my recovery a step further. With this difference I have a greater chance of victory when I go looking for her."

Lin Feng answered indifferently: "Unintentional acts, I do not dare to take the credit." Yet in his heart he said: "That's right, you hurry up and go settle things with her."

In the following three days, Lin Feng quietly waited at the lakeside with Xiao Budian and Yan Mingyue.

In the big fight with the Blaze Sword Sect before, even though it created a big commotion, it looks like Xiao Zhener has already used

some unknown method to persuade the Xiao family. Not only has the entire Xiao family maintained silence, the old clan leader even personally went to the mayor's mansion and stayed there for half a day.

After the old clan leader visited him the mayor came out and took everything under control. The forces ready to make a move all ceased action.

Wuzhou regained its peace, nobody came to the lakeside to investigate and in this period of time the area around the little lake north of the city became a restricted area.

Xiao Zhener did not reveal Xiao Yan, in these few days the black-clothed youth was as usual. Nobody realized that the phenomenon at the lakeside was related to him. Moreover nobody could have guessed that an earthshaking change had already occurred to this youth's fate.

In these three days Xiao Yan was so busy that his feet practically never touched the ground. Searching for medicine, packing up, and he also has to go to the lakeside to learn dao techniques from Lin Feng. He already couldn't wait to get stronger.

Lin Feng did not avoid Yan Mingyue, directly passing on to Xiao Yan the Art of Acala.

After just learning the Art of Acala Xiao Yan already realized the extraordinariness of this dao technique, it is far superior to the Xiao family dao technique he practises. His spirit being roused, he

put all of his heart into training.

An extra hint of inquiry was contained in Yan Mingyue's gaze looking at Lin Feng. With her knowledge she saw through the origins of the Art of Acala with one glance, in her heart she felt that Lin Feng was becoming increasingly mysterious: "He clearly dresses as a daoist but why does he know the secret dao technique of the Great Thunder Monastery?"

"Is it that he himself is a monk who escaped from Great Thunder Monastery and is now dressing as a daoist to fool people? Or did he happen to obtain a dao technique that spread out after the fall of the Great Thunder Monastery?"

Lin Feng turned a blind eye towards Yan Mingyue's probing gaze. Right now he is looking at his two disciples eating cultivation pills like eating candy and feeling heartbroken: "Slow down you two spendthrifts, slow down! If you guys continue eating like this master will go bankrupt soon."

To quickly increase the levels of his two disciples and also to quickly increase his own strength, Lin Feng used all of the 500 trading points rewarded from the system after taking in Xiao Yan as his disciple to exchange for all kinds of medicines and panaceas that give a boost in cultivation.

The result is that these two little twerps really didn't hesitate, opening their mouths and eating like crazy, causing Lin Feng to feel in pain.

But eating like this naturally has its effects. The foundation that Xiao Yan painfully built-up for the past three years finally paid-off and revealed its power.

Without Yan Mingyue and the taotie dragging him down, with the Art of Acala matched with massive amounts of cultivation pills Xiao Yan directly charged open a meridian point and advanced to qi disciple level 2 in his first day of training!

In three day's time Xiao Yan had already arrived at the peak of qi disciple level 2. All he has to do is open up the barrier sealing the third meridian point and he will be at qi disciple level 3.

Sure enough, after the marriage-annulment this kid's aura of hegemony surged forward and roared like the Yellow River flooding over, completely unstoppable.

This kind of cultivation speed made Lin Feng look at the sky in speechlessness: "Coach, I'd also like a marriage-annulment..."

Not only him, Yan Mingyue and Xiao Budian were also shocked by this visible training speed of Xiao Yan's.

Not sure whether or not she sensed that turbulent aura of hegemony of Xiao Yan's, Yan Mingyue lightly sighed: "Fellow Daoist Lin has good eyesight, Mingyue even feels a bit regretful right now."

Lin Feng let out a long laugh: "You flatter me Fellow Daoist Yan."

He looked at Xiao Yan saying: “Go say goodbye to your little friend, we’re leaving now.”

Xiao Yan nodded his head, walking to the front of Xiao Zhener at the side. The little girl’s eyes harbored deep affection and sadness.

Xiao Zhener did not say anything, extending her delicate, white little hands and like usual, seriously straightening that slightly wrinkled shirt of Xiao Yan’s.

Seeing Zhener straightening his shirt like a little wife, Xiao Yan felt a bit restless. In silence his breathing gradually became rushed, a hint of passion rising up in his eyes.

Originally Xiao Zhener was completely wrapped up in sadness, but lifting up her head and noticing Xiao Yan’s gaze her face couldn’t help but become slightly flushed: “Wh... What are you looking at?”

Xiao Yan woke up, seeing the gentle and elegant girl before him the youth’s expression became extremely serious: “I will definitely come back to see you.”

A layer of moisture was cast over Xiao Zhener’s eyes, she said with a smile: “I’ll wait for Xiao ge-ge to come back and take back the glory that belongs to you.”

Lin Feng secretly exclaimed at the side, the boy comes riding on a bamboo horse, trotting in circles around the bed and throwing

green plums. (TL: Part of a poem by Li Bai called [A Poem/Song of Changgan](#) that speaks of childhood sweethearts and innocent love.)

Childhood sweethearts, a love of the purest kind.

He looked at Yan Mingyue beside him: “Fellow Daoist Yan, we say goodbye here, I wish you smooth sailings on your trip.”

Right now Yan Mingyue has already used the soul anchoring pill, beautifully standing on the ground her aura was concentrated. She looks no different from a real person.

A complex look flashed by in that pair of eyes like the moonlight. Yan Mingyue smiled tranquilly: “Take care too Fellow Daoist Lin.”

Lin Feng nodded his head, bringing along Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian and hitting the road. Facing the warm morning sun and looking at his two disciples behind him, Lin Feng was a bit high-spirited: “Zhu Yi, wait for master you kid, master is coming!”

Thousands of miles away from Wuzhou, a group of red-clothed people were gathered together, all of them looking depressed.

“Bam!”

A red-clothed youth was sent flying away with a slap, nobody felt

sympathy towards him, instead they all had an expression of satisfaction seeing him get hit.

Zhang Nan had an expression of anguish but he did not dare to speak. Because the person hitting him is precisely the aurous core stage cultivator Elder Li.

At this time the red-haired old man finally caught his breath, but his wounds were very serious. He was already panting heavily from this bit of movement.

He stared at Zhang Nan saying angrily: “The reason I hit you is not because you recommended that whelp with outstanding talent, but because you did not grasp hold of the other party’s background, do you understand?”

One of the foundation establishment stage cultivators asked after hesitating: “Martial uncle, do we still want to...”

A hint of fear flickered in Elder Li’s eyes but was then quickly covered by anger: “Of course we can’t just let it go, or else how will we the Blaze Sword Sect continue to establish ourselves? We must have our vengeance!”

“Oh? What vengeance does your sect have, why don’t you tell me? The Nine Heaven Sword Alliance acts as one, I don’t mind giving a small helping hand.”

The sound of light laughter rose up in the air. The faces of the

group of Blaze Sword Sect cultivators all changed colours. The other party is already close at hand and yet they were completely unaware.

Elder Li suddenly turned his head. What appeared in his vision was youth clothed in snow-white garbs wearing a green bamboo hat. He was laughing leisurely but that completely undisguised mana fluctuation told everybody there that this is an aurous core stage cultivator.

The youth's expression was natural. Don't mention that Elder Li is currently seriously injured, even if the old geezer was in top condition he still wouldn't care.

Because his sword is stronger.

The part of him that attracts the most attention is the sword at his waist, on the scabbard is carved a decorous and ancient landscape carving.

That is the sign of the holy land of the way of the sword, the Mt. Shu Sword Sect!

Chapter 30: Marquis Bastard, Awe-Inspiring Righteousness

The Heaven Primal world is vast in territory. Lin Feng used all kinds of methods and still used three months of time, experiencing a long and arduous journey before finally rushing over to the Great Zhou Dynasty's imperial capital, Tianjing.

At this moment Lin Feng deeply felt that his level was honestly too low, valuable time all wasted on travelling.

In this world, a thousand miles in an instant is a small case for high-levelled cultivators.

Of course, when with his two disciples it's obviously a different explanation, euphemistically it's to let the two people experience more training.

Although Lin Feng did not just waste these three months, besides travelling he also trained seriously.

After fighting with the Blaze Sword Sect's Elder Li, Lin Feng had a deep sense of danger. For the current him, auras core stage cultivators are giant-like existences. One of their leg hairs is even thicker than his waist.

Last time he was only able to repel Elder Li by using the taotie and thus successfully pretending to be a boss. But that was simply skillful manipulation, he was only able to succeed because

everything was in his favor.

But after that attack of Elder Li's the taotie has become very weakened. Using the little loli's own words it's: "Even more serious than the injury three years ago." Right now wanting to use the little taotie again to withstand the attack of an aurous core stage cultivator is entirely a pipe dream.

Without the little taotie, don't mention aurous core stage cultivators, even foundation establishment stage cultivators are enough to give Lin Feng a run for his money. If he doesn't succeed in ambushing them then he has no chance of victory in a head-on fight.

Thus right now besides travelling, the rest of Lin Feng's time is all spent on practising dao techniques. To increase his level as quickly as possible he reluctantly absorbed another portion of the thunder energy within the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade.

Right now there is already very little spiritual energy remaining in the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade. If he uses it to sustain the Northern Aurora Sword to release Northern Aurora Mystic Light then it is only enough for two shots.

Although hard work always pays off, on the road Lin Feng advanced to qi disciple level 9 and when they finally arrived at the Zhou Dynasty's capital Tianjing City, Lin Feng went another step forward and opened the tenth meridian point of the 12 levels, successfully advancing to qi disciple level 10.

Lin Feng was actually pretty satisfied towards his cultivation speed. Even though the novice gift let him directly jump up to qi disciple level 4, advancing to qi disciple level 10 in a mere half-a-year's time is still an amazing feat in the entire Heaven Primal world.

Although, against his two prodigious disciples Lin Feng's pressure was still very big.

Xiao Budian is a no brainer, advancing from qi disciple level 4 to qi disciple level 7. At the very most the little guy is still a month away before turning 4.

Reaching qi disciple level 7 at four years of age, it's enough to make countless cultivators of the present and past die of embarrassment.

As for Xiao Yan, he really is about to rise up. In the past he once cultivated up to the great circle of perfection of qi disciple level 12. Training back up from the beginning he has quite the familiar feeling.

Just like Lin Feng said, with a strong enough foundation there will be less bottlenecks when re-starting. For other people, the level-blocks that they fear are easy as pie for Xiao Yan.

When they reached Tianjing City Xiao Yan had already reached qi disciple level 6. His monstrous cultivation speed was not at all inferior to Xiao Budian's.

The current Xiao Yan is high-spirited and working vigorously, completely rid of the cold and depressed aura of the past.

The only thing making the black-clothed youth distressed is that the task of milk dad has fallen upon his head while Lin Feng is enjoying life.

Entering into Tianjing City, Lin Feng didn't stop to appreciate the bustling scene within, heading straight towards his destination, the House of the Marquis of Xuanji,

The House of the Marquis of Xuanji is located in the south-east quarters of Tianjing City, covering 100 acres of land on open terrain. Outside of the big vermilion gates is a pair of red painted stone kirins three people tall, containing an imposing grandeur.

Outside of the house stands a row of full spirited, imposing family servants. Completely unlike the servants of other families who chatter while on duty and only think of being lazy, these family servants do not communicate between themselves, all staring sharply and cautiously at the passerbys in front of the house.

What made Lin Feng frown even more is that these family servants are actually all well-practised cultivators, even the worst possess a level of qi disciple level 6.

Cultivators are actually standing here watching the door for someone else, moreover they don't have any hint of embarrassment, on the contrary their working attitude is

extremely serious. Clearly they think that this is a job that does not disgrace them.

The Zhou Dynasty's Grand Preceptor, the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu's power and status is fully displayed in these small details.

Reportedly Zhu Hongwu himself is a great cultivator at an extremely high level, dominating the world with his might. In the siege against the Great Thunder Monastery in the past he stood at the very front and was a main force in the elimination of buddhism.

"Seeing this today it looks like the rumours are not false." Lin Feng frowned. Like this the difficulty of taking in Zhu Yi as his disciple has become increasingly greater.

He even doesn't know Zhu Yi's precise location, the house is not easy to enter. If he can't even see the person then how does he take him in?

First settling down Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian, Lin Feng then wandered over to the vicinity of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji by himself.

There's no use being anxious so Lin Feng simply relaxed his mood, finding a tea house around the house of the Marquis and getting a pot of tea. Looking at the house of the marquis from far away he carefully thought of a plan in his heart.

The waiter put down the tea pot, his eyes turning on Lin Feng's stainless daoist clothes and revealing a smiling face: "If you're talking about great men, people commonly compliment that this person is the avatar of the Star of Knowledge or that person is the avatar of the Star of War. But if you ask me they are all incomparable to the Marquis of Xuanji.

"Not only does the Marquis of Xuanji possess a grand title, he holds the highest position in court, holding the positions of senior grand secretary of Cabinet and teacher of the prince. He is adept with both the pen and the sword, crusading through the world, beheading enemy generals and capturing their flags like strolling in a park." The waiter's saliva was flying everywhere: "After establishing great military achievements at 22 years of age he then abandoned the military and started learning the pen, earning third place in the civil examinations. It's this kind of person that truly deserves a big thumbs up!"

Towards the waiter's thumb right in front of his face Lin Feng smiled faintly, occasionally listening to his cackle, his eyes still staring at the House of the Marquis of Xuanji.

"Discovered target suitable to become host's direct disciple."

Lin Feng was in the middle of drinking tea when he heard the notification sound that suddenly rose up, the tea in his mouth almost spraying onto the waiter's face.

Putting down the tea cup Lin Feng scanned the pedestrian's on the street, his gaze finally locking onto a green-clothed youth. The system's notification sound also unmistakably told him that this

he is the target.

Closely examining him, this green-clothed youth is 15, 16 years of age with a handsome face and a slightly thin body.

He looks entirely like a feeble scholar, but there is a faint awe-inspiring righteousness between his brows, his gaze warm and soft but also possessing a strict integrity, causing the treacherous to not dare to attack him.

The system's voice rose up beside Lin Feng's ears: "Talent system has finished organizing data, target number four's data is as so."

"Bone Root -> 7, Comprehension -> 8, Will -> 9, Blessings-> 10."

"Conclusion: Target's talent is extremely high, recommended to take in as a disciple and carefully guide him, he will definitely become a pillar of the sect."

Lin Feng did not see anything else, his eyes staring straight at that blood red "10" after blessings.

After Xiao Budian he's finally met a second person who possesses a max value for one attribute.

Blessings is one's fate, blessings and karma, basically it's luck.

A blessing of 10, what does that mean?

It means that if he picks up a piece of junk then it'll be an ancient divine artifact, if he takes out an old book there will be peerless technique hiding within, even if he meets a tough and powerful opponent he doesn't need to worry, that is the transportation captain coming to give him treasure and experience... A blessing of 10, even if this guy randomly finds a tree to go to the washroom behind he'll be able to step on a divine herb!

Lin Feng let out long breath: "There's no mistake, it's him!"

Seeing that youth walk into the House of the Marquis of Xuanji he pointed his lips towards him, asking the waiter: "Who's that green-clothed youth?"

The waiter hesitated for a moment. Lin Feng smiled, silently sending over some silver, smiling and saying as if nothing had happened: "He dresses simply and does not seem to have any status within the house of the Marquis, but he has a stern bearing and does not seem like a servant."

"Good eyesight, that person's name is Zhu Yi, he is the bastard of the Marquis. I heard that his birth mother is from a brothel and has already died from sickness a while ago." The waiter bit his teeth, taking the silver and lowering his voice saying: "Although I heard that he's quite knowledgeable and is in the middle of preparing to participate in the civil examinations at the start of spring and the fall. If he really is able to succeed then that could also be considered good fortune. After all, a bastard like him simply doesn't have the right to succeed his father's title and wealth."

While speaking the waiter sighed: “If we’re talking about this Young Master Yi, his personality is pretty good. He’s come to our place before to drink tea, he’s also quite polite, but... But his situation is the house of the Marquis seems to be average.”

“A few days ago he was muttering about moving out of the house, going to the temple on the mountain outside of the city to stay there for a period of time in order to concentrate on studying.”

Listening here Lin Feng’s eyes suddenly lit up.

Not too far behind him, two seemingly ordinary customers heard this remark, looking at each other their eyes also lit up with an unclear light.

Chapter 31: The Power Of Max Luck

Lin Feng does not plan on entering the House of the Marquis of Xuanji,

Not mentioning whether or not the Marquis of Xuanji himself is at home, there won't be a lack of other experts holding down the fort.

Since he already knows that Zhu Yi has thoughts of leaving the house of the Marquis, Lin Feng decided to simply wait patiently.

Sure enough, after 10 days Zhu Yi carried a cloth baggage, heading on-foot towards Spring Mountain outside of Tianjing City.

He's preparing to participate in the imperial examinations and doesn't want to be bullied within the house. So he decided to simply go live on Spring Mountain for a period of time, like this he can also take care of his mother's grave.

Meng Bingyun's grave is right on Spring Mountain all by itself. With the status of concubine she cannot enter into the Zhu family's ancestral hall after death.

Lin Feng waited until Zhu Yi left the house of the Marquis and then silently followed behind him.

Zhu Yi walked all the way to the foot of Spring Mountain. After sweeping Meng Bingyun's grave and burning incense he took

residence in a little temple not far away from the foot of the mountain.

Lin Feng had already ascertained that this temple is a run-down buddhist temple. Inside the temple is only a regular old monk taking watch. Every year Zhu Yi will live here for a bit, one to take care of his mother's grave, two for the peace.

After giving the old monk some incense money Zhu Yi rested in the side hall. Opening his bag and lighting some candles he prepared to start studying.

Stroking the book in his hands Zhu Yi muttered: "Whether or not I can rectify my dead mother's name depends on the spring's civil examination and the fall's imperial examination. First I'll get juren and then I'll get jinshi. When one successfully passes the examinations their next three generations will also gain titles... The court will send a decree to confer the title of Lady upon my mother, then mother's grave will be able to be led into the Zhu family's ancestral grave. her spirit tablet can also be placed in the ancestral hall for oblation. (TL: Search imperial examination if you want to know more about juren and jinshi. Just think of them as your masters and doctorate degree.)

"Too bad I can't practise martial arts and cultivate. Even though it's civil officials who control the court of the Great Zhou Dynasty, to truly gain a title of nobility one must depend on military exploits. If I became a cultivator and then went into the army then I would have a high status. Then if I established a military achievement and obtained a title, my mother's title wouldn't only be Lady, she would also have a noble ranking... Her status would

be far higher than that Lady Shao.”

Thinking of Lady Shao (aka. the Marquis of Xuanji’s main wife) made Zhu Yi think of his mother who died an early death, his eyes revealing sentiments of sadness and resentment.

Lin Feng silently stood outside of the temple, the corners of his lips revealing an interesting smile.

Going to the backroom first and knocking out the old monk to prevent him from leaking out information, Lin Feng then checked the surrounding environment. After confirming that there were no problems Lin Feng openly sat cross-legged on a rock in front of the temple.

Lin Feng circulated the Nine Heaven Thunder Technique at full power, purposely releasing the mana circulating in his body out from his nerve points.

This action of his is actually completely contradictory to normal cultivation. Cultivation is about channeling the spiritual energy of the world into the body and refining it, yet Lin Feng’s way of letting the energy spill out of his body means that he’s wasting it all.

Although, from the appearance that’s a completely different story.

The current Lin Feng is encircled by purple energy, occasionally

electric sparks can be seen flashing in the air. Under the effect of the electric current all of his hair is slightly floating upwards.

The crackling sound of electric currents sounded non-stop and there was even the faint sound of thunder echoing in the mountains.

With your average qi disciple level 10 cultivator, even if they released their own energy outside of their body it wouldn't create such a big commotion.

Thank you system, thank you novice gift, thank you Nine Heaven Thunder Technique for such amazing visual and sound effects.

And then matched with Lin Feng's clothing of a white, wide-sleeved robe and daoist crown, his appearance is completely perfect, definitely the model of a master sage.

The sound of weak footsteps came from behind him. Just hearing them one knows that it's someone who's never cultivated before, but they are steady and firm. Lin Feng knew it was Zhu Yi, hearing the green-clothed youth noticeably soften his breathing Lin Feng smiled in his heart: "He's here."

Lin Feng suddenly stopped his mana but did not turn around, saying lightly: "If you want to watch then why not come out and watch openly?"

The sound of breathing behind him slightly paused but then very

quickly became calm. The sound of footsteps rose up and stopped not far away behind Lin Feng. A neither humble nor overbearing voice said: "I did not have any intention of spying, If there was anything that offended you I ask for your forgiveness." Sure enough it was Zhu Yi's voice.

Lin Feng suddenly asked: "Are you afraid?"

Zhu Yi was silent for a moment and then he spoke in a clear voice: "The books of the saints say that righteousness and intelligence are the key to understanding the world. As long as scholars have an upright, disciplined heart and possess strong and pure intentions they need not fear the evil."

He paused for a moment and then continued saying: "Even though evil spirits all know witchcraft of shapeshifting and deception, evil spirits are all formed by intangible thoughts. Even if they are powerful enough to manifest themselves they are nothing but cold blobs, they won't have the feeling of a flesh and bone body."

Zhu Yi's voice became increasingly more calm, his thinking also became increasingly clearer: "Not to mention lightning is the most extreme yang energy essence of the nine heavens and is the bane of yin spirits. You are able to manipulate lightning and possess a strong body, naturally you are not an evil spirit. Although you are probably not a regular person either, are you an immortal or swordsman living in the mountains?"

Lin Feng slowly turned around. Looking at Zhu Yi who was speaking with confidence and composure he suddenly revealed a

smile: “You seem to be very knowledgeable about demons and the like. Scholars speak not of the supernatural and violence, you are not a regular scholar.”

Zhu Yi answered openly: “Those are simply bookworms. We scholars harbor righteousness, understand the world, know the supernatural and reach the gods, this is the true nature of things.”

Lin Feng smiled saying: “I didn’t think you’d be so interested in cultivation.”

This time Zhu Yi did not answer at the first moment, his eyes flashing he pondered in his heart: “Could it be that this daoist wishes to take me as his disciple?” He grew up in the house of the Marquis and his mother died early. As a bastard he’s used to seeing the fickleness of human nature and the struggle for power so his vigilance is very high. Seeing Lin Feng appear strangely he had to be careful.

“My father does not allow me to cultivate and I don’t have the money to hire a master to teach me. Now seems to be a chance but who knows what this person’s background is?”

Seeing Zhu Yi hesitate Lin Feng immediately guessed his thoughts, saying in his heart: “Just as I predicted.”

Anyhow I never thought of taking him in as a disciple just like this, guess I’ll stick to the original plan.

Not waiting for Zhu Yi to formulate his response, Lin Feng let out a long laugh: “Too bad everything you know is just based on gossip. How can cultivating be so simple, the people outside of the door naturally cannot understand what’s behind the door.”

“I was simply passing by here, I did not expect to meet an interesting little guy like you. I had a nice time talking to you but I have something to do and am unable to continue chatting with you. Good-bye, maybe we’ll meet again another day.”

Finishing speaking Lin Feng did not wait for Zhu Yi’s reaction, using the ability of Cloud Dragon Escape with lightning suddenly flashing around his body, disappearing from the spot.

Using the flashing lightning as a cover-up, Lin Feng’s body soared and quickly hid into the forest beside the old temple, retracting his aura and hiding his location.

Zhu Yi who was blinded by the lightning slowly regained his vision at this time, blankly staring at the rock in front of him, seemingly not expecting that Lin Feng would actually just up and leave.

Zhu Yi looked around the old temple for a moment. With his senses that have never been trained he naturally cannot discover Lin Feng’s whereabouts.

Returning beside the rock Zhu Yi muttered to himself: “And I thought that daoist had thoughts of taking me as his disciple, turns out I was thinking too much.”

“Wait a sec, is he playing hard to get? But it doesn’t look like it or else he wouldn’t have left without saying anything.”

“That daoist looks young but I wonder what his true age is? Dao techniques, cultivation... If I achieve success in cultivation could I make father admit his mistake and make Lady Shao stoop her head?”

“A person outside the door is unable to understand what’s behind the door... This door, how can I enter it?”

Zhu Yi suddenly let out a surprised sound. Walking over to the rock he bent over to look, picking up a purple crystal from the rock.

Lin Feng laughed silently. The fish has taken the bait, it should be about to bite the hook.

He left the opening chapter of the Nine Heaven Thunder Technique within that purple crystal and did not add any restraints. Zhu Yi may not have cultivated before but as long as he focuses his mind on the crystal he’ll be able to read the words within.

Zhu Yi was playing with the purple crystal when he suddenly smelt a burning smell with his nose. Turning around and heading back to the temple he immediately cried out: “Oh no!”

Turns out when he came out he forgot to close the room door. The winds in the mountain are strong and they blew into the room through the door, actually blowing his book onto the brazier.

Seeing the book already burnt to ashes Zhu Yi felt very upset, but looking closely he discovered that in the brazier there was a piece of paper with a faint dark-gold color within the ashes of the book.

The golden paper is packed with small text and also has illustrations. It seems to be gold but it was not burned by the fire.

“Ksitigarbha Sutra... Thi, this is a buddhist dao technique?” Zhu Yi was greatly shocked and then overjoyed: “Just now I was distressed over how to enter into the door and now a dao technique has appeared before me.”

Outside of the door Lin Feng was dumbfounded, his lower jaw nearly hitting the ground.

“That works too? That book, if I remember correctly he just got that book from the used bookstore before he left the city? Max blessing of 10, a blessing of 10... Hehe, fuck!”

Chapter 32: The Master That Cheats The Disciple

Outside the temple in the night breeze, Lin Feng's expression was uncertain.

The [Ksitigarbha Sutra](#) originates from the same source as the Art of Acala, they are both secret buddhist dharmas of the Great Thunder Monastery of the past.

So-called Ksitigarbha is to be tolerant and still as the earth and silent and deep as a scripture.

The ability cultivated by the Art of Acala is Fury Acala Flames, and with the successful cultivation of the Ksitigarbha Sutra one can obtain the buddhist body of the Gilded Ksitigarbha Body. As long as the buddhist body exists one is unaffected by all tribulations and immune to all laws. It is a very famous buddhist protection technique.

The dao technique that this Zhu Yi obtained is actually a secret buddhist path on the same level as the complete Art of Acala.

Hiding it within an old book could be the arrangements made by monks who escaped after the fall of the Great Thunder Monastery to pass on the dao techniques of buddhism, waiting for a destined person to find it.

In the end nobody discovered it, but Zhu Yi this main character

with a blessing of 10 discovered it on his first day of obtaining the book.

Lin Feng knows that Zhu Yi who has been misfortunate for so many years is about to step upon his unstoppable path of invincibility. His old pops the Marquis of Xuanji may be arrogant right now, but in the future he'll definitely lower his head. If he doesn't give in then he'll just beat him until he does!

“But then what about me?” Lin Feng had a rough expression. Zhu Yi's luck has already started taking a turn. His situation is improving and he especially won't become his disciple.

Zhu Yi who has obtained the Ksitigarbha Sutra thus in turn possesses his own starting capital. It seems like he already doesn't need Lin Feng to teach him dao techniques.

If you want to take this kind of main character as a disciple then you've got to rush to give him a helping hand in his time of need before his luck starts to turn around. Or else if you wait until his aura of hegemony to burst forth you don't know who'll be bowing down to who.

Lin Feng was rapidly thinking in his heart: “What should I do? Should I just use the Art of Acala on my hands and pretend to be a buddhist cultivator, lying to him and saying that it was me who hid the Ksitigarbha Sutra in the old book waiting for him to find it?”

That won't do, Zhu Yi is a very independant person and has very

strong vigilance when interacting with others. If he tries to catch him empty-handed he most likely won't believe him.

After pondering for a moment a warm smile like the sun resurfaced on Lin Feng's face.

“Hehe, this isn't so good, is it a little too mean?”

Looking at Zhu Yi who has already started to be immersed in the training of the dao technique, the smile on Lin Feng's face became increasingly wider: “Zhu Yi my disciple, for you to have a better development in the future your master's got to first make you suffer for a bit. I believe that you will understand my goodwill.”

Making up his mind Lin Feng was no longer anxious. Right now it is night time and Tianjing City's gates have already closed. He can't go back anyways so he might as well just patiently wait here until tomorrow morning.

At the same time he was also paying attention to Zhu Yi's results in practising the Ksitigarbha Sutra.

Reality shows that main characters really aren't a joke. In just a moment's time Zhu Yi could already channel energy into his body, stepping onto the path of cultivation. You have to know that he relied only on himself reading the sutra and understanding the words, he did not have anyone guiding him.

Besides a blessing of 10, a comprehension of 9 is truly

extraordinary.

This strengthened Lin Feng's thoughts of taking him in as a disciple even more. When the sky brightened Lin Feng immediately returned to Tianjing City, arriving at the House of the Marquis of Xuanji and patiently waiting.

Not too long later a group of family servants came out from the backdoor of the house, walking over to a restaurant in the city square not too far away. The ugly looking fatty at the very front was surrounded in the middle by everyone and was clearly the leader among them.

Lin Feng silently laughed. He already found out that this fatty's name is Zhu Jun, he is a servant that the wife of the Marquis of Xuanji Lady Shao brought over from her family. His original name is Shao Jun, he only changed his name to Zhu Jun after following Lady Shao into the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, his nickname is Fatty Zhu.

Fatty Zhu is very loyal towards Lady Shao, to curry favor with Lady Shao he made things quite difficult for Zhu Yi.

This guy looks ugly but he does have some cultivating talent. In these few years training with the guest masters of the house he also reached the level of qi disciple level 8.

Fatty Zhu and co. entered the restaurant, going up to the second floor together and sitting down at the position beside the window with the best scenery.

Looking at them Lin Feng's face revealed a smile, his body hiding into the crown and disappearing.

Not long later an odd story started circulating between the customers of the restaurant: In the old temple on the mountain a green-clothed scholar exhibits strange behaviour, actually able to spit out lightning.”

The news travelled into the ears of Zhu Jun and co., all of them looking at each other.

Coming from the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, Zhu Jun and co. are far more knowledgeable about the cultivating world than regular customers. Lightning is the most violent force in the world. Dao techniques that can absorb thunder energy to cultivate are all top-notch goods. They also know the matter of Zhu Yi studying in the old temple on the mountain. Listening to this, that person is actually Zhu Yi?

One family servant asked uncertainly: “Those mountain people are all hillbillies,, they're just spreading the wrong information, right? How could that Zhu Yi obtain such a powerful dao technique?”

Another person said: “The Marquis once said that he wants Zhu Yi to first learn the classics and knowledge and then they'll talk about the matter of cultivating. He can't even walk yet and he wants to learn how to run? If he really is secretly cultivating then we'll get rid of his cultivation prowess. Who dares to break the

rules of the Marquis?”

The cheeks of Fatty Zhu who hadn't spoken the whole time moved, slowly saying: “Let's go check it out. If Zhu Yi really is secretly cultivating then we'll confiscate his dao technique and then hand him over to the Marquis to deal with him. Don't do anything else unauthorized.”

Everybody's eyes lit up, all of them starting to laugh. If Zhu Yi really does have a top-tier dao technique then they don't dare to keep it for themselves and will definitely turn it over to the Marquis of Xuanji.

But before they turn it in they naturally have the time to make a copy. A top-tier dao technique, no matter what they'll want a slice of the cake.

Zhu Jun also laughed, the fat on his face rippling.

The group of people immediately left the restaurant, rushing towards Spring Mountain outside of the city. But they did not discover that Lin Feng was following behind them the whole time.

Looking at the backs of Zhu Jun and co., the smile on Lin Feng's face became increasingly brighter.

The deuteragonist is already waiting on the stage that he's prepared, now the side characters are also about to step on the stage. The big show that Lin Feng himself wrote, directed and

acted in is about to kick off.

People chosen by the heavens like Zhu Yi with a shining protagonist halo above their heads usually all possess the ability to kill higher level monsters. If the opponent's strength is too weak then that's just giving experience points to Zhu Yi.

But Fatty Zhu and co. are all at the very least a level of qi disciple level 5, level 6, moreover there's Fatty Zhu this qi disciple level 8 holding the line.

Zhu Yi only just came in contact with dao techniques and cultivating, he also doesn't have any experience. No matter how much of a prodigy he is and how OP his luck is, against Fatty Zhu and co. the only thing he's doing is getting beat. Killing higher level monsters also has its limits.

If he gave Zhu Yi some time to train, his level would definitely rise sharply like he was on drugs. But Lin Feng did not give him any time to train his level, immediately pulling a wave of elite monsters to go gang beat him, even main characters can't do anything.

Lin Feng easily followed behind Zhu Jun and co., the script has already been written, now he's just waiting for the actors to make their debuts and perform.

“My good disciple, you are familiar with history, you definitely know the sentence ‘Before the heavens entrust a man with a ponderous task, his mind shall first be fathomed, his flesh wearied

and his skin starved', right? So in a bit when you suffer a bit don't be afraid, master's got your back."

Sure enough, after Fatty Zhu and co. arrive at the temple and found Zhu Yi they immediately launched an attack.

Zhu Yi could also be considered vigilant, hiding the golden paper with the scripture a step ahead. No matter how much Fatty Zhu and co. humiliated him he did not admit anything.

But he didn't guess that Fatty Zhu may have the face of a pig, but his mind is clear. With a skim of his eyes he discovered that the bottom of Zhu Yi's longsleeves were stained with a bit of ashes.

Fatty Zhu kicked over the brazier, pushing lightly the brazier still had the sparks of embers. The golden paper recording the Ksitigarbha Sutra was instantly revealed.

The color of Zhu Yi's face changed.

Fatty Zhu and co. laughed.

Outside the door, Lin Feng who was watching everything also smiled.

Notes:

[1\]](#) TL: Ksitigarbha is the buddhist equivalent of the Chinese bodhisattva, 地藏, di zang, the first word meaning earth and the

second meaning scripture.

Chapter 33: The Child Pays The Debt Of The Parents

Looking at the brazier that landed on the ground and the exposed Kṣitigarbha Sutra, a feeling of despair rose up in Zhu Yi's heart: "Could it be that this is my fate? Why give me hope and then immediately put me into despair?"

"I can't, a gentleman always strives to improve himself, I must not lose heart."

Fatty Zhu picked up the golden paper recording the Kṣitigarbha Sutra, looking at Zhu Yi with a playful expression: "Young Master Yi, what is this?"

Zhu Yi pressed his lips together, his expression already calmed down: "To think that there was something like this in the brazier? I did not discover it before."

Fatty Zhu and co. looked at each other, all of them laughing out loud: "If that's so then we'll take and then turn it in to the Marquis for him to deal with it."

"But Young Master Yi, since you discovered it together with us you'll also have to take a trip with us. Like that we'll be able to verify it in front of the Marquis." Fatty Zhu squinted his tiny eyes, his face filled with a complacent expression.

Zhu Yi calmly nodded his head. No doubt losing the Kṣitigarbha

Sutra makes him depressed, but the most urgent matter at the moment is to get past his old pops the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu.

Zhu Hongwu is very strict with rules. Don't mention Zhu Yi this kind of neglected bastard, even the eldest son who has the rights to inherit his title will lose a layer of skin from Zhu Hongwu's family punishments if he makes a small mistake.

If he lets Zhu Hongwu know that he was secretly practising dao techniques, he might even lose half his life.

Outside of the door Lin Feng smiled faintly. It's time for him to enter the stage. If he waits until Zhu Yi is brought back to the house of the Marquis, he might be grounded by the Marquis of Xuanji and unable to leave the house again. The difficulty then of him taking in Zhu Yi as his disciple under the eyelids of the Marquis of Xuanji is too great.

“Hm? Something's wrong! This is...”

Lin Feng was in the middle of planning things when he suddenly sensed a group of people rushing out from the forest, heading straight towards the old temple.

Lin Feng felt a chill in his heart: “What do they want to do, could their target also be Zhu Yi?”

These people are far superior to Fatty Zhu and co., moving

rapidly and swiftly within the forest, orderly and disciplined like men of the army.

Even worse is that there's a foundation establishment stage cultivator among them!

While thinking Lin Feng first hid himself beforehand, and then he saw this group of people barge straight into the side hall that Zhu Yi is in.

In the side hall, Zhu Yi and co. were all blankly staring at the group of people that barged in. Upon entering the room all of their gazes instantly fell upon Zhu Yi's body.

The leader is a black-clothed man with a scar on his cheek, The man turned around and looked towards two of his comrades behind him. The two people nodded their heads together: "It's this scholar."

Outside of the hall Lin Feng had a major headache, roaring in his heart: "That's why I said what I hate the most is unexpected incidents!"

Even though the other party came abruptly, Zhu Yi could still maintain his composure: "You guys are looking for me? I don't know you guys, who are you people?"

At this time Fatty Zhu also reacted over, saying with a sneer: "Young Master Yi, what trouble have you caused, could it be that

you owe them gambling money? Haha...”

The black-clothed man frowned: “Silence.”

Fatty Zhu’s smile froze on his face, the color of his face turning completely red: “You bastard, do you know...”

Not waiting for him to finish the black-clothed man waved his hand, as if shooing a fly: “Besides this scholar kill all of the Zhou dogs.”

The man’s voice was incredibly calm, only carrying a taste of disgust, as if he really was giving the command to kill a couple of flies.

Fatty Zhu’s expression immediately changed greatly, shouting furiously: “You dare to touch us? We are of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, if you dare to touch even one of my fingers I’ll exterminate your entire family!”

The black-clothed man laughed desolately: “Exterminate my entire family? The old and young of my entire clan died by the hand’s of you Zhou dogs a long time ago.”

He extended his hand stroking the scar on his face, his expression becoming extremely cold in an instant: “The Marquis of Xuanji... Hehe, the Marquis of Xuanji, it’s precisely because we know this kid is the son of Zhu Hongwu that we came. That old dog’s hands are stained with the blood of my countrymen, today we’ll have

him pay some interest first!”

The black-clothed man lifted up the hem of his shirt, revealing the design of a six-cornered snowflake.

“Snowflake... You guys are survivors of Snowgale, you guys from the “Society of the Strong Gale!” Fatty Zhu swallowed his saliva, revealing a very forced smile.

Lin Feng furrowed his brows, he doesn’t know what kind of organization the Society of the Strong Gale is and he’s never heard of it, but he has heard of Snowgale.

Snowgale is a small country in the snowy plains to the north and touches borders with the northern region of the Great Zhou Dynasty. Around ten years ago during the Zhou Dynasty’s time of dominating expansion it was conquered and annexed by the Zhou Dynasty. At the time the one who led the army in the conquest was precisely the Marquis of Xuanji.

The people of the north are agile and brave. Even though their country has fallen, the citizens of Snowgale have not been willing to submit, with all kinds of uprisings rising up one after another. It is one of the few regions that has not been able to return to a stable-state after the subjugation of the Zhou Dynasty.

Looking at it now, this so-called Society of the Strong Gale is also an insurgent group formed by the adherents of the already fallen Snowgale, expressly opposing the Great Zhou Dynasty.

Although who'd've thought that they'd have the balls to infiltrate deep into the heart of the Zhou Dynasty and move about in the environs of the capital, even placing their sights on the Marquis of Xuanji.

Zhu Yi has clearly already understood the relations within, opening his mouth and saying: "I'm just a neglected bastard, if you want to use me as a hostage to threaten my father then there's really no need. Because it won't have any effect, my father will not make any concessions."

"Kill me and my father won't even feel that sad. You guys have found the completely wrong target coming to find me."

The black-clothed man grinned: "Of course I know that you're unpopular with the old dog, or else you wouldn't have landed in our hands today."

He stared at Zhu Yi with a shadow of a smile: "Don't belittle yourself, for us you still have some use. For example, you grew up in the old dog's house, you're presumably very knowledgeable about the layout of the house, the habits of everyone, the schedule of the guards and these kinds of things.

Zhu Yi pressed his lips together, not saying anything. Suddenly the sound of wind rose up beside his ears, shocked he found that the black-clothed middle-aged man had already arrived before him at some unknown time, the two people were inches away.

The black-clothed man's face revealed an ice-cold smile, his long

scar twitching and twisting. He said one word at a time: “You will tell me.” Finishing speaking he turned around and looked at Fatty Zhu and co., his gaze like looking at a group of dead people. He waved his hands: “Do it.”

With his command the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale all attacked. Piercing cold mana fluctuations instantly swept over the entire temple.

These cultivators are all wanted felons within the Great Zhou Dynasty, each of them are knife licking desperados. They are all seasoned combatants and have strong teamwork. Their efficiency at releasing spells is very high, not wasting the slightest bit of mana, using the most efficient method to kill the enemy.

Fatty Zhu and co. have never seen this kind of battle, the group of people were completely powerless, being brought down in batches like wheat being cut down.

Only Fatty Zhu who had the highest level of qi disciple level 8 reacted the quickest, his fat body releasing a completely mismatched speed, escaping out of the temple like he was flying.

The black-clothed man frowned: “Don’t leave any survivors, our whereabouts cannot be exposed.” Two cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale nodded their heads, pursuing out of the side hall without saying anything.

Outside of the hall Lin Feng was secretly groaning, the development of things has already strayed far away from his initial

plans.

Luckily they don't have plans of immediately killing Zhu Yi. This thus gives him to time to plan.

His thoughts rapidly turning Lin Feng had a general plan, hurriedly chasing over to Fatty Zhu.

This fatty still has a purpose, he can't die.

Chapter 34: Buddhist Disciple

Leaving the old temple, Lin Feng crushed a voice-transmitting crystal while hurrying along. A faint white light rose up from the fragments of the crystal, Lin Feng said: “Little Yan, bring along your junior and come to Spring Mountain west of the city to meet up with master.” (TL: The Chinese nickname that Lin Feng calls Xiao Yan is 小焱子, xiao yan zi, which sounds the same as the name of the protagonist princess of My Fair Princess or Return of the Pearl Princess, I know not if this is intentional.)

Very quickly Xiao Yan’s voice came from the white light, the young man’s voice was breathless. He quickly responded saying: “Don’t worry, we’ll be there soon.” After one line the white light gradually dimmed, the crystal fragments also became lackluster, becoming the same as regular crushed stones.

Lin Feng shook his head. This voice-transmitting crystal is indeed handy, but unfortunately it’s just a one-time item and it’s price is too expensive.

Xiao Yan’s hurried voice made him a bit uneasy. The breathless appearance was like he had just fought with someone else.

Lin Feng slightly knit his brows: “Those two monkeys better be alright.”

After being together for a long period of time the relationship between the three people has become increasingly closer. Even though he knows that these two main character disciples won’t be

easily bullied, Lin Feng is always worrying for these two kids who have yet to grow up.

Lightly shaking his head Lin Feng expelled the distractions in his mind, using the escape technique of Cloud Dragon Escape to arrive a step ahead at a location that Fatty Zhu must pass-by in his escape, laying down the formation of the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning.

Just finishing setting it up, Fatty Zhu had already appeared in his sights, completely out of breath from running.

Since knowing that the people who came were from the Society of the Strong Gale, Fatty Zhu completely gave up on the plan of using his background to scare them.

The person these survivors of Snowgale hate the most is probably the Marquis of Xuanji. They can't do anything with the Marquis of Xuanji, but against Fatty Zhu this kind of dog of the house they will definitely not hesitate.

In the house of the Marquis, Fatty Zhu's status is very high. The closer the relationship to the Marquis of Xuanji, the harder they'll hit.

“Dad, mom, why did you guys only give me two legs?” Fatty Zhu groaned incessantly in his heart. He may have a level of qi disciple level 8, but the two people chasing him are all qi disciple level 9. Even though he already mustered up every bit of strength he could, in the end they still caught up to him.

Right when the fatty felt despair, nine points of bluish-purple light suddenly lit up in the surroundings.

“ZZZZ!” The piercing sound of electric currents rose up in the air, bluish-purple arcs of lightning flashed a brilliant radiance in the dark night.

The expressions of the two cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale changed greatly, their experience from numerous fights tells them that impending doom is at hand.

But not waiting for them to have any further reactions, nine beams of lightning had already bombarded their bodies. In the next instant, roaring lightning descended from the heavens as if divine punishment.

Two qi disciple level 9 cultivators were directly struck to death on the spot by divine lightning!

Fatty Zhu blankly stared at the charcoal-black ashes before him, his two legs shaking as if the lightning had struck him and he was the one turned into charcoal.

Even though he's escaped danger, Fatty Zhu is unable to relax his mood.

Lin Feng slowly walked out from the forest, a white robe with wide sleeves and a daoist crown, having the appearance of a

venerable sage.

Looking at the ashes after the bombardment of the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning, Lin Feng secretly let out a breath of relief. Luckily he wasn't too far off on calculating Fatty Zhu's position of being caught up to.

Besides setting up requiring time and the casting time being too slow, the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning is still greatly to his satisfaction, directly insta-killing two qi disciple level 9 cultivators.

If he didn't use the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning, dealing with these two qi disciple level 9 cultivators would not be this easy.

The level of these two people is a lot higher than that cultivator from the Yu family before, but nonetheless Lin Feng's level is also incomparable to the him of that time. When the water rises so does the boat, the power of the Nine Heaven Thunder Summoning has also increased more than one level.

After getting a clear view of Lin Feng, Fatty Zhu collected himself, releasing a dry cough: "Thank you for giving a helping hand, all of these Snowgale scum deserve to die. Upon meeting them all citizens of our Great Zhou Dynasty are naturally duty-bound to..."

Not finishing speaking a beam of lightning flew past the fatty's ear, splitting in half right down the middle the big tree behind him.

Lin Feng didn't even look at him, his gaze looking towards the temple Zhu Yi is in, his mouth calmly saying: "Don't be noisy beside my ears, leave the thing behind and get out."

Fatty Zhu swallowed his saliva: "I will definitely report to the Marquis your achievement of helping out today..."

Lin Feng's gaze finally looked towards him, not carrying a hint of emotion, calmly saying: "When I have time in the future I will naturally pay a visit to Zhu Hongwu, as for you..."

"I never say the same words twice."

All of Fatty Zhu's hairs stood up, listen to what this young daoist calls the Marquis of Xuanji?

He directly calls his name, Zhu Hongwu.

Regardless of what this young daoist's level is and regardless of whether or not he still dares to be so arrogant after meeting the Marquis of Xuanji in person, the fatty is certain the at the very least the name of the Marquis of Xuanji is unable to frighten this young daoist.

The fatty called out unlucky in his heart. In the past using the name of the house of the Marquis he could do whatever he wanted in all of Tianjing City, but he didn't expect that in one day he consecutively bumped into two groups of people who didn't place the house of the Marquis in their eyes.

Touching the golden paper in his shirt printed with the Kṣitigarbha Sutra, the fatty was very reluctant. Of course he knows what Lin Feng wants, but he still couldn't help pretend: "Thing? What thing, I don't know..."

Lin Feng's gaze gradually became cold, making Fatty Zhu's entire body also feel increasingly colder, hurriedly saying: "Don't be hasty, the item is here, right here."

Taking out the golden paper incredibly reluctantly from his shirt, the fatty carefully placed the golden paper on the ground, saying with a forced smile: "Can I leave now?"

Lin Feng casually lifted his hand, grabbing the golden paper in his hand under the drawing force of the mana and leaving without even turning his head.

Fatty Zhu felt that the mana Lin Feng used to grab the golden paper did not seem to be outstanding. Slightly hesitating in his heart he closely examined him again, discovering that he was entirely unable to see through the depths of Lin Feng's level. He didn't dare to act rashly again, obediently standing on the spot and watching Lin Feng leave.

Seeing Lin Feng disappear from his vision, Fatty Zhu let out a long breath, hurriedly escaping towards Tianjing City: "Something big has happened this time, hurrying back to report to the Lady is what's the right thing to do."

Losing the Kṣitigarbha Sutra that he'd obtained, the fatty felt incredibly heartbroken: "Dammit, don't land in my hands or else I'll definitely show you who's boss."

Lin Feng did not actually leave, he was hiding right in the forest, watching Fatty Zhu escape towards Tianjing City.

He needs a person to go back and notify the house of the Marquis. No matter how unfavored Zhu Yi is he is still the son of the Marquis of Xuanji. Being abducted and moreover involving the adherents of Snowgale, no matter if it's the Marquis of Xuanji or Lady Shao, they will both definitely concern themselves with it.

Only with the pursuers of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji can Lin Feng tie down the people from the Society of the Strong Gale and take advantage of the situation.

Lin Feng sent out his senses. The crystal that he left with Zhu Yi shouldn't have been exposed, it was clearly pointing out to him Zhu Yi's location. The people of the Society of the Strong Gale have already taken Zhu Yi and left the old temple, moving towards the mountains to the east.

Lin Feng followed far behind them. After an unknown amount of time Lin Feng sensed the mark that he'd left on Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian, hurriedly heading towards the mark and finding them.

Just meeting them Lin Feng immediately frowned.

Xiao Budian's still okay but Xiao Yan's black clothes are ripped in many places and his aura is unstable, clearly he's just had a hard battle with someone.

Lin Feng held onto his shoulders: "Who did it?"

Xiao Yan smiled: "Don't worry master, I didn't lose much." He paused and then said: "Originally it was just a small matter. Me and junior apprentice-brother were wandering around in the city square of Tianjing City and saw a couple of lechers bullying a woman, so we butted in."

"After teaching those lechers a lesson we were originally already prepared to leave but we were suddenly stopped by a short-haired middle-aged man. He had to ask me where I learned the Art of Acala, this guy was very overbearing and wanted to capture me."

"His level is very high, probably a foundation establishment stage cultivator. If he didn't attract the attention of the patrol squad it would have been very hard for us to escape." Speaking here Xiao Yan lifted his eyebrow in confusion: "But the dao technique that person used was actually also the Art of Acala."

Xiao Budian at the side suddenly said: "That person had short hair, I saw that he had a couple of precept scars on his scalp. (TL: Go look at Krillin's head.)

Lin Feng did not say anything but he already understood in his heart that even though that person has hair, he is most likely a monk from the Great Thunder Monastery of the past.

Who'd've thought that Xiao Yan's Art of Acala did not attract the attention of the forces of the Great Zhou Dynasty but instead attracted a buddhist disciple.

"Right now I have to go chase after your new junior apprentice-brother, he's been abducted." Lin Feng nodded his head, looking at Xiao Yan and saying: "But we cannot just let things go. Remember that person's appearance, we'll get him back in the future."

Xiao Yan nodded his head while Xiao Budian smiled saying: "I've got another senior apprentice-brother?"

Lin Feng laughed and patted his little head: "This was your choosing."

In the forest east of Spring Mountain, the people of the Society of the Strong Gale were rapidly advancing with Zhu Yi.

The leading black-clothed man touched the scar on his face, saying with a frown: "Hui Ku still hasn't rendezvoused with us?"

A person at his side responded saying: "Not yet, let's not wait for him anymore. He's always so unruly, so what if he comes from the Great Thunder Monastery?"

Before the black-clothed man could say anything, a booming

voice rose up in the forest: “Not much, I’m just stronger than all of you.”

While speaking a short-haired man wearing grey clothes walked out from the dense forest. The man had a gloomy expression, the short hair on his head could not hide the six conspicuous precept scars on his scalp.

Chapter 35: The Pursuers Arrive

Lin Feng pursued behind the people of the SSG. While walking he took out an old book from his shirt, ripping out a page and throwing it on the ground while his two disciples weren't paying attention, so as to leave behind a trail for the pursuers of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji to follow.

“Master, why are we following behind like thieves in the night?” Xiao Yan asked in puzzlement: “Why don't you just directly go up and save him?”

Lin Feng said with a calm expression: “Their every move is within master's eyes. Right now I'm in no rush to save him, master wants to first observe him for a bit to see exactly how is the temperament and will of this new junior of yours.”

“Let's see how he performs under this kind of adverse danger.”

Lin Feng glanced at Xiao Yan with a smile: “I had also seriously observed you too, if not that you still persisted and did not give up in adversity, master would not have taken you as a disciple.”

Xiao Yan also smiled, nodding his head convinced and not saying anything more.

Suddenly thinking of something Lin Feng asked: “Little Yan, was that monk you guys encounter able to cultivate Fury Acala Flames?”

Lin Feng's Art of Acala is only the upper half. Even though one is still able to practise it, it has its limits. Moreover one is unable to cultivate the sublime ability of this dao technique the Fury Acala Flames.

Xiao Yan just assumes that Lin Feng wants to teach him the dao technique step by step so he's never suspected anything. Hearing Lin Feng ask him right now he answered saying: "I'm not sure. We alerted the patrolling squadron and they surrounded that monk. Afterwards he released a terrifying green coloured flame and broke free."

"The mana flames cultivated by regular fire class dao technique are all orange. According to the records of the dao technique of the Art of Acala, the Fury Acala Flames should be pure-gold." Xiao Yan lifted his brow in confusion: "Yet the fire that monk released is green, but the dao technique he practises is definitely the Art of Acala, no mistake."

After thinking for a moment Lin Feng came to a conclusion: "The Art of Acala that monk practises is incomplete, in addition it's most like missing the most important opening chapter that contains the general principles."

The content of dao techniques is naturally more profound the further in, but the beginning of the Art of Acala has a couple of verses about the general principles that touches briefly on the essentials. It appears shallow but it is actually the basis of the entire dao technique.

Missing these few verses, even if the rest of the dao technique is complete it is very easy for one to go the wrong direction when practising it. Even if one is able to finish practising the entire Art of Acala, it'll be like a castle in the air without a good foundation. shaking and crumbling.

Lin Feng may not have the lower half content of the Art of Acala but the upper half he possesses is very complete, not a single word is wrong, Xiao Yan also practises it meticulously.

That monk spent his entire life studying the Art of Acala, naturally he can tell with a glance that the Art of Acala Xiao Yan practises contains the general principle verses which is why he coveted it and acted out to capture Xiao Yan.

After listening Xiao Yan asked with a grin: “Master, the Art of Acala I practise is also incomplete, when will you teach the lower-half to me?”

Lin Feng smiled saying: “Don’t bite off more than you can chew, learn what you know first.”

After sending away Xiao Yan, Lin Feng laughed coldly in his heart: “Touch my disciple, rob my manual? Damn baldy, let’s see who robs who.”

This group of people from the SSG have clearly lurked around in the center of the Zhou Dynasty for a long time. Not only are they familiar with the surrounding land, they’ve even set up many secret reinforcement posts and have a complete evacuation route

and plan.

But with Lin Feng constantly pointing the way their location was clearly exposed. In not even three day's time the pursuers of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji had already bitten their tails.

Even though they still haven't pinpointed their location, the pursuers have already circled over from all directions, blocking the people of the SSG in a mountain and constantly narrowing the encirclement.

Lin Feng brought along his two disciples and became increasingly more cautious. Hiding his tracks to avoid getting caught up in trouble.

In the mountain the group of people rapidly advanced. The leader is a bald old man, he has an aquiline nose and deep sunken eyes. He's the spitting image of a vulture.

The bald old man suddenly stopped his feet, the people behind him also all stopped. The old man's cold gaze swept the surroundings but did not discover anything.

A person behind him asked in a low voice: "Mr. Vulture, is there something wrong?"

Mr. Vulture's eyes flashed, he was silent and did not speak. Suddenly a white bone flew out from his sleeve.

That seems to be the thigh bone of some creature, it is as white as polished jade and crystal clear, one side of the bone stick is very thick, looking like a hammer.

The bone stick flew into the air, growing as it went along. Originally it was one foot long but in the end it had a length of a whole dozen meters. It was as thick as a water bucket and a thick aura of evil charged out from the bone stick, frightening all of the creatures in the forest and making them feel fear as if they were about to die.

Mr. Vulture waved his hand, the bone stick flew up carrying the sound of a tempest, hitting a small mountain in the distance.

With a loud “Bang” the massive mountain peak was directly smashed into pieces by the massive bone hammer. Countless mountain rocks rolled down the mountain, dirt and dust rose upwards covering the sky.

The bone stick returned above Mr. Vulture’s head and turned back to a length of one foot, going into Mr. Vulture’s sleeves.

Seeing everybody look towards him, Mr. Vulture released a displeased tut: “I felt like someone was prying on us, looks like I was oversensitive, let’s go.”

The group of people continued on their way, disappearing in the dense mountain.

On a mountain beside the destroyed mountain peak, Lin Feng and co. hid their aura. After watching the bald old man and his party leave Xiao Yan breathed a sigh of relief: “That old geezer is a foundation establishment stage cultivator, right?”

Lin Feng nodded his head. He wasn't worried that he would be discovered, the key is Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian could very easily expose their whereabouts.

“Although, even if we expose ourselves a bit it's okay.” Lin Feng chuckled.

The bald old man doesn't know that they're already very close to the people of the SSG, with this the old geezer will definitely have alarmed them.

Sure enough, after a moment fierce mana fluctuations travelled over from within the valley in front.

Lin Feng and co. approached nearby, seeing that in the dry valley Mr. Vulture and his party had surrounded a grey-clothed man in the middle, engaging in an intense battle.

Mr. Vulture's bone stick had turned back into a massive dozen meter long stick sweeping up and down. With him as the main force the cultivators released all kinds of spells, surrounding the grey-clothed man and giving him a beat-down.

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian looked at each other, lowering their

voices and saying: “Master, that guy wearing the grey clothes is monk that intercepted us!”

Lin Feng focused his eyes and looked over. The grey-clothed man has a head of spiky short hair, six precept scars can be faintly seen on his scalp.

Even though he’s at a disadvantage this person is still calm and unhurried, light-green flames burst forth around his body, burning fiercely.

The instant the opponent’s spells touched the green flames they would instantly be burned to nothingness. Some people also used fire class spells to attack him, but the green flames were truly domineering, even treating the raging orange flames as fuel and burning them.

The group of people attacked him for a long time but the grey-clothed monk’s green flames instead became increasingly more powerful, the intensity of the fire increasingly greater.

Only Mr. Vulture’s bone stick magic item could threaten the grey-clothed monk, even the green flames could not block it, forcing the grey-clothed monk to dodge.

While controlling his magic item Mr. Vulture spoke out to mess with his mind: “Monk, those people of the Society of the Strong Gale are clearly treating you as cannon fodder, leaving you behind to bring up the rear. Only an idiot like you would believe in their words.”

The grey-clothed monk Hui Ku was a bit infuriated. Originally he volunteered to bring up the rear because he wanted to show off his skills, but he didn't guess that he would instead be entangled by the enemy. How can he convince the people of the SSG like this.

Hui Ku said in his heart: "After this I have to capture that kid I met that day. If I am able to cultivate the true Fury Acala Fire why would I have to work so hard?"

While thinking a beam of sword aura suddenly flew over from far away, chopping down right above Hui Ku's head. The green flames were actually completely unable to stop it.

Hui Ku was greatly shocked, getting out of the way and dodging. The sword aura missed, cutting a mountain peak behind Hui Ku, actually slicing apart the mountain peak. The massive mountain top rolled downwards, in the loud rumbling sound the earth moved and the mountains shook as if an earthquake.

After the mountain peak landed, the sliced surface of the mountain was smooth as a mirror. Lin Feng who was hiding at the side slightly frowned: "What a powerful sword cultivator, his level is at the foundation establishment stage and he possesses a high-grade flying sword."

A black-clothed swordsman appeared at the scene, his venomous eyes staring at Hui Ku.

Hui Ku stared at the black-clothed swordsman but he didn't dare

to place all of his attention on him alone. The corner of his eyes looked towards the other direction and as expected, a white-robed middle-aged man slowly walked out of the forest. He had the appearance of a scholar but those vast mana fluctuations said that he is a foundation establishment stage cultivator on the same level as the black-clothed swordsman and Mr. Vulture.

“Who could have guessed that the leftover evil of the Great Thunder Monastery actually mixed together with the Society of the Strong Gale.” The white-robed scholar exclaimed in amazement. While examining Hui Ku he lifted his hand and sent out a couple of white lights. The white lights flew into the air and exploded, turning into a curtain of light and enveloping the surrounding mountains.

Hui Kui stared at him coldly. The white-robed scholar said coolly: “The surroundings have already been sealed by my formation, you can’t escape.”

Finishing speaking, he and the black-clothed swordsman along with Mr. Vulture formed a triangle, surrounding Hui Ku in the middle while the other qi disciple stage cultivators were spread out in the outer ring.

Lin Feng furrowed his brows. The levels of these three people are all about the same as Hui Ku’s. With three against one, don’t mention escaping, even taking one down with him is already pretty good for Hui Ku.

The most probable outcome is that he’ll even be caught alive.

Lin Feng was in the middle of thinking when he suddenly saw a vile smile surface on Hui Ku's face completely out of line with his identity as a monk.

The grey-clothed monk said with a laugh: "The ones who can't escape are you guys." Before his voice had even died away Hui Ku threw up his hand, 24 spots of light flew up into the air, forming an intriguing formation.

Lin Feng's expression slightly changed. From within that formation he sensed an incredibly terrifying power fluctuation, this kind of danger that reached his soul is something that he also felt before from that aurous core stage elder of the Blaze Sword Sect.

Chapter 36: Fierce Monk, 24 Heaven Arhat Formation

Lin Feng closely looked over, discovering that the 24 spots of light that Hui Ku threw into the air were actually a bunch of brown beads. Each of them were as big as a walnut, emitting a golden radiance in the air.

Lin Feng twitched his nose, smelling a faint scent of sandalwood. The 24 beads in the air all revealed a peaceful and grand aura.

Facing these 24 beads Lin Feng felt as if he were facing 24 enlightened monks.

The expression of the three foundation establishment stage cultivators surrounding Hui Ku all slightly changed. The white-robed middle-aged man looked at Hui Ku in shock: “Sariras, these are sariras?! You actually possess 24 sariras, did you refine the sariras of the elders of your sect into magic items?”

Hearing this the expressions of Mr. Vulture and the black-clothed swordsman all became very cloudy. The black-clothed swordsman opened his mouth for the first time since appearing: “You betraying scum!”

In the process of the 24 sariras rising up into the air, an instant of pain and guilt flashed across Hui Ku’s eyes, but afterwards they were filled with endless anger and malice.

Hearing the black-clothed swordsman's condemning words, Hui Ku laughed loudly, his expression crazed: "Even if I descend into the Unintermittent hell, I will make you evil demons pay. This is the path Lord Buddha showed me, my seniors will definitely understand me."

He heavily placed his hands together, saying in a deep voice: "Buddha is merciful, sweeping away evil, 24 Heaven Arhat Formation, open!"

Following Hui Ku's hasty shout, the 24 sariras in the air all released a dazzling Buddhist light.

The Buddhist light connected together, forming a golden cloud, enveloping the surrounding thousand feet around Hui Ku. Waves of Buddhist zen singing came from the Buddhist light, overlapping with each other resulting in a deafening loudness.

Mr. Vulture and co. were all enveloped by the Buddhist light, as if they were in a separate space completely cut-off from the outside world.

The white-robed middle-aged man shook his head: "Competing against me on formations? You are no match monk, you're only asking to be humiliated..." Speaking half-way he suddenly stopped.

The white-robed middle-aged man looked forward with a stunned expression, Mr. Vulture and the black-clothed swordsman were also the same. The other qi disciple stage cultivators all trembled in fear.

Heavy shadows manifested in the Buddhist light, each of them were over 100 feet tall, their entire bodies flashing with a golden light. They were all vajra arhats, each of them releasing an incredibly terrifying aura.

There were a total of 24 arhat light figures, each of their mana fluctuations could compare with a foundation establishment stage cultivator.

24 foundation establishment stage cultivators!

Lin Feng and his disciples stared wide-eyed. This monk is way too intense, actually possessing such a fierce magic item.

“Good heavens, one magic item manifesting 24 foundation establishment stage cultivators. Whoever has a magic item like this can do whatever they want in the foundation establishment stage.” Lin Feng swallowed his saliva, incredibly envious: “Don’t mention foundation establishment stage, even if he bumps into a regular aurous core stage cultivator he’ll have the strength to protect himself, no wonder that damn baldy dared to stay behind on his own.”

Hui Ku’s figure disappeared out of sight, hiding in the Buddhist light. Only the hands of the 24 arhat light figures came together, chanting: “Buddha is merciful, repent and be saved.”

The voices pierced the soul like the morning bell and evening drum of the temple, making all of the people in the Buddhist light develop an illusion for an instant, as if they were guilty of terrible crimes and deserve to be suppressed and captured, released into reincarnation.

The three people are all cultivators who have attained the foundation establishment stage. Their wills are firm and they quickly reacted over. As for those qi disciple stage cultivators, none of them were hurt but they all slumped to the ground, they've already lost the awareness to resist.

Lin Feng felt chills while looking from a mountain at the side. 24 Buddhist foundation establishment stage cultivators shouting together, they don't even need to harm the enemy and are able to overwhelm them, making them lose the will to resist.

What weakness does the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation have? Because it's a formation, it's not easily moved?" Lin Feng's thoughts rapidly turned, thinking of a countermeasure: "Extremely heavy mana consumption? Or are these arhat light figures just empty shells to scare people?"

Very quickly they used their actions to answer Lin Feng's question.

Seeing Mr. Vulture and the other two foundation establishment stage cultivators not submit, the 24 arhat light figures once again chanted a prayer and then charged over in small groups.

The black-clothed swordsman released a cold snort, slashing the golden arhat with a flash of his sword.

“Scratch—”

The piercing sound of grinding metal rose up. The flying sword that can cut down a mountain only opened up a crack on the golden arhat’s chest. The golden arhat felt nothing, a pair of big hands grabbing towards the flying sword.

The black-clothed swordsman manipulated the flying sword and retreated, but there were two other golden arhats attacking from the left and right. Four palms pushing out together, the radiant Buddhist light had practically condensed into a solid state, actually sealing the nimble flying sword in the air.

Two other golden arhats rushed over to the black-clothed swordsman himself, fists as big as a water jar smashing down on his head!

“Damn baldy!” The black-clothed swordsman’s expression paled. All of his cultivation prowess is focused on his flying sword, losing the flying sword his fighting ability is immediately greatly reduced. He can only evade flustered, at the same time doing his best to call back his flying sword.

The flying sword struggled desperately in the Buddhist light, emitting a screeching hum. Even the blade became a bit distorted, but no matter what it was unable to escape from the imprisonment of the Buddhist light.

On the contrary it is the three golden arhats trapping the flying sword that were still constantly increasing their power. Six giant palms grouped together, the Buddhist light in their palms became increasingly stronger and thick smoke started to rise up from the black-clothed swordsman's flying sword.

The flying sword hummed non-stop as if it were alive, releasing miserable wails.

Seeing this Lin Feng could already completely confirm that this magic item of Hui Ku's really can materialize 24 foundation establishment stage arhat light figures.

Perhaps their intelligence is not high enough, perhaps they are not nimble enough, perhaps they look like they can only fight in close quarters and don't know any spells... But in terms of mana these golden arhats all possess the level of foundation establishment stage cultivators.

Moreover they clearly do not feel pain and are not afraid of injury. They can unhesitatingly adopt a life for a life fighting tactic.

Ten golden arhats even stayed on the spot and didn't move, the other 14 struck out together, beating the the crap out of Mr. Vulture and the other two in an instant.

With such a grand difference in strength, Mr. Vulture and co. won't even have the chance to die while taking one down.

Whether it's being captured alive or crushed to death all depends on Hui Ku's mood.

Nobody thought beforehand that Hui Ku was actually so fierce. Originally it was a hopeless 1vs3 situation but things turned around in an instant, turning into 24vs3.

Right now in the hearts of Mr. Vulture and co. there were undoubtedly [thousands of grassland horses covered in mud running past.](#)

Lin Feng also felt depressed. Xiao Yan this main character is truly skillful, the first opponent that he provoked is already so fierce. Even more unexpectedly is that this damn baldy is actually in cahoots with the SSG that kidnapped Zhu Yi.

Protecting Xiao Yan, saving Zhu Yi, to do all of this he has to get past Hui Ku.

Thinking here a cold light flashed in Lin Feng's eyes: "I can't let things go so smoothly for him, I've got to knock him down a bit... First I've got to find his weakness."

Lin Feng thought for a moment, pulling over Xiao Yan and whispering a few commands in his ear.

Xiao Yan was dazed for a moment: "What is this for?"

Lin Feng pretended to be profound, replying faintly: "I naturally

have my arrangements, all you need is to do as I say. Maybe there's something good for you today here."

Xiao Yan curled his lips: "Don't fool me master!"

Lin Feng raised his hand, scolding with a laugh: "Damn brat, you looking for a beating."

Xiao Yan stuck out his tongue, swiftly running down the mountain and arriving near the cloud formed by the Buddhist light.

He acted according to Lin Feng's instructions, wandering a few rounds around the Buddhist light. He was instantly discovered by Hui Ku who was in the light cloud.

"You wear out iron shoes in hunting round, when all the time it's easy to be found!" Hui Ku was first overjoyed, but then looking at Mr. Vulture and co. in the Buddhist light he then started to feel troubled: "I'll deal with these crooks right away, it's such a pity if I give up now. But what if things drag on for too long and that kid runs?"

After Hui Ku hesitated for a moment he bit his teeth, opening up his personal bag and letting out a small snake.

The little snake grew while it was in the air, actually turning into a giant golden python over 100 meters long. It's head was like the size of a small room and it's mouth was filled with sharp fangs as

long and thick as an elephant's tusk. Hui Ku extended his hand pointing towards Xiao Yan: "I want him alive."

The giant golden python landed on the ground, shooting towards Xiao Yan like an arrow.

Seeing the giant golden python Xiao Yan was slightly shocked. While this python slithered it did not carry any hint of the smell of blood, on the contrary it released a faint sandalwood scent.

Two little bumps bulged up on the giant python's head, as if they were the horns on the head of a flood dragon. Its speed slithering on the ground was fast as lightning, the combat strength of this kind of savage beast is enough to rival a qi disciple level 10 and above cultivator.

Lin Feng's warning floated up in Xiao Yan's head at this moment: "If that monk sends out a magic item or spiritual pet to deal with you, do not tangle with it on the spot, just run towards the mountains far-away."

Xiao Yan twitched his lips, turning around and running. The giant golden python pursued closely behind him.

On the mountaintop Lin Feng watched Xiao Yan and the giant python escaping and chasing, running further and further away, yet in the Buddhist light formation Hui Ku did not chase over. Seeing here a warm smile like the sun resurfaced on Lin Feng's face.

Notes:

[1\]](#) If you're confused about the grassland horses covered in mud running by then here's the explanation. In Chinese, 'Screw your mom' is 你妈, cao ni ma, which has the same pronunciation (different tone) as 草泥马, cao ni ma, which word for word means grass mud horse. So essentially, thousands of grass mud horses running by in your heart is a more joking way of saying Holy Crap and stuff like that.

Chapter 37: 2 Kids Kill A Snake

Hui Ku only sent out a giant golden python to capture Xiao Yan while he himself still stayed in the Buddhist light formation.

Seeing this Lin Feng understood things clearly: “As expected, those 24 golden arhats can only move about within the 1000 foot area covered by the Buddhist light. As the one directing the formation that big monk also cannot leave the area of the Buddhist light.

In addition it looks like Hui Ku is putting all of his focus in directing the formation and is unable to use any other cultivation skills.

Lin Feng thought in his heart: “All that’s left is a key point that still can’t be confirmed yet, and that is if those 24 sariras forming the formation are all indispensable? As long as one is missing will the formation be unable to be maintained?”

While thinking Lin Feng quietly said towards Xiao Budian beside him: “Go help your senior apprentice-brother, I leave that snake to you to. Master will not do anything, this could also be considered a test for you guys.”

Hearing this Xiao Budian was not flustered, instead he was eager to try and moreover smiled like a thief saying: “Master, if we slaughter that snake will the blood and meat and stuff all belong to us?”

Lin Feng knocked on his little head, scolding with a smile: “Damn brat, all you know is eating!”

Xiao Budian laughed, Lin Feng shook his head grumpily: “Go then, how much you can gain depends on your ability.”

“Thank you master!” Xiao Budian cried out in joy, disappearing out of sight in the turn of an eye and charging in the direction of Xiao Yan and the giant python.

This giant golden python is a natural born aberration and was trained by Hui Ku using secret Buddhist techniques, it’s strength and speed are all shockingly high and far superior to regular beasts.

If not that Lin Feng had already passed on to Xiao Yan the Cloud Dragon Escape Technique he would not be able to outrun this giant snake.

“This guy’s like a tiny mountain when it coils up, how come it’s so fast with such a massive body!” Xiao Yan cursed in his heart, his body suddenly doing a strange turn and avoiding the snake jaw that lunged violently from behind.

The giant snake’s head is as big as a small house, opening up its big mouth and swallowing Xiao Yan whole is nothing but a piece of cake.

“Senior, here, over here!”

Xiao Yan was in the middle of madly sprinting when he suddenly heard Xiao Budian's shouts. Lifting his head and looking over, Xiao Budian was waving his hands at him on a mountain.

"This kid, could he..." With a thought Xiao Yan instantly changed direction, running towards the mountain Xiao Budian is at.

The giant golden python followed closely behind him, sweeping through all obstructions. Where its massive body passed by, rocks burst and towering old tree fell down in groups like cut wheat.

"Let me test your might." On the mountaintop Xiao Budian rose up into the air, his body like an extraordinary cloud dragon, rushing straight towards the giant golden python's head.

The giant golden python released a soundless roar, its big mouth biting towards Xiao Budian. Yet Xiao Budian's body flashed in the air, dodging the snake's blood-pool-like mouth and nimbly landing on the snake's neck.

Xiao Budian grinned saying: "You hit the snake at the seventh inch, you may be big but I can still figure out where your 'seventh inch' is." Finishing speaking he lifted his leg and kicked the giant snake's body. ("For certain snakes the seventh inch is where the heart is, obviously it's different for different snakes. Overall it just means hit where it hurts.")

Lightning flashed at the tip of his feet, his tiny body bringing

about rumbling thunder, his spirit and atmosphere was not the slightest bit weaker than the giant golden python's.

The lightning exploded, stirring up beams of golden light and a touch of blood red. Those are snake scales and snake blood. With one kick of Xiao Budian's the giant golden python became wounded.

The giant python released an angry cry, suddenly twisting its body, its thick golden tail sweeping across and whipping towards Xiao Budian.

If this hits, regardless of how strong Xiao Budian's body is he'll still be turned into mush!

But Xiao Budian did not meet it head on, his body nimbly evading to the side and dodging the giant python's retaliation.

Xiao Yan who was being chased by the giant python the whole time silently appeared at this time. After evading the giant python's tail sweep he arrived on its back, his goal was precisely the wound that Xiao Budian had just created.

A hint of aggression surfaced on Xiao Yan's face: "You elongated bug, you had a lot of fun chasing me just now, huh?" Flipping his palm, bursting fire mana rapidly gathered, turning into real flames and burning above Xiao Yan's palm.

The next moment the blazing fire seemed to have been

suppressed, Xiao Yan did not let the flames continue to spread out, instead he was compressing it towards the center.

He extended his two hands outwards, his two palms facing each other with a distance of one foot. The crimson red flames continuously compressed together between his two palms, in the end becoming a tiny red ball of light.

The ball of light may be small but it harbors terrifying heat and explosive power. It was like a tiny sun, filled with an oppressive, destructive aura.

It is precisely the secret technique of the Void Temple that Yan Mingyue passed on to Xiao Yan, Red Lotus Burst!

The tiny ball of light is only as big as a human's fist, its size is completely disproportional to the giant golden python, but the giant golden python sensed danger at the first moment. In a pair of cold, slit-like pupils revealed a color of fear.

Xiao Yan's hands pushed forward, the tiny red coloured ball of light flying towards the wound on the giant python.

The giant golden python wanted to dodge but the ball of light's flying speed was exceedingly quick, not giving it any chance to evade and directly hitting its target.

Time seemed to pause for an instant at this moment, and then the frozen scene suddenly shattered, violent flames exploded with

a roar, the powerful strength as if wanting to shatter this area of space.

“Hisss–”

The giant golden python released heavy cries, half of its body was engulfed in flames, rolling around in pain in the mountains.

Even though Lin Feng was paying close attention to the battle of Hui Ku and co., he still split out half of his focus watching over Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian. Seeing his two disciples working closely together and beating the crap out of that giant hundred meter long python, Lin Feng spread his lips: “These two brats, they really are merciless.”

Shaking his head Lin Feng felt that there was nothing to be concerned about anymore with this battle, but suddenly sensing something he sensed that a change had occurred to the giant golden python.

In the screaming cries the giant golden python opened its mouth wide, beams of golden light suddenly burst out from its mouth. Waves of Buddhist chanting actually came out from its mouth, A boundless Buddhist mana fluctuation spread outward.

Lin Feng closely looked over, seeing a small mass of light slowly rise up from the giant python’s mouth. It burned so strongly that it was difficult to open one’s eyes, the Buddhist light and chanting came precisely from this mass of light.

The mass of light leaving the giant python's body, the golden scales on the giant python's body became a lot fainter. The fragrance of sandalwood vanished and the strong stench of a snake came forth.

The giant python opened wide a pair of vertical-line-like pupils, coldly staring at Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian, its gaze filled with monstrous killing intent.

The two kids also instantly realized that something was wrong, splitting up and escaping to the left and right.

After they just left the spot that they were originally standing at, a brilliant beam of golden light shot out from the mass of light in the snake's mouth, smashing into the mountain.

The golden light disappearing, a clear round hole appeared at the center of the massive mountain, through the hole one can clearly see the scenery in the distance.

This beam of golden light directly pierced through the entire mountain!

Lin Feng was slightly shocked, this power could already compare to the attack of a foundation establishment stage cultivator.

At this time he could already clearly see that at the center of the mass of light is a strangely shaped magic item, mana fluctuations constantly surged. Even though it was deep and powerful, it was

not stable enough.

“This magic item has been damaged before.” With a turn of his mind Lin Feng instantly understood: “This big monk really has a good plan.”

Hui Ku is actually using the vital energy of the abnormal snake to nurture the damaged magic item, thereby making the magic item recover faster and at the same time also using the spiritual energy of the magic item to nourish this giant python, making the giant python even stronger and quickly increasing its strength.

But like this Lin Feng is unable to sit still, this giant python has already become a huge threat towards Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian.

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian also realize that this giant snake is about to get serious. Xiao Budian yelled saying: “Don’t fret senior apprentice-brother, if it didn’t have a bit of skill then my arrangements would have been wasted!”

While speaking Xiao Budian brought his hands together, forming a spell sign and shouting: “Move!”

Nine violet dots of light rose up in the surroundings of the mountain, in the sound of violent currents nine arcs of lightning shot towards the giant golden python.

Lin Feng has already established his master impression in the hearts of his two disciples, like this some things he does not hide

anymore and can pass on to his disciples to increase their strength.

Right now Xiao Budian has unleashed the Nine Heavens Thunder Summoning that Lin Feng taught him.

The initial nine arcs of lightning did not cause much damage to the giant python, but the next moment the lightning that descended from the skies bombarded its body, directly splitting off the lower half of its body including its tail!

The powerful attack of formations borrowing the energy of the world was perfectly embodied at this moment.

Xiao Yan watched at this side, unable to resist letting out a cheer: “Nice! Beautiful... Careful, dodge!”

Xiao Budian was in the middle of feeling pleased with himself, only when he heard Xiao Yan’s warning did he discover that after suffering such a heavy injury, the giant golden python instead became completely wild.

Its massive head abruptly rose up, towering over Xiao Budian who was caught off guard.

Its mouth opening wide, scriptures flowed on the golden magic item and radiant golden light once again condensed. The next instant it was about to smash right into Xiao Budian!

Chapter 38: The Correct Way To Capture The Opponent Alive

Xiao Budian felt the sky above his head suddenly darken, that was the giant python's head.

The next moment the darkness above his head suddenly lit up again, so bright that one could not even open one's eyes. That is the light emitted by the magic item in the giant python's mouth.

Terrifyingly powerful mana fluctuations spread outward.

“Dodge!”

Xiao Yan suddenly charged over from the side, knocking Xiao Budian out of the way. Xiao Budian may have escaped from the giant python's attack range, but Xiao Yan has exposed himself beneath the snake's mouth, facing head-on that terrifying buddhist magic item.

Xiao Budian cried out in shock: “Eldest apprentice-brother!”

The boldness in the black-clothed youth's heart was completely aroused, facing the radiant golden buddhist light he did not dodge or evade, lifting up his two hands.

Between his hands floated a crimson red orb of light filled with a blazing, destructive aura.

“Let’s see who dies first!” Xiao Yan clenched his teeth, facing head-on the buddhist light that can turn him into dust with one hit and preemptively releasing Red Lotus Burst!

The red orb of light turned into a beam of crimson light, flying into the giant python’s wide-opened mouth. At the same time, that buddhist magic item in the snake’s mouth had accumulated mana to the extreme, turning into a beam of radiant buddhist light and smashing towards Xiao Yan.

Xiao Yan’s Red Lotus Burst was a step faster, taking the lead and exploding in the snake’s mouth only a thousandth of a second faster than the buddhist light.

But the unstoppable buddhist light has already taken form, will it dissipate due to this explosion?

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian both did not know the answer, because a white arc of lightning even more domineering and violent than the buddhist light flashed across the sky, striking the giant python’s head a step faster than the Red Lotus Burst.

Northern Aurora Mystic Light!

The domineering lightning directly opened up a hole in the giant golden python’s head. After piercing through the snake’s head it heavily struck that buddhist magic item.

The magic item released a resonant ring, it was forced to use all of the buddhist light that it originally planned on using to attack Xiao Yan to protect itself, no longer having the strength to attack.

At this time Xiao Yan's Red Lotus Burst finally exploded in the snake's mouth, directly blowing up into a bloody mist the giant python's already heavily wounded head.

“Master!” Xiao Budian cheered loudly, Xiao Yan was also covered in cold sweat at this moment: “Master, you almost killed me!”

Lin Feng swiftly landed beside them, a body of taoist clothing appearing even more dashing and divine in the battle-razed mountains.

Lifting his hand and catching the buddhist magic item that fell from the air, Lin Feng turning his head and smiled at Xiao Yan saying: “I already said that you might have a fortuitous encounter today and that there would be threats but no danger.”

While speaking Lin Feng raised up the buddhist magic item in his hand and shook it: “When I erase the restrictions set by the original owner this thing will belong to you.”

Xiao Yan was exalted: “Haha, all things considered I didn't put my life on the line for nothing.”

Lin Feng looked at him with a smile: “Little Yan, I'm proud of you, you've got the attitude of an eldest apprentice-brother.”

At this time Xiao Budian pounced over and grabbed Xiao Yan's hand: "Yeah senior apprentice-brother, it's all thanks to you just now..."

Xiao Yan raised his eyebrows, saying smugly: "Don't sweat it."

But who knew that Xiao Budian continued to say: "... Even though I could also dodge it myself, but I still have to thank you." Instantly making Xiao Yan not sure whether he should laugh or cry. Feels like this junior apprentice-brother is even more smug than he is.

Xiao Budian then turned his head toward Lin Feng and asked: "Master, master, that magic item goes to senior apprentice-brother, what about me?"

Lin Feng pointed at the already dead giant python: " Didn't you have your mind on it? It's all yours, how much you can take depends on you." Pausing for a moment Lin Feng continued to say: "Collect some more snake blood, you also have to take the snake bile. You're almost five years old, these things are all good materials for your baptism."

Xiao Budian let out a cheer and then charged towards the giant python. He may be young but when he was in the village he went hunting with the men, collecting these materials is a familiar task for him.

Hearing Lin Feng wanting to give Xiao Budian a baptism, Xiao

Yan also went and helped out. A child's baptism at the age of five has a very important effect on their body.

Xiao Yan couldn't help imagining things: "Junior apprentice-brother's talent is already so high, if he then goes through a baptism how terrifying will that be? Just thinking about it makes people look forward to it."

While his two disciples were busy at the side butchering the giant python, Lin Feng's attention had already returned over to Hui Ku and co.

Not sure if it's because he sensed the giant python being killed and his magic item getting robbed, but large ripples arose in Hui Ku's mind and he was nearly unable to maintain that overpowering 24 Heaven Arhat Formation.

Originally, facing this hopeless situation of certain death Mr. Vulture and co. were already about to give up all hope, but they didn't expect that something wrong would happen with Hui Ku himself. The three people in the formation instantly sensed the changes within, hope rising up again in their hearts.

The three people all knew that it was already at the moment of life or death, all of them releasing their strongest skills. They don't ask to defeat Hui Ku, only hoping to be able to get out of the buddhist light formation.

The three people fought desperately together and Hui Ku was also not in his best condition. Like this they were actually able to

charge out of the formation.

Seeing that he was about to lose everything Hui Ku howled in anger, just barely gathering his focus and circulating the power of the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation to the extreme.

The 24 arhat light figures gathered together, chanting the name of Buddha together. The buddhist light above their heads came together, forming two massive hands that covered the sky.

The two massive buddhist palms descended from the sky, directly slapping the white-robed middle-aged man and the black-clothed swordsman to the ground.

But they missed out Mr. Vulture. How could the bald old man care about his companions at this time, a mouth of vital blood spraying onto the bone stick magic item.

The jade-white bone stick became increasingly more crystal clear with a faint red glow flashing, directly turning into a length of over 100 meters and heavily smashing the buddhist light formation, directly piercing through the buddhist light and carrying Mr.Vulture charging out of the area of the formation.

Hui Ku was furious, the massive palms formed by the buddhist light striking towards Mr. Vulture. Mr. Vulture raised the bone stick, just barely blocking the attack but coughing out blood from the attack. Almost all of his mana was scattered from the attack.

Taking this hit, Mr. Vulture and the bone stick were sent flying together. Directly going over a mountain and falling in a forest a dozen miles away.

Mr. Vulture lay on the ground, coughing out another mouth of blood. He felt like all of the bones in his body had been broken into pieces and that even his internal organs had changed places.

“This monk is so ruthless, actually refining the sariras of his elders into magic items. It’s no good, I have to go back and get more experts here to be able to subdue this cur.” Mr. Vulture struggled up from the ground and also felt a bit rejoiced in his heart. Three people were trapped and only he was able to successfully escape.

And yet, when his thoughts reached this point Mr. Vulture suddenly felt his scalp go numb and his hairs stand up, as if some calamity was about to descend upon him.

Feeling that something was wrong, he was just about to react but was still too late.

Without any noise Lin Feng appeared behind him, in his hand was precisely Mr. Vulture’s bone stick magic item. Right now it had already shrunk to its original length of one foot and was being used by Lin Feng as a hammer, hitting the back of Mr. Vulture’s head with a bam.

Mr. Vulture cried aloud, his eyes dizzy, but even though he was gravely injured his mana still surged wildly, desperately fighting

back and not wanting himself to faint over, moreover wanting to turn around and see who exactly it is.

But just turning his head around, a mass of snow-white had already come down before he could see anyone, the bone stick magic item once again striking down and hitting his forehead.

“Bam”

Mr. Vulture’s eyes rolled over and he fainted, the last thought in his mind was: “This giant bone stick, how come it seems to be my bone mace?”

Lin Feng weighed the bone mace in his hands. This magic item is severely weakened from being hit by the giant buddhist hands Hui Ku materialized, it didn’t resist at all when Lin Feng held it in his hands to attack its master. The mana fluctuations in the magic item are also very weak, looks like it needs to recuperate for a long time to be able to return to normal.

Although it’s pretty handy treating it as a hammer to hit people, its length, thickness and weight are all just right.

While thinking Lin Feng suddenly discovered that his two disciples beside him were all looking at him with a blank look, their eyes shifting between Lin Feng and the bone mace in his hands.

Lin Feng’s expression was calm, letting out a dry cough: “Did you

guys see clearly? Using the baihui point above the head as a marker and moving forwards or backwards one inch, hitting these two spots can make people quickly lose conscious.”

“Did you guys learn it?”

Xiao Budian blankly nodded his head while Xiao Yan’s lips twitched: “Master, this... isn’t this just a sneak attack?”

“Wrong, master is showing to you guys the correct way to capture the opponent alive.” Lin Feng said seriously: “IF you guys didn’t pay attention then master will demonstrate it one more time.”

While speaking Lin Feng released a sliver of thunder mana, stimulating Mr Vulture’s nerve points and making him wake up.

The bald old man woke up, murmuring: “What happened, I think someone attacked me from behind...” Before he could figure out his surrounding environment, Mr. Vulture’s hairs suddenly stood up, his scalp going numb, that familiar feeling came back again.”

“Bam”

He felt a piercing pain at the back of his head, his vision going black. It was the same feeling as last time, he suffered a staggering blow again!

“Again?!” Mr. Vulture forced himself to resist the pain, while

straining himself to keep his eyes open to ensure that he didn't instantly faint, he did his best to turn his head. This time he has to see exactly who it is attack him from behind again and again.

What entered into his eyes was still a field of hazy white. Mr. Vulture couldn't hold back from cursing: "It really is my bone mace..." But not waiting for him to see even more clearly, that hammer came down and once again hit his forehead.

"Ugh..." Mr. Vulture's eyes rolled over, carrying boundless anger and endless regret and fainting over again.

Lin Feng turned his head with a calm expression, asking indifferently: "Did you guys see clearly this time?"

Xiao Yan was dumbfounded, Xiao Budian clapped his hands and smiled saying: "Yes master, can you let me try?"

Lin Feng handed the bone mace over to Xiao Budian with a faint smile: "Trying is one thing, have some discretion, don't kill him, master still has some things to ask him in a bit."

Xiao Yan watched as Xiao Budian walked towards Mr. Vulture who had been repeatedly knocked unconscious with an excited expression on his face. He couldn't help but shake his head and turn his head to the side.

What happened next was practically unbearable to watch.

Chapter 39: Buddhist Dharma Weapon, Thundershock Staff

Note: I don't know if this was mentioned before, but magic treasures are not the same as magic items, magic treasures are better than magic items and can only be made by primordial soul stage cultivators.

Capturing Mr. Vulture, Lin Feng relaxed his heart. Towards the black-clothed swordsman and the white-robed middle-age man he could only say sorry.

Right now his mind is entirely on this buddhist magic item in his hands that seems like the combination of a pestle and awl.

After searching through the trade system Lin Feng confirmed that this magic item is one of the legendary 10 great buddhist dharma weapons of buddhism, the Thundershock Staff.

Buddhism's 10 great buddhist dharma weapons are all earthshaking treasures with great power. The 10 buddhist weapons combined as one is called "The Infinite World" which is moreover the Great Thunder Monastery's crown treasure.

Real buddhist dharma weapons are all high-quality magic treasures, they are treasures that only primordial soul stage cultivators can create.

But the method of creation of buddhist weapons is widespread

within the Great Thunder Monastery, monks of all levels can create them, although the ones created by cultivators below primordial soul are all magic items, they can only be considered replicas.

This Thunder Shock Staff Hui Ku is refining right now belongs to this kind of replica.

Lin Feng was slightly disappointed: "So it's not a damaged treasure, it's just that this big monk hasn't successfully refined it yet."

Even though it hasn't been successfully refined, this magic item's power is still enough to move people and it is worthy of the Thunder Shock Staff's name as a buddhist dharma weapon.

According to buddhist scriptures, in ancient times there was a tyrannical king, the people all indulged in the four cardinal vices, the vulgar aura reached the heavens and brought about divine retribution.

The country suffered a massive drought, sandstorms buried the entire country beneath the earth, torrential rains caused constant flooding, the plague spread everywhere, causing the deaths of all humans and animals within 10 thousand miles. The country was like purgatory.

Buddha arrived to preach the buddhist ways, not bearing to watch the people suffer in misery he was willing to sacrifice himself and take their sins upon him. In the heavens there was a

thunder god with a violent temperament, going so far as to cast down his divine artifact which pierced through Buddha's head.

But the spiritual divine artifact was moved by Buddha's benevolence, turning into a powerful buddhist weapon without rival, splitting the earth apart creating channels and guiding the floods into the ocean, dispelling the calamity.

And this magic item is the Thundershock Staff.

Lin Feng does not believe this kind of legend that is clearly just Buddhism putting feathers on its cap, but this doesn't interfere with him from understanding from this legend that the Thundershock Staff's greatest use is not in attacking but in resolving the attacks of others. Astounding defense is this magic item's true strength.

Lin Feng closely examined it for a moment. The Thundershock Staff is a foundation establishment stage magic item, it still hasn't been successfully refined yet, but it withstood the full-on attack of the Northern Aurora Sword that is also a foundation establishment stage magic item. Even though it was damaged, it was not directly destroyed, its defense is indeed worth praising.

While Lin Feng was thinking the Thundershock Staff in his hands suddenly started quivering. There seemed to be some sort of force attracting it, wanting it to break away from Lin Feng's control.

"It's Hui Ku, this monk has gotten his hands free." Lin Feng's

heart moved, he lifted up his hand and made a couple of strokes in the air, unleashing Heaven Cage Sigil and sealing the Thundershock Staff.

Hui Ku is a foundation establishment stage cultivator and the Thundershock Staff is also a foundation establishment stage magic item. Even if Lin Feng who is at qi disciple level 10 sets up the Heaven Cage Sigil, he originally would have been unable to seal the Thundershock Staff.

But the Thundershock Staff has after all not been successfully refined yet, moreover it took a hit of Lin Feng's Northern Aurora Mystic Light before. So even though it's struggling, it is unable to break through the Heaven Cage Sigil.

With the appearance of the Heaven Cage Sigil it immediately severed the connection between Hui Ku and the Thundershock Staff, making him unable to communicate with the Thundershock Staff and unable to sense the location of Lin Feng and the magic item.

Disregarding how furious the big monk is, Lin Feng brought along his two disciples along with Mr. Vulture who had the living daylights knocked out of him by Xiao Budian and went around this valley, continuing to chase after the Society of the Strong Gale and Zhu Yi from the other direction.

Along the way Lin Feng continuously studied the Thundershock Staff's structure, discovering that this magic item is refined using a buddhist technique, the traces left behind when Hui Ku refined it are perfectly preserved in the magic item.

“This makes things easy” Lin Feng smiled, other people are unable to learn spells and techniques from this kind of residual trace, even buddhist cultivators of the same school are unable to do so. But for Lin Feng it couldn’t be simpler.

Opening the spell analyzer in the system tools, all Lin Feng has to do is patiently wait.

“Analysis complete.” After a moment the system notification sound rose up beside Lin Feng’s ears, the spell analyzer had also listed out the detailed information.

Spell Name: Minor Samsara Technique

Type: Spell

Effect: Tell right from wrong, discern karma, guide the attacks of others to stray from the original path thereby achieving the goal of defense.

Through the spell analyzer Lin Feng very quickly understand all of the principles and essence of this spell, in turn grasping this spell.

Lin Feng took out the snake blood Xiao Budian and Xiao Yan collected. Being nurtured by the Thundershock Staff for so long, this giant python’s blood was actually all a light-golden colour. The blood was very thick but it didn’t congeal, it rippled with a faint glow.

After taking away a portion of the snake blood, Lin Feng put the Thundershock Staff in the snake blood and then started to use his own mana to circulate the buddhist spell the Minor Samsara Technique, continuing Hui Ku's unfinished work and refining this buddhist dharma weapon.

Golden light constantly flashed on the surface of the Thundershock Staff, just as if it were alive and breathing in and out. While breathing it was constantly absorbing the spiritual energy in the snake blood.

Hui Ku had already arrived at the final stage of refining this magic item, with just another few day's time he'd be able to finish the job. Yet in the end due to his greed and chasing after Xiao Yan it all went to Lin Feng.

In addition right now Lin Feng is disregarding all costs and spending great effort to refine it. In not even two day's time he successfully finished refining it.

The completely refined Thundershock Staff is completely golden, a radiant golden glow flows on the surface, waves of a sandalwood fragrance assail the nostrils and buddhist chanting fills the ears.

Being placed there, the entire magic item was wrapped in buddhist light and there were countless images flickering in the buddhist light.

Buddhas, arhats, monks, devas, the eight legions, giant elephants, magic trees... Countless figures of light appeared one

after another.

Moreover due to Hui Ku having already completed 99% of the work, even though it was Lin Feng who is a qi disciple stage cultivator who gave it the final push, this Thundershock Staff is still a foundation establishment stage magic item, this is what made Lin Feng the most satisfied.

Finishing refining the Thundershock Staff, Lin Feng threw it over to Xiao Yan. This is what he promised, this magic item can effectively bring up his disciple's strength.

Xiao Budian blinked his eyes while looking, going up and shaking Lin Feng's hands: "Master, I also want a foundation establishment stage magic item."

Lin Feng smiled saying: "Didn't you like that hammer?"

Xiao Budian grabbed the bone mace, scratching his head and laughing saying: "I do quite like it, too bad it's broken, why don't you help fix it master."

Lin Feng nodded his head: "There will be time, first master has some official business to do." While speaking he picked up Mr. Vulture who was unconscious on the ground.

The poor bald old man, his head was already filled with bumps from being hit by Xiao Budian. After Lin Feng used lightning to shock him awake, his first reaction was already no longer to open

his eyes but instead conditionally wanting to cover his head with his hands.

Unfortunately Xiao Budian had already made preparations, an animal tendon rope had already tied him up like a rice dumpling.

Struggling for a while but still not receiving the customary hammer, Mr. Vulture was dazed for a moment and then almost cried out in tears of joy.

The poor old man, every time he gets woken up he's already knocked unconscious in not even one second. The amount of time he's spent awake after waking up this time was actually more than all of the previous times combined.

Lin Feng looked at this scene in amusement, clearing his throat he asked: "How many people did the House of the Marquis of Xuanji send into the mountains to hunt the Society of the Strong Gale?"

Chapter 40: Nameless Underground Palace

“How many people did the House of the Marquis of Xuanji send into the mountains to hunt the Society of the Strong Gale?”

After spacing out for a moment Mr. Vulture asked hoarsely: “Who are you?” He wanted to turn around and see who it was, but when his body just moved he was firmly stepped on by someone and could only continue facing the dirt.

Lin Feng’s voice lightly traveled over: “You don’t have the right to ask questions. If you don’t want to die than obediently answer my questions.”

“You’re already pretty old, it’s not easy achieving foundation establishment stage, don’t you want to continue living and enjoy life?” Lin Feng smiled saying: “The Marquis of Xuanji is not your dad, you’re just working for him, there’s no need to put your life on the line, right?”

Mr. Vulture was silent for a moment, he said in a low voice: “Including me there are a total of 10 foundation establishment stage cultivators and over 100 qi disciple stage cultivators , Mister Huang San of the house of the Marquis is the head.”

Lin Feng asked: “Mr Huang San?”

Mr. Vulture was a bit surprised, Mister Huang San of the house of the Marquis is very famous, how come Lin Feng looks like he’s never heard of him?

But right now he's in Lin Feng's hands and doesn't dare to say anything extra, only introducing to him and saying: "Mister Huang San is the third steward of the house of the Marquis, he's always been responsible for the external affairs of the house of the Marquis." After pausing for a moment he added on saying: "Mister Huang San is a great aurous core stage cultivator."

Lin Feng smiled helplessly, the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu really does have a lot of swagger, using an aurous core stage cultivator as a steward. Moreover he's also just the third steward, above him there's still two even greater than him.

In principle, this kind of line-up should be able to take down that big monk Hui Ku, but the pretense is that they can't split up their forces and get sniped off by Hui Ku.

Lin Feng like at Mr. Vulture who was on the ground and nodded his head. Keeping him alive to go report to that Mister Huang San really does have its uses.

With an aurous core stage cultivator leading the group, even if Hui Ku has the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation he'll still have to watch out.

Giving the heads up towards Xiao Budian in the distance, the little guy carried the bone mace and swiftly ran over. Lin Feng gave him a look and Xiao Budian immediately walked over behind Mr. Vulture with a smiling face.

Even though Mr. Vulture was lying on the ground and couldn't see the scene behind his head, that familiar feeling of his hairs standing up and his scalp going numb once again appeared in his heart.

“No!”

Right now the bald old man did not have any other thoughts, as long as he isn't knocked unconscious again he's willing to pay any price.

But the progression of events does not changed with his will. Xiao Budian aimed at the back of his head, familiarly bringing the hammer down and once again knocking Mr. Vulture unconscious.

Lin Feng took away Mr. Vultures storage bag and shoved the old man into a stone cave. He then called over Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian and left.

Mr. Vulture is a subordinate of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, his cultivating resources are provided by the house of the Marquis and are very rich.

Lin Feng opened his storage bag. All kinds of panaceas and medicines made his eyes dazzled. He couldn't help but remark in his heart: “Money truly comes quick with one-sided trades.”

The storage bag also has a dao technique, it's name is the Blue Oceanic River Technique. It is a water class dao technique and can

increase the practitioner's mana density.

Water itself is something which wins in quantity, the denser it is the stronger its power. Cultivators who practice water class dao techniques usually all have denser and more abundant mana than other cultivators of the same level.

This Blue Oceanic River Technique is exactly so. It can increase the density of the practitioner's mana. When the dao technique reaches completeness, the practitioner's mana is like a surging river, boundless and vigorous, a force unstoppable.

Right now Lin Feng is already practicing two dao techniques, the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique and the Art of Acala. The lightning and fire mana cultivated by the two dao techniques are both extremely domineering and fierce, but the speed of consumption is also quick.

Currently Lin Feng's main attack method is the foundation establishment stage weapon the Northern Aurora Sword and it is extremely mana heavy. If Lin Feng can cultivate the Blue Oceanic River Technique, under the circumstances that his level doesn't change, his total mana will have a huge increase which is more convenient for him to control the Northern Aurora Sword.

For Lin Feng, this water class dao technique is undoubtedly a timely rain.

Others who practice a dao technique have to start from the very beginning, but using the hidden attribute of the system Lin Feng

can easily finish it.

Feeling in his ten already opened meridian points the surging mana that is at the very least 30% more abundant than usual, Lin Feng smiled in satisfaction.

While circulating the Blue Oceanic Rive Technique, Lin Feng traveled along, very quickly catching up to the people of The Society of the Strong Gale.

Instead of saying caught up, it would be better to say that the people of the Society of the Strong Gale stopped on the spot.

The black-clothed man with a knife scar on his face was standing at the edge of a cliff with an overcast expression on his face, all of the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale were gathered at his side.

Zhu Yi was being closely guarded by two people and travelling within the forest. His green clothes that had already become blached from repeated washing had several cuts on it, he looks like a mess but his expression is still calm.

One cultivator of the Society of the Strong Gale couldn't resist saying: "You think that monk was killed? He's always bluffing and looking down on people, now he's shown his true form."

The black-clothed man stroked the scar on his face, calmly saying: "Don't underestimate him, unless the opponent is an

aurous core stage cultivator Hui Ku will not have any problems.”

“That monk is very skilled, if it wasn’t so we wouldn’t be thinking about wanting to pull him in.”

The cultivator beside him asked: “Then we just wait here?”

The black-clothed man lightly sighed saying: “I’m not waiting for Hui Ku, I’m waiting for those two mates who went to chase that fatty.”

“Zhu Hongwu that old dog sent out pursuers so quickly, this means that fatty successfully escaped back and informed them. Right now I just hope those two mates are clever enough to retreat after seeing that things aren’t too well.” The black-clothed man’s brows were in a knot: “But after so many days they still haven’t come back to meet up, I’m afraid... Sigh!”

All of the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators fell into silence, the black-clothed man took a deep breath: “The pursuers are already drawing near, we can’t wait anymore.”

Finishing speaking he took out a strangely shaped spiritual stone from his shirt, flicking his hand and throwing it into the air. Various spell signs altered in his hands, after forming several spell signs large amounts of spiritual energy started to surge according to an intriguing rhythm and beat.

Lin Feng was secretly observing the entire time from far away.

Seeing the black-clothed man's actions he instantly took heed.

The spiritual stone flashed a couple of times in the air and then suddenly vanished.

As for the steep mountainside below the cliff, after the light vanished it suddenly lit up with light. A cave entrance had surprisingly appeared on the originally ordinary stone wall.

The instant the cave entrance appeared, Lin Feng sensed a strong spiritual energy from within leak out. This is definitely not a regular mountain cave, it's more like the entrance of a certain blessed cultivation spot.

The black-clothed man's action just now was not to remove a certain illusion hiding the cave entrance, but instead using the spiritual stone as a key and opening the passage towards this blessed cultivation spot.

This place is evidently one of the Society of the Strong Gale's paths of retreat that they'd already gained control of. Right now they have become trapped, thus they decisively used it.

The black-clothed man took the lead and jumped down the cliff, his body sliding into the cave on the mountain wall. The rest of the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale immediately brought along Zhu Yi, following closely behind him in an orderly fashion and entering into the cave together.

Lin Feng didn't dare tarry, bringing along his two disciples and quickly arriving at the bottom of the cliff. Luckily the cave entrance is still open, it did not reclose after the people of the Society of the Strong Gale entered inside.

Master and disciple entered into the cave. Looking inside of the cave they could faintly see that it is a tunnel. Travelling down the tunnel Lin Feng calculated the distance, the tunnel actually goes deep beneath the ground.

Moving forward, there appeared several forks, numerous tunnels extended in all directions. This cave is actually a complex underground palace.

At the moment Lin Feng was frowning because he suddenly discovered that he actually couldn't sense Zhu Yi's location anymore.

This underground palace has abundant spiritual energy, but also has large amounts of foul energy that was also mixing together with the spiritual energy and appearing exceptionally chaotic.

Under this kind of chaotic environment Lin Feng is unable to resonate with the crystal that he left on Zhu Yi.

At the same time, the system notification sound suddenly rose up beside Lin Feng's ears.

Chapter 41: Random Side Quest

“Host has triggered random side quest, Black Cloud Underground Palace.”

Lin Feng was dazed for a moment before reacting over. He’s already got a quest on his hands that he still hasn’t even completed yet, and this damned system has actually given out a new quest.

Could this also be time-bound or else he’ll be killed?

Lin Feng shakingly opened up the quest description.

Random Side Quest, Black Cloud Underground Palace.

Quest Background: The underground palace was originally the cultivation abode of the wandering cultivator Daoist Master Hei Yun. When Daoist Master Hei Yun established his abode he accidentally opened up a void space, causing the lowest level of the underground palace to be connected with the Nether Blood River. Daoist Master Hei Yun suffered disaster and died.

Quest Goal: Host obtains Daoist Master Hei Yun’s soul-bound magic item the Black Cloud Flag that he lost in the cultivation abode.

Quest Time-Limit: Seven days, quest becomes invalid if it is not completed on time.

“Quest becomes invalid?” Lin Feng blinked his eyes and let out a long sigh of relief.

The system may be full of crap, but it always screws him over upfront and not secretly behind his back. Since it says there’s no penalty if the quest is unfinished when the time limit is reached, then there shouldn’t be any danger.

Looking at it now, only the main questline has a death penalty while side quests are a lot better. If completed there’s probably a reward, if imcompleted then that’s okay too.

Lin Feng’s mind started to turn: “Daoist Master Hei Yun, Daoist Master... Then he’s an aurous core stage cultivator.”

The Heaven Primal world has a couple of common rules, aurous core stage cultivators can be called daoist master and primordial spirit stage cultivators can be called true lord or progenitor.

These titles are all universally acknowledged and are not easily wrong. If a foundation establishment stage cultivator dares to call himself daoist master so-and-so, then that’s not even a problem of being laughed at, trouble could very likely come knocking on the door.

But the quest background mentioned that the deepest part of this Black Cloud Underground Palace is actually connected to the Nether Blood River, this instantly made Lin Feng’s balls hurt.

Legend says that in the Netherworld there is an endless and boundless Nether Blood River, within it flows tainted blood that is called Absolute Blood River Water.

Absolute Blood River Water is one of the seven great absolute waters of the world and is also a water of uttermost evil and foulness. It is the most foul thing in the world, even the greatest spells and most spiritual magic items, as long as they are stained with the slightest bit they will instantly be polluted and lose their mana.

This cultivation abode's previous owner fell precisely to this blood river, such danger made Lin Feng quite hesitant.

The people of the Society of the Strong Gale are also probably just moving around on the upper level of the underground palace, they still might not know yet that this place harbors a great danger.

"I guess I'll just see as I go, anyhow I've got to go down to find Zhu Yi, at most I just won't go to the deepest part." Lin Feng thought for a moment and then made up his mind. He then said towards his two disciples beside him: "This underground palace is not ordinary, you guys stick close to me and don't run around."

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian can both see the serious expression on their master's face. Thinking that even their "almighty" master was so serious the two people nodded their heads at once.

Lin Feng waved his sleeves: "Let's go."

Deep in the underground palace, the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale held on to Zhu Yi and were hastily advancing.

They've already walked out of the tunnel, appearing in front of them is a massive pit. The group of people followed along the edge of the pit and went around, the narrow pathway only allowed one person to advance sideways, looking incredibly dangerous.

The black-clothed man said while walking: "Everybody watch your step, if you fall from here we won't even be able to find your bones."

Amongst the group, Zhu Yi's eyes flashed and he lowered his head.

As if knowing what he was thinking in his heart, the black-clothed man said coldly: "Don't have any ideas, everybody here can crush you like crushing a mosquito."

Zhu Yi was silent.

One cultivator of the Society of the Strong Gale asked: "Head, isn't this place our secret base in the heart of the Zhou Dynasty?"

That black-clothed man said: "This is a cultivation abode an elder master left behind. It's already been abandoned for a long time,

spiritual and foul energies exist together so it hasn't been discovered by anyone this entire time, the Society also only just discovered it not too long ago by accident.”

“After exploration it was discovered that this place is not suitable for cultivation, but we could set up a transportation formation. Its distance is not far away from the Zhou dogs' capital city Tianjing, so we used this place as a path of retreat to help us retreat after our operation.”

Speaking here, the black-clothed man's expression was a bit pale, touching the scar on his face with a lingering fear: “But this underground palace still has a lot of things that we haven't figured out, especially the depths of the underground palace. Not a single one of the mates who went in to investigate returned, they all went missing!”

Speaking here, all of the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators subconsciously glanced at the pitch-black pit beneath their feet. That place is like a bottomless abyss, and also like a monster opening its giant mouth, devouring all who dare to pry.

Zhu Yi's blood also froze from listening, looking at the abyss below his feet his expression was terrified.

Nobody had the mood to talk, in the darkness only the fluorite in their hands released a faint glow that constantly flickered.

The group of people went around the giant pit, in front of them appeared the entrance of another tunnel. Zhu Yi closely observed

it, different from the previous tunnels that they passed through, this tunnel is clearly newly dug.

Through this tunnel is the location of the the transportation formation set up by the Society of the Strong Gale. It can shift the space between two fixed locations, but only once. If it weren't for the fact that they didn't have any other choice, the black-clothed man really didn't want to use it.

Especially since after their exposure this time, this cultivation abode will definitely be discovered by the Zhou Dynasty. Even if they want to set up another formation it would be impossible.

The black-clothed man shook his head: "Wait here for a bit, if Hui Ku and them still can't catch up then we can only go on ahead first."

"Whether or not other people can catch up is not important, as long as we catch up then it's good."

In the dark space a voice suddenly rose up. The expressions of all of the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale paled. the next moment they saw a human figure appear in the air, just steadily standing in the air above the abyss like that.

The black-clothed man's heart sank, they were still caught up to.

Wave after wave of powerful mana fluctuations sprang up in the surroundings, right now the hearts of the people of the Society of

the Strong Gale sank to the bottom.

Seven, a whole seven foundation establishment stage cultivators have surrounded them.

Amongst them, besides the leading black-clothed man being a foundation establishment stage cultivator, the rest of them are all qi disciple stage. Yet the opposing side has a whole seven foundation establishment stage cultivators, just half of them can take care of them all.

The middle-age man in purple fine clothes at the front laughed saying: “Stay behind all of you.” His two hands rising up together, nine rings of light flew out from his palms, heading towards the heads of the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale.

The rings of light looked to be flying very slowly, when they arrived above their heads they suddenly stopped. Each ring of light released a white pillar of light, beaming on their respective person.

One Society of the Strong Gale cultivator released a loud shout, bringing up a water spell to withstand it and casting a water screen before him, but it did not have any effect, the pillar of light beamed onto his body unhindered.

No changes occurred when the white pillar of light beamed on his body. The Society of the Strong Gale cultivator was dazed, he didn't understand why a foundation establishment stage cultivator would do such a meaningless thing.

But the next moment, the pillar of light suddenly changed from white to red. Being beamed on by the red pillar of light, the eyes of the cultivator of the Society of the Strong Gale instantly went blank, his entire body was completely frozen as if he had been hit with a petrification spell, he couldn't move even a pinky finger.

At this time, the ring of light in the air followed the red pillar of light and landed downwards, slipping onto his neck and then directly carrying away that Society of the Strong Gale cultivator flying upwards, his body uncontrollably flew towards that purple-fine-clothed middle-age man.

The nine rings of light each completed their tasks, capturing alive nine cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale in an instant.

Don't mention fighting back, these Society of the Strong Gale cultivators couldn't even put an end to themselves.

Capturing these nine people, the purple-fine-clothed middle-age man took off the rings of light around their necks, but they still couldn't move. The purple-fine-clothed middle-age man repeated the same steps, waving his hands the nine rings of light then flew towards the remaining cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale.

The black-clothed man released a furious shout and brought out a small drum. The pounding sounds of the small drum rose up, the piercing sound made the six foundation establishment stage cultivators on the other side all involuntarily frown.

The sound of the drum brought up waves of invisible ripples, blocking the nine rings of light in the air making them unable to fly over.

The purple-fine-clothed middle-age man slightly frowned, he said towards the other people: “Friends of the Five Elements Sect, please give a helping hand.”

Amongst the remaining six people, five people were wearing apparel of the same style but the colours were all different. They were white, green, black, red and yellow, signifying the five elements metal, wood, fire, water and earth.

The leading yellow-clothed old man let out a dry cough: “No need to be courteous fellow daoist, this is part of our duties.”

In an instant, powerful mana fluctuations surged together from the bodies of the five people, filling the entire space.

The black-clothed man’s expression slightly changed, he shouted saying: “We the Society of the Strong Gale have operated here for years, how can we allow you guys to run wild here?” Finishing speaking he crushed a jade tablet, the originally chaotic spiritual energy in the underground palace suddenly became calm.

A spell formation flashing with a dazzling spiritual light surfaced in the air, the sound of wind travelled out from the formation.

The next moment, massive tornadoes rushed out from the formation, roaring towards the seven cultivators of the house of the Marquis like angry dragons. (TL: Probably irrelevant, but the Chinese word for tornado, hurricane, twister, etc contains the word dragon.)

A dozen of tornadoes rampaged around, mingling together and turning the cave into a world of storms.

Everything in the path of the tornadoes were all ripped to shreds, on the stone walls they left behind countless deep gashes.

For a while, violent winds howled and the earth split as if it were the end of the world.

This spell formation is enough to rip apart foundation establishment stage cultivators, only those with auras core stage strength can remain safe.

But those five cultivators of the Five Elements Sect were not nervous. Looking at each other the yellow-clothed old man amongst them laughed saying: “We’ll have you see what we can do.”

The five people launched their spells together, shouting out together: “Inverse Five Elements Demon Sealing Formation!”

Five-coloured divine light rose up to the skies, instantly illuminating the entire cave, even the pitch-black abyss below

became brightened.

Them five people come from the same sect, each of them practises a dao technique of a different attribute. This Inverse Five Elements Demon Sealing Formation the five people work together to set up is enough to suppress all enemies below auras core stage!

The violent gale was overwhelmed by the five-coloured divine light, being frozen in the air and unable to continue wreaking havoc.

Right now the black-clothed man was soaked in sweat, on one side he has to control the small drum to intercept the purple-fine-clothed middle-age man's rings of light, on the other side he also has to urge the spell formation to confront the enemy's Inverse Five Elements Demon Sealing Formation.

Being attacked on two fronts, even if he has the homeground advantage he's still being heavily suppressed.

Right when he was feeling anxious, a voice unhurriedly rose up: "Why are you guys so slow? Seven against one and you guys still need so much time?"

The next moment, a human figure surfaced in the air, just steadily standing in the air above the abyss like that and looking down on everyone.

Chapter 42: Out Of The Lion's Den And Then Into The Wolf's Lair

Even though he is in the middle of mortal combat with the enemy, the black-clothed man completely ignored those seven foundation establishment stage cultivators. It's not that he doesn't care, but that all of his attention was placed on that person in mid-air.

The person did not reveal even a hint of mana fluctuations, but it's precisely because of this that he is so terrifying. It needs to be known that he is floating in the air using only his own mana, beneath his feet is a bottomless abyss.

That is a middle-aged man, he is white and fat and looks like a ball of kindness when he smiles. He is even fatter than Fatty Zhu who went to look for Zhu Yi's trouble before. After this person appeared, those seven foundation establishment cultivators of the house of the Marquis stopped attacking.

The black-clothed man was still suffering from shock and also did not dare to act rashly.

The fat middle-aged man smilingly looked at Zhu Yi in the crowd of people, saying gently: "Young Master Yi, I'm here to take you home."

Against this middle-aged man here to save him, Zhu Yi's expression was even worse than those of the black-clothed man and co. He tightly clenched his fists and did not say anything.

The black-clothed man took a deep breath: “How do I address you?”

The middle-aged man lightly smiled: “You might have heard of my name before, the name’s Huang, people are used to calling me Huang San. (TL: 三, san, means, three, since he’s the third steward of the Marquis.)

Fatty Huang San still smiled amiably, but the faces of the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale had become as pale as death.

Huang San, the third steward under the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu and his close confidant. He is specially responsible for dealing with some private matters for the Marquis of Xuanji. He is cruel and merciless and has significant fame, but he keeps a low-profile, very few people have seen his true face, but who would have thought that he is a fat middle-aged man.

Right now the black-clothed man’s entire body was as if he’d fallen through ice, because he knows that this fatty in front them who looks like a friendly merchant is an honest to god auras core stage cultivator!

But the hatred of his fallen country, the vengeance of his people, his pride, his hatred, his anger, all made it impossible for him to submit before this person before him.

The faces of all of the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale

revealed a steadfast expression, even if their bodies slightly trembled from instinctive fear, they still stood shoulder-to-shoulder, facing head-on the powerful foe in front of their eyes who can obliterate them with just one finger.

Huang San let out a long sigh: “Snowgale Country... No, now it’s our Zhou Dynasty’s Snowgale County. If you ask me, we should kill all of the natives and then immigrate people over from within the Zhou Dynasty, then there wouldn’t be any problems.” (TL: Genocide, does it work? History says... sometimes.)

The black-clothed man flew into a rage and manipulated the tornado spell formation, in an instant dozens of tornadoes roared out, attacking Huang San from different angles and directions.

Huang San laughed, a pair of eyes squinting to the point that they almost couldn’t be seen: “You guys still can’t figure out the situation.”

Before his voice had even died away, Huang San lifted up his hand slightly, a chilling wind like it had come from the abysmal depths of hell instantly swept through the entire underground palace!

Almost in an instant, this underground palace directly turned into a world of ice and snow. The stone walls were covered in a layer of crystal clear ice, a dazzling radiance flashes when the fluorite shines onto it. The entire space became brightened.

In the time of one breath, the entire underground palace turned

into an ice hole.

The raging tornadoes were stopped in their tracks and frozen in pillars of ice. They still maintained their previous state, but looking at them now they were incredibly laughable.

This was just the start, what was frozen in ice was far from just the tornadoes.

Starting from the black-clothed man, a layer of white frost had formed from thin air on the surface of the bodies of all of the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators. In the end they were about to be turned into ice sculptures.

Yet, Zhu Yi who was standing in the middle of them was safe and sound. Not only was he not attacked by the ice, Zhu Yi couldn't even feel a change in the surrounding temperature.

The black-clothed man's expression changed rapidly, biting his teeth he raised his hand and threw out a talisman.

In the air, Huang San's eyes flashed: "An aurous core talisman?" The talisman the black-clothed man threw out was shockingly an aurous core talisman. It is created by an aurous core stage cultivator and its power is the same as the full-powered attack of an aurous core stage cultivator.

The talisman exploded in mid-air, turning into rolling thunder, countless snakes of lightning shot out in all directions, ripping

apart Huang San's mana blockade in an instant.

Countless cracks appeared on the surface of the ice, crawling out like spider webs. The dazzling light of the lightning shone on the ice, illuminating the underground palace as if it were the daytime.

Countless pieces of ice broke apart, falling into the abyss below like it was raining. Amongst the calamity, the entire underground palace was like a doomsday where all hell had broken loose.

Even the expressions of those six foundation establishment stage cultivators who came with Huang San paled, doing their best to steady themselves. But they could still be considered calm, their eyes all looked towards the air at the lightning's direct target, Huang San.

Huang San's expression was as usual, he even had the spare time to laugh: "A dying struggle." Lifting up his two palms, at this moment powerful mana revealed its towering presence, the massive space seemed to have frozen, at this moment the surging cold air actually froze the violent lightning!

In the snow-white chilly air, the violently thrashing lightning was like a bound flying dragon, but under the imprisonment of the cold air its movements became more and more stiff.

The cave that seemed like an earthquake was happening before had also calmed down at this moment, the doomsday-like sight had been casually quelled by Huang San.

Huang San smiled saying: “As auras core stage cultivators, there is still a separation of high and low.”

The cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale became even more frightened, Huang San treats the talisman that possesses the attack of an auras core stage cultivator as nothing.

The black-clothed man glanced at Zhu Yi, not daring to have any hesitation he grabbed Zhu Yi and directly threw him towards the abyss under their feet. He then charged towards the transportation spell formation in the depths of the tunnel without even turning his head.

Huang San smiled, splitting out a sliver of mana, he was about to catch Zhu Yi who was falling downward, but a strong foul energy suddenly surged up from the bottom of the abyss.

This foul energy was like a slumbering monster that had been suddenly awoken by the previous events.

“Hm?” Huang San’s eyes that had already become a slit jerked open, his fat body disappeared on the spot and at the next moment appeared in front of Zhu Yi, at the same time he also came in contact with that foul energy.

Cold air coiled around Huang San’s body, a lot of it was eroded by the foul energy, but he still suppressed the foul energy using his powerful mana.

But with this tiny distraction the black-clothed man and the couple of Society of the Strong Gale cultivators had already seized the chance and ran into the tunnel, activating the transportation spell formation.

The smile on Huang San's face vanished, lifting his hand he formed a spell sign. The cold air instantly surged, wanting to freeze even the transportation spell formation.

The black-clothed man could also be considered very resolute, to fight for more time he threw away without any hesitation Zhu Yi whom they had worked hard to capture. But Huang San's cultivation level is too high, even though he first blocked the aurous core talisman and then saved Zhu Yi, in the end he still has the ability to intercept them.

Too bad at the critical moment, that strange cloud of foul energy that rose up from the abyss helped out the black-clothed man. With this moment of delay Huang San was ultimately a step too slow.

The transportation spell formation had already been activated, under the influence of Huang San's mana, the space the spell formation opened up was twisted and crooked, even ripping in half the body of one of the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators, but in the end it did open up a void path, allowing the black-clothed man and the others to escape.

Huang San said with a chuckle: "A couple of rats, though they are pretty slippery, but with my interference it's impossible for you guys to be transported to the predetermined location. You'll be

lucky if you don't die in the void turbulence.”

Zhu Yi who was being grabbed by him in the hand did not say anything.

Huang San stared at Zhu Yi, his eyes nearly unseeable from smiling: “These couple of little rascals are pretty smart, finding this kind of place with impure spiritual energy. Regular people who enter are completely unable to search this place, but people from small areas have short insight, they don't know that under this kind of environment, auras core stage cultivators can still locate their targets.

“Thank heavens we didn't let Young Master Yi you fall into the hands of those rebels, or else the Marquis' face would have been completely shamed by you.”

The other seven foundation establishment stage cultivators looked at Zhu Yi, their faces all revealing a playful smile like cats playing with a mouse.

Zhu Yi felt helpless in his heart, with just a sweep of his eyes he recognized these cultivators, they are all cultivators attached to the first wife of the Marquis of Xuanji, Lady Shao.

Even Huang San before him, even though he is the Marquis of Xuanji's confidant, he is also Lady Shao's trusted subordinate and regularly acts to deal with some shady matters for Lady Shao.

For example right now, Zhu Yi believes that he definitely doesn't mind conveniently killing him off and then pushing the blame onto those people from the Society of the Strong Gale.

This really is coming out of the lion's den and then entering into the wolf's lair.

Sure enough, Huang San said smilingly: "A living Young Master Yi, no matter what cannot land in the hands of scum and then be used by them to threaten the Marquis. The Marquis naturally will not compromise, but if news spreads then the Marquis' face will also be shamed."

"But, if Young Master Yi is unwilling to make his father the Marquis distressed due to filiality and ends his own life, refusing to yield even in death, then if that spreads out it will instead be a beautiful anecdote, right?"

While speaking, Huang San's beady eyes stared tightly at Zhu Yi, his entire body emitting a dangerous aura.

Zhu Yi instantly felt his heart being clenched by an invisible hand that rubbed vigorously, all of the blood in his body gathered in his heart, wanting to blast apart his heart!

Zhu Yi's pupils gradually dilated, his eyes started to lose their light.

"I... Am I about to die here?"

Chapter 43: Mt. Shu Sword Cultivator

Zhu Yi's life force was gradually fading away.

Huang San's fat face was still all happy and cheerful, a pair of beady eyes emitting a cruel light. He was in the middle of slowly torturing Zhu Yi when his expression slightly changed and he looked in the direction behind him.

At the exit of a tunnel, there stood a young man in clothes as white as snow and wearing a green bamboo hat.

The young man raised his head, revealing the face beneath the bamboo hat. His face could be considered regular, his skin was extremely white and he had a couple of white spots on his face.

What attracted the most attention on this person's body is the sword at his waist. On the scabbard is carved a decorous and ancient landscape carving.

All of the people on the scene besides Zhu Yi who was already slowly losing his consciousness, when seeing that sword all of their pupils retracted: "A person from the Mt. Shu Sword Sect?"

Even though he was raising his head looking at Huang San who was in the air, his expression was completely condescending. He spread his lips and grinned: "Fatty, have you seen a young daoist wearing a white robe and daoist clothes, he has two children with him?"

The young man's tone of voice was frivolous and rude, even though Huang San still had a smile on his face, his eyes had already become cold.

In front of the Marquis of Xuanji, Huang San is a lackey, but other people do not dare to belittle this close confidant of the Marquis of Xuanji.

Don't mention the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, even in all of the Zhou Dynasty, the majority of people all have to respectfully call him Mister Huang San when facing him.

The couple of foundation establishment stage cultivators especially revealed an expression of discontent. One foundation establishment stage cultivator who hadn't made a move before, thinking that it would be inexcusable if he didn't have any display, wanted to curry favor with Huang San, and so he spoke out reprimanding and saying: "This is Mister Huang San of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, behave yourself or else even the Mt. Shu Sword Sect won't be able to protect you!"

Hearing this, the bamboo hat young man only silently laughed, not even shifting his gaze over.

But the sword at his waist suddenly unsheathed, turning into a flash of cold light and shooting towards the foundation establishment stage cultivator.

Huang San's face darkened: "Impudent!" The boundless cold air

condensed, wanting the freeze this bamboo hat young man's sword.

But when the bamboo hat young man's sword aura was about to come in contact with the cold air, it actually suddenly vanished.

Huang San was slightly dazed, the next moment his expression drastically changed, shouting out: "Careful!"

Before that foundation establishment stage cultivator who was being attacked could even react, the sword aura that had originally disappeared suddenly reappeared in front of him only inches away!

The sword aura pierced through his head and then flew back into the bamboo hat young man's scabbard.

At this moment, this foundation establishment stage cultivator finally reacted over. He opened his mouth wanting to speak, but no sounds came out. A bloodstain slowly surfaced between his two brows, suddenly exploding in the next moment, fresh blood sprayed in the air.

"You've got big balls!" Huang San's face was livid, swinging his arm and throwing Zhu Yi to a subordinate. Without the suppression of his mana, Zhu Yi finally regained consciousness, coughing out a big mouthful of congested blood. His face was ghostly pale as if he had been seriously ill.

Yet, right now Huang Yan could no longer attend to him, his fat

face was covered in frost: “Cutting apart space, Mt. Shu’s Shaoze Sword truly lives up to its reputation, but you threw your weight around in the wrong place. This is the Zhou Dynasty, and the person you killed belongs to the House of the Marquis of Xuanji!”

The bamboo hat young man spread his lips and grinned: “I’m asking you if you’ve seen a young daoist wearing a white robe and daoist clothes bringing along children.”

Huang San laughed from extreme fury: “The Mt. Shu Sword Sect really have become accustomed to arrogance, even daring to killing people from the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, don’t think of leaving the Zhou Dynasty alive!”

The bamboo hat youth smiled saying: “Looks like you don’t plan on answering my question, then there’s no use in leaving you alive either.” Finishing speaking, the sword aura once again left the scabbard.

“Seal the world in ice, cover the world in frost!” Huang San laughed angrily, his two hands forming a spell sign. Instantly, wind and snow surged in all of the underground palace, cold air condensed together, the air was a vast expanse of white haziness.

As for the remaining foundation establishment stage cultivators and Zhu Yi, even though Huang San’s target wasn’t them, just the ripples made them practically about to be frozen stiff.

Not only were their bodies frozen, even their thinking became slow, their minds were unable to keep turning.

This is the indication that even their souls are about to be frozen!

To guard against the enemies flying sword that can flash through the void, Huang San pushed his mana to the limit. Cold air was spread all over the surroundings of his body, no matter where the flying sword appears he can defend against it.

“It’s true that Mt. Shu’s Shaoze Sword is tricky and unpredictable, but it walks an unconventional path, its direct attack power is insufficient. As an aurous core sword cultivator it’s naturally easy for him to kill a foundation establishment stage, but if he wants to fight me then he’s got the wrong idea!”

Huang San was in the middle of thinking when the bamboo hat young man’s voice travelled over from within the cold air: “The Zhou Dynasty? The Marquis of Xuanji? They are indeed very powerful, but the problem is that you are very weak. Making me unable to leave the Zhou Dynasty alive, Zhu Hongwu can say this, but you can’t. Not to mention even Zhu Hong Yu, I will eventually surpass him one day.”

The cold air in the underground palace suddenly fluctuated violently, a domineering sword aura of cold steel burst through the encirclement of the cold air, cutting straight towards Huang San.

This beam of sword aura was radiant and dazzling, a cold light flashed on the surface of the sword. Even every beam of light emitted by it was a beam of domineering, unstoppable sword aura.

This sword was as if hundreds of thousands of sword aura gathered together, thousands of swords united as one, sweeping away all obstacles!

Different from the Shaoze Sword that can shift through the void, this sword did not have fancy changes, only strength of the uttermost extreme.

Huang San paled with shock: “It’s not the Shaoze Sword but the most fearsome and domineering Shaoshang sword of the Six Meridian Swords of Mt. Shu? He actually has simultaneous mastery of two types of swords?!” In a hurry Huang San condensed his mana, forming a Mystic Ice Shield before him.

This is Huang San’s strongest defense technique, even when facing the aurous core talisman before he didn’t use it, but right now he’s using it without any hesitation.

But everything was futile, against this bamboo hat young man’s sky-rending sword, the boundless fog of cold air, dispersed! The Mystic Ice Shield, broke!

Watching the sword aura arrive in front of him, Huang San howled in unresignation: “The ice-age cannot be shaken!”

A layer of ice and snow appeared over Huang San, it was as if his entire body had been frozen into an ice cube, like million-year old ice, hard, rigid and unbreakable! At the same time crystal clear and incredibly ancient and heavy!

But, it was still useless!

In Huang San's terrified gaze, the sword aura completely ignored his defense, cutting into his body like a knife through tofu, and then exploding in his body. Instantly, thousands of sword aura shot out from Huang San's body.

Huang San's fat body was like a burst balloon, bursting apart in the air and turning into a cloud of blood.

The sword aura that exploded outward did not stop, riddling the surrounding frozen stone walls with hundreds of holes and turning them into swiss cheese.

Zhu Yi blankly stared at the bamboo hat young man who put back his sword into his scabbard, the foundation establishment stage cultivators of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji beside him were also completely dumbfounded.

One sword, with just one sword this bamboo hat young man killed Huang San who was also at the aurous core stage.

Huang San still had a lot of cards up his sleeves that he didn't use, he even couldn't blow up his aurous core and was killed by the enemy.

Zhu Yi suddenly had the impulse to laugh, Huang San's line of "As aurous core stage cultivators, there is still a separation of high and low" was still fresh in his ears, yet now he himself has become

the best example for this line.

“Wait a sec, a young daoist in white robes and wearing daoist clothes, that’s pretty similar to that person I met in the temple that day, could it be...” A thought suddenly appeared in Zhu Yi’s heart, he lowered his head not speaking: “I wonder who’s stronger, him or this Mt. Shu sword cultivator?”

The bamboo hat young man looked at them, spreading his lips and grinning: “Remember my name, Liu Yan, I will be the person to kill Zhu Hongwu.”

Watching the dazed people, Liu Yang pulled down his bamboo hat, turning around and leaving: “Boring, too boring, I think I’ll continue looking for that young daoist who humiliated the Blaze Sword Sect.”

He licked his lips and chuckled saying: “This person should be right in this underground palace, I hope he can bring me some entertainment.”

Lin Feng’s current mood was extremely bad.

“Rumble—” A blood river roared and surged before him, it was dark and gloomy, releasing a nauseating foul smell that assaulted the nose. Just inhaling this smell, Lin Feng could feel the circulation of his own mana become difficult and obscure.

A moment ago, a strong mana shock suddenly exploded within the underground palace, as a result affecting the fluctuations in space. Lin Feng and co. who were on their way got drawn into the spatial rift and were directly transported to the depths of the underground palace.

Luckily the three people were not separated, but Lin Feng never thought they they would actually be transported to the side of the Nether Blood River underground.

Lin Feng stared at this water of utmost evil and foulness of this world with the urge to weep, while on the surface towards his two disciples he still has act like everything is within his control, calmly introducing this Nether Blood River to them and telling them to distance themselves from this water of utmost foulness.

Hearing the dangers of the Nether Blood River, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian were both pale in the face, closely following behind Lin Feng and avoiding the Blood River like the plague.

While walking Lin Feng pondered: “That Black Cloud Flag magic item may be good, but it’s not important. If I obtain it then that’s my luck, if not then such is my life. Zhu Yi on the other hand, after spending this much effort I have to get my hands on this disciple.”

While thinking, Xiao Budian who was at the side suddenly tugged on Lin Feng’s sleeve: “Master, look over there.”

Lin Feng came out of his thoughts, looking over following the direction of Xiao Budian’s finger. He saw a short-haired man in

grey clothes covered in blood, meditating beside the Nether Blood River and looking like a complete mess. It was precisely Monk Hui Ku from before.

Hui Ku had a painful and gloomy expression, a golden buddhist light flickered over his body. On the surface of the buddhist light, green flames and red splatters of blood were intertwined together.

Lin Feng understood what was happening: “This monk, he was somehow tainted with the True Blood River Water and is currently using the buddhist light to protect his body and then using the green flames to expel the tainted blood.”

Seeing this scene, a warm smile like the spring sun habitually surfaced on Lin Feng’s face.

Chapter 44: Relentlessly Beating The Dog In The Water

Looking at Hui Ku who was painstakingly expelling the tainted blood, Lin Feng's face released a dazzling smile.

Relentlessly beating the dog in the water always puts people in a happy mood.

His disciple clearly has the same thoughts as him. Xiao Yan stared at this scene, cracking his knuckles: "This damned baldy, serves him right."

Lin Feng said: "Little Yan, hand your Thundershock Staff over to master."

Xiao Yan took out the Thundershock Staff and followed Lin Feng's words handing it over. Lin Feng grabbed the Thundershock Staff with one hand, his other hand quietly pulling out the golden paper recording the Kṣitigarbha Sutra, silently feeling the mana fluctuations that occasionally pulsed from within these two items.

Before when he refined the Thundershock Staff he already felt an abnormality with the golden paper, but he didn't pay much attention to it. Now after close examination, Lin Feng could confirm that there is a faint resonance between the two items.

Lin Feng thought about it for a moment, a plan already appearing

in his heart. He called over his two disciples, still handing the Thundershock Staff over to Xiao Yan and giving the golden paper Xiao Budian.

“Today I’ll give you guys an exercise, shortly afterwards master will only hold down the line and will not easily act out.” Lin Feng nonchalantly said, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian looked at each other, simultaneously swallowing their saliva.

Xiao Yan said hesitantly: “Master, are you telling just us two to go face that damned baldy? He may be a dog in the water right now, but at any rate he’s still a foundation establishment stage cultivator. Not mentioning any of this, the key point is that magic item of his, 100 of me isn’t even enough.”

Xiao Budian’s eyes turned, looking at the golden paper in his hands: “Master, you have a plan, right?”

Lin Feng felt a bit guilty. A plan is in the end just a plan, moreover it’s a plan built upon his speculations, he doesn’t dare to promise that it’ll work.

But on the surface Lin Feng still maintained the appearance that everything was within his control, even slanting his eyes towards Xiao Yan: “Learn from your junior apprentice-brother, would master let you guys do something without any confidence?”

Xiao Yan twitched his lips not speaking.

Lin Feng grinned saying: “You guys don’t need to worry about that monk, the test master is giving to you guys is to break his 24 Heaven Arhat Formation. The things I gave to you guys are the items to break the formation. Shortly afterwards follow my instructions and breaking the formation will be easy as pie.”

The two disciples all became energized, cracking their knuckles and staring at Hui Ku who was in the distance. In Tianjing City they were miserably bullied by Hui Ki, if the city patrol squad hadn’t arrived, right now they would have already been captured by Hui Ku.

Xiao Yan especially felt retrospective fear. This big monk is even able to lay his hands on the sariras of the elders of his sect, at that time who knows what he would do to him to get the Art of Acala from him.

A while ago he didn’t even forget to release a snake to capture him while he was in the middle of an intense fight. If this person doesn’t die Xiao Yan’s mind will not be at ease.

Lin Feng calculated things for a moment longer, after planning everything out properly he then brought along Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian and walked out.

Hui Ku was in the middle of being painfully tormented by the tainted blood. He could also be considered unfortunate, after finally arriving at the underground palace, he happened upon the transportation of the people of the Society of the Strong Gale not too long after entering. Huang San acted out to obstruct them, in the end messing up the void and causing the space of the entire

underground palace to become very chaotic.

The space Hui Ku was transported to was directly above the Nether Blood River, falling straight down towards the surging tainted blood water.

The Great Thunder Monastery is one of the three great holy lands of the past. Even though it's been destroyed now, disciples who originate from there all have extraordinary knowledge. Hui Ku recognized the Nether Blood River at the first moment and moaned in his heart, he didn't even dare to take out the sariras.

In spite of these sariras all being refined from the bones of past great buddhist cultivators, once they are contaminated with the tainted blood they will instantly lose all of their spirituality and become useless items.

After spending an enormous amount of effort Hui Ku managed to not fall directly into the blood river, but his body was still stained with a lot of blood water. The majority of his buddhist mana was instantly tainted and he could only strugglingly hang on.

Whilst using the buddhist light to protect himself to prevent the tainted blood from continuing to contaminate his body, he hastily used the buddhist fire cultivated by the Art of Acala to incinerate and clear the tainted blood, but progress was very slow.

Hui Ku felt agitated in his heart: "If I had the complete Art of Acala and cultivated the true Fury Acala Flames then I could definitely deal with this tainted blood. The Fury Acala Flames may

not be one of the seven great absolute flames, but the blood river here is also just a tiny branch of the Nether Blood Sea, it is not the purest Absolute Blood River Water.”

“Buddha oh Buddha, I devote myself to the buddhist ways, why have I suffered such a disaster? Could it be that Buddha is also blaming me for refining the sariras of my elders?” Hui Ku roared in his heart: “Buddha would not, the reason I did so is also to spread the glory of Buddhism, even if those elders cannot forgive me Buddha will definitely understand me!”

Thinking of the Thundershock Staff that he lost and the spiritual python that he worked hard to raise for so many years being killed in the end, Hui Ku became even more furious. He swore in his heart to capture Xiao Yan and turn into ashes the person who killed his spiritual pet and robbed his magic item.

Hui Ku was in the middle of sulking when a young daoist in white robes wearing daoist clothes suddenly appeared before him. Afterwards, Hui Ku saw Xiao Yan who was behind that young daoist.

Lin Feng looked at Hui Ku who was staring at him in anger, saying blandly: “What are you looking at you big monk? It was destined for you to suffer today’s tribulation when you troubled my disciple that day.”

Hui Ku let out a snort: “You are that kid’s master, his Art of Acala was taught by you? This is the secret dao technique of the Great Thunder Monastery, from where did you learn it? Quickly return it to me or else don’t blame me for what happens next!”

Lin Feng slowly shook his head: “You are indeed a discourteous monk, it is time to teach you a lesson today,”

Hui Ku’s face was cloudy, because he discovered that he could not see through Lin Feng’s cultivation level. Based on Hui Ku’s knowledge, this means that Lin Feng’s level is even above his.

His thoughts reaching here, Hui Ku did not dare to be negligent, shouting out in a low voice: “You daoist, I will send you back into the cycle of reincarnation right now!” He released his trump card at the get go, whipping his hands and throwing out 24 sariras which shone brightly in this dark and gloomy underworld.

“24 Heaven Arhat Formation, open!”

Where buddhist light flashed, buddhist chanting could be heard without end and the fragrance of sandalwood permeated the air. At the side of the Nether Blood River, buddhist light covered the surrounding 330 meter radius, enveloping Lin Feng and co. along with Hui Ku within it.

In the buddhist light human shadows overlapped, 24 golden arhats over 10 feet tall slowly walked out, appearing in the vision of Lin Feng and co.

The powerful mana of 24 foundation establishment stage cultivators is truly as deep as the sea, pressuring over together it made Lin Feng virtually have the impulse to raise his hands and surrender.

Lin Feng did his best to pull himself together, looking towards his two disciples beside him while still maintaining a calm look: “You guys are up.”

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian nodded their heads together, charging into the buddhist light. With the protection of the Thundershock Staff and the golden paper, the mental pressure brought by the golden arhats had little effect on them.

Seeing this, Lin Feng knew that his guess was most likely correct.

Between magic items of buddhist dao techniques, even if they are not of the same type a lot of them will resonate with each other. To a certain degree this can achieve the effect of cancelling each other out.

Especially those 24 golden arhats, they actually don't have their own thoughts. They are only acting based on their instincts under the control of Hui Ku, but right now Hui Ku is occupied with defending against the contamination of the tainted blood and this spell formation actually has a trend of treating Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian as part of itself.

Even though Hui Ku was concentrating on withstanding the contamination of the tainted blood, he still gave a command to the golden arhats. Instantly, 24 ten-foot tall giants rushed towards Lin Feng in large strides. Not mentioning that they all possess the mana levels of foundation establishment stage cultivators, just their height and bulk was enough to make people scared.

One golden arhat arrived first, his large hand directly shadowing over Lin Feng's head. Vigorous mana pressed downward, Lin Feng felt like the space around him had been completely sealed and that even the air had become frozen.

A strong wind rushed at his face, but not even a speck of the dust on the ground could fly upwards, everything was being tightly suppressed.

Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath, his two feet stepping on the ground and all of his mana rapidly circulating through his body. The dao technique he was using was neither the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique nor the Art of Acala and was especially not the Blue Oceanic River Technique.

The dao technique Lin Feng was using was precisely the Kṣitigarbha Sutra that originally should have belonged to Zhu Yi.

He didn't even pass over the Blue Oceanic River Technique, of course he wouldn't let go of this first-class buddhist dao technique on the same level as the Art of Acala.

Even though he has not successfully cultivated the peerless ability of the Gilded Kṣitigarbha Body, right now Lin Feng has already obtained a bit of the essence of "tolerant and still as the earth and silent and deep as a scripture".

Right now Lin Feng was like the vast and boundless earth, silently bearing all within the world, no matter how wild,

overbearing and arrogant you are, I stand erect and unshakable!

The golden arhat's movements noticeably slowed-down for a moment. He is made from a great buddhist cultivator's sarira, even though he no longer possesses thought and doesn't have a consciousness, some scattered memories rooted deep in his soul still exist.

He sensed this his attack target seemed to be a fellow buddhist, this made him very resistant.

Hui Ku also sensed it within his heart, instantly becoming stunned: "This.. this is the Kṣitigarbha Sutra! Why does a daoist know so many of our Great Thunder Monastery's secret dao techniques? Could it be that he is actually also a Buddhist follower and pretending to dress as a daoist to fool people's eyes?"

While he was in the middle of being confused, another response travelled over, someone was attempting to collect one of the sariras acting as one of the eyes of the formation. (TL: Does that make sense to you guys, the eye of the formation?)

Hui Ku instantly flew into a rage: "Two little bastards, you guys have some big balls!"

Chapter 45: I Was Waiting For You, Baldy!

Hui Ku manipulated the golden arhat to attack Lin Feng. Responding using the Kṣitigarbha Sutra Lin Feng temporarily withstood the attack of the golden arhat.

Even though he was surprised about Lin Feng actually knowing the Kṣitigarbha Sutra, Hui Ku's hanging heart was put greatly at ease because he sensed that Lin Feng's force of resistance was not strong. Don't mention auras core stage, he wasn't even foundation establishment stage.

Hui Ku laughed coldly: "With just this bit of skill you think you have the rights to parade around in front of me? If I'd known earlier that you were just a complete sham I could send you back into the cycle of reincarnation even without using the spell formation."

Lin Feng glanced at him, his tone of voice indifferent and saying: "You are nothing but the frog at the bottom of the well, guarding the bones of your predecessors and talking nonsense here."

Hui Ku's expression turned blue: "Damned daoist, do you dare to say that again?"

Lin Feng calmly shook his head: "This spell formation is the source of your arrogance? Today I will eradicate this illusion of yours and have you recognize your true colours."

Hui Ku laughed from extreme anger: "I'll squash you to death

before that, you can block one arhat, but...”

Bringing his two hands together, Hui Ku’s tone of voice was dark: “... But, can you still block 24?” Under the spur of his thoughts, the 24 golden arhats surrounded Lin Feng together. Every arhat is dozens of meters tall, when they came up together it instantly created a type of pressure that blotted out the sky and wanted to destroy everything.

Hui Ku stared at Lin Feng and said word by word: “Today I will send you to the underworld, the Art of Acala and the Kṣitigarbha Sutra, you’ve got to obediently spit it all out for me. These are all secret techniques of the Great Thunder Monastery, how can I allow a demonspawn such as yourself to make it your own!”

Lin Feng lifted his head with a leisurely expression and looked at the golden arhats who surrounded him. In terms of height and body size, it was like he had arrived at the land of the giants.

“Nothing but a tiny spell formation, I don’t even need to personally do anything, my two disciples are more than sufficient.”

Hui Ku was stunned for a moment, suddenly he sensed that within the formation there was someone attempting to collect one of the sariras acting as the eye of the formation. Hui Ku instantly flew into a rage: “Two little bastards, you’ve got big balls!”

After Lin Feng attracted the majority of Hui Ku’s attention, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian were neglected by the big monk.

From Hui Ku's point of view, one of them is qi disciple level six, the other is qi disciple level 7, just the oppression the buddhist light formation has on the mind is enough to make the two little guys collapse.

But the Thundershock Staff and golden paper came into play. Not only did they help the two people withstand the pressure from the formation, they even made the formation develop a misjudgement and mistaken them as one of its own.

“Over here!” Xiao Yan took the lead and walked over to a corner of the spell formation. Beneath the cloud of light-golden mist, a dot of light shone on the ground, looking closely it was precisely a sarira.

Xiao Budian cheered aloud: “Just as master said.” Before taking action, Lin Feng already told them that this 24 Heaven Arhat Formation is aboveboard and straightforward, it only has the effects of trapping and killing the enemy, the spell formation itself does not possess any deceptive properties.

When Hui Ku sets up the formation he spreads the sariras. After the sariras land on the ground according to a certain pattern, their position does not change. Once you remember the locations of these sariras, you will be able to find them after entering the spell formation.

It's just that this spell formation's attack strength is too powerful, materializing 24 golden arhats who all possess the

strength of foundation establishment stage cultivators. Once the enemy enters the formation they will be surrounded and attacked, they simply don't have the energy to search for and destroy the sariras acting as the eye of the formation.

Right now Lin Feng has attracted the attention of the spell formation and Hui Ku, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian instantly found the opportunity to go look for the sariras.

The sariras do not stay unmoving when they land on the ground, instead they embed themselves deep into the earth, emitting a faint golden glow and dyeing the surrounding ground in gold.

Xiao Yan lifted his leg and stomped on the golden ground, releasing a low grunt. Based on the counter force, this golden ground is even harder than steel, clearly it has been affected by the mana within the sarira.

Senior and junior apprentice-brother looked at each other, Xiao Yan nodded his head: "Do it, I'll protect you."

Xiao Budian took out the golden paper and approached the sarira. When he just got close, the sarira instantly released a wave of buddhist chanting, as if a warning.

"Oh man, this is something good." Xiao Budian was delighted, revealing two shiny little canine teeth. He shook the golden paper in his hands and placed it over the sarira.

Upon contact with the sarira, the sarira instantly calmed down, but Xiao Budian's following movements were pretty rough. Spreading his fingers he clawed at the ground, forcefully digging out a hole in the ground.

Xiao Budian's two hands applied strength together, digging out a piece of earth like pulling out a carrot.

Hitting it with his hand, the earth that was still as hard as steel and emitting a faint golden flow was instantly destroyed by Xiao Budian, only leaving behind the perfectly intact sarira quietly landing in the middle of the golden paper.

Seeing this scene Xiao Yan's lips twitched. The entire process was like a harmless looking man using the most gentle, most polite and most harmless method to trick a chick into drinking a spiked drink. After knocking her out he then immediately revealed his true colours and forcefully executed the girl on the spot.

"You guys have big balls!" Hui Ku's furious cries travelled into their ears, afterwards a giant golden arhat suddenly charged to the front of them, his fist punching straight down towards Xiao Budian's head.

Xiao Yan came back to his senses, immediately using the method Lin Feng taught him, bringing up the Thundershock Staff and attacking the golden arhat.

When the golden arhat's fist came in contact with the Thundershock Staff, a wave of dazzling buddhist light burst forth

from the Thundershock Staff. In the circulation of the buddhist light the golden arhat's movements instantly slowed down, retracting half of the strength that he released.

The remaining half of his strength was unable to do anything about the Thundershock Staff. The powerful defense ability exhibited by this buddhist magic item directly lead astray the fist the size of a house.

At this time Xiao Budian had already completely wrapped the sarira in the golden paper. The golden paper isolated the sarira's buddhist light causing the mana within the sarira to be sealed off, not the slightest bit of it could leak out.

Hui Ku was dumbfounded, this 24 Heaven Arhat Formation of his is incredibly powerful. If you had to speak of its weaknesses, besides the spell formation's position being immovable, it is that as the eyes of the formation, the 24 sariras are all indispensable.

As long as one sarira is missing the spell formation will collapse.

The Buddhist chanting vanished from the ears and the sandalwood fragrance slowly dispersed, the light-golden cloud of light also scattered and disappeared.

The 24 Heaven Arhat Formation that once beat the snot out of Mr. Vulture and co. these three foundation establishment stage cultivators was officially broken!

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian were a bit dazed. They didn't think that things would actually be just as Lin Feng said and that they would so easily break the formation.

Lin Feng on the other hand secretly breathed out a sigh of relief, his two disciples didn't know that he was actually walking on tightropes again, it's just that this time he once again successfully walked across.

His success could not do without numerous calculations and a large amount of luck.

Firstly, Hui Ku himself was pinned down by the tainted blood, a lot of his attention was placed on clearing up the tainted blood and he didn't have a lot of energy to control the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation. Otherwise, he would have been able to discover Xiao Yan's and Xiao Budian's little movements at the first moment and stop them on time.

Secondly, due to the hidden benefit of the system, Hui Ku was unable to see through Lin Feng's true cultivation level and thus subconsciously treated him as a formidable enemy. Not mentioning that he attracted all of Hui Ku's attention, Hui Ku also did not dare to launch a full-out assault at the beginning and only used one golden arhat to test him. This allowed Lin Feng to successfully pass by this most important first attack wave and win time for Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian.

And then, just as Lin Feng suspected, it is indeed easy for buddhist magic items like the Thundershock Staff and golden paper to resonate with each other. Under the circumstance that

Hui Ku this manipulator did not interfere, they successfully withstood the attacks of the spell formation and collected the sarira.

Lastly and most importantly is still that Hui Ku was being attacked by the tainted blood and his own strength was greatly reduced. Otherwise, even if they broke his formation, with Hui Ku's foundation establishment stage level Lin Feng still wouldn't be his match.

These are all elements towards Lin Feng's victory, if any of them were missing, the plan would not have been able to be completed.

Of course, if any of these elements were missing Lin Feng would definitely continue to patiently wait for an opportunity and would not actively seek out Hui Ku.

If he dares to make a move then he has the confidence to succeed!

Lin Feng turned his head and said towards Xiao Budian and Xiao Yan: "Collect the other sariras too."

Xiao Budian instantly ran around in joy, going around everywhere and practically treating this place like his own vegetable garden, continuing the happy task of "harvesting carrots". He rapidly collected the remaining 24 sariras and handed them over to Lin Feng together with the first one.

Seeing his lifeblood fall in Lin Feng's hands, Hui Ku's eyes

gradually turned blood-red. He released a wild cry: “Damned daoist!” Under his extreme fury his own mana instantly became unstable, the green fire was unable to suppress the tainted blood and his buddhist light barrier was instantly breached by the tainted blood.

Lin Feng stared at Hui Ku whose entire body was stained with the tainted blood and secretly made a scissorhand. The reason he had Xiao Budian collect the other sariras was to purposely anger Hui Ku. If this big monk is directly dissolved by the tainted blood then that would be the best.

But it was destined for Hui Ku to disappoint him. This feverish big monk suddenly calmed down, retracting all of the mana protecting his body and letting the tainted blood spread across his entire body, wildly contaminating and eroding the mana that he painstakingly cultivated for so many years. But Hui Ku was unmoved by it, only coldly staring at Lin Feng.

At this moment, the sentiments of madness, irritation and anger all disappeared from Hui Ku, only cold murderous intent remained in his eyes.

Lin Feng called out crap in his heart, sure enough Hui Ku said coldly: “I am destined to fall into hell, but before I go I will drag you this spawn of evil down with me!”

The next moment, alarming mana fluctuations burst forth from Hui Ku’s body. A miniature black hole actually appeared above his head, everything around the black hole was sucked within it.

Countless amounts of dust and gravel, even the tainted blood in the Nether Blood River beside Hui Ku all flew into the air and towards the black hole.

Under the huge suction even Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian were unable to stand on the ground. Their feet left the ground and they were actually about to be directly sucked into the black hole.

Hui Ku roared wildly: “Demonspawn, take my final attack, Bliss of Samsara! Let us enter into the gates of reincarnation and go down to hell together...”

Before he finished speaking, a beam of pure-white lightning of peerless radiance and unmatched violence had already arrived before him, turning into a cloud of blood Hui Ku who had already exhausted all of his mana.

Northern Aurora Mystic Light!

Lin Feng extended his right arm, his fingers making a gun-shot movement, he then pulled it to his lips and lightly blew: “I was waiting for you, damned baldy!”

Chapter 46: The Source Of The Blood River

Hui Ku lost the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation and was also being attacked by the most evil and foul tainted blood in the world. Under his extreme fury he actually took the approach of taking everybody down with him, using the buddhist secret technique Bliss of Samsara and wanting drag Lin Feng down with him.

Lin Feng was already on guard, he was paying attention to Hui Ku's movements the whole time. Seeing this big monk actually disregard the attack of the tainted blood and retract his protective mana, he immediately knew that shit was about to hit the fan.

The Northern Aurora Sword immediately came out and before Hui Ku's spell could be fully unleashed, an arc of overpowering lightning struck this big monk to death a step ahead.

Hui Ku had died and the black hole above his head instantly went out of control, becoming chaotic.

Lin Feng sensed the spiritual energy in the underground palace suddenly fall into disorder, his expression couldn't help but slightly pale and he shouted towards his two disciples: "Be careful."

Before his voice had even died away, the black hole suddenly exploded, mixing together with the tainted spiritual energy in the underground palace and actually creating an effect similar to a transportation spell formation, shifting space.

Under the effect of the void turbulence, Lin Feng's head became groggy, a strong light flickered before his eyes and the scenery around him constantly changed.

In just one second of time, the scenery in Lin Feng's vision had already changed a number of times.

As if an incredibly long period of time had passed by, but in actuality it had only been a couple of seconds, Lin Feng who was dizzy in the head heavily fell to the ground.

Lin Feng shook his head, only after a long while did his head become clear. Lifting his head and looking around, he discovered that he was inside a tunnel. He didn't know how far he was transported, but he could not hear the roaring and surging of the Nether Blood River, presumably he's been transported a long distance.

His two disciples also aren't by his side, looks like they were sent to a different place in the void turbulence.

Lin Feng laughed helplessly: "Now there's trouble."

But it's not like everything was bad.

Lin Feng weighted the storage bag in his hand, his face revealing a smile. In the chaos he nimbly grabbed Hui Ku's storage bag, that big monk's stash has now all become his spoils of victory.

Of course, the most important loot is still those 24 sariras.

Lin Feng found the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation's formation diagram within Hui Ku's storage bag. It was a thick book with a lot of illustrations, the illustrations on the first few pages have many alterations. Presumably Hui Ku himself also regularly thought about how to polish the formation and was constantly improving the formation for it to have its current power.

This formation diagram matched with the 24 sariras can set up the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation.

But it requires Lin Feng to refine these sariras, he has to get rid of Hui Ku's mana markings within them and add in his own for him to be able to have perfect command of them.

Besides the formation diagram, the storage bag also has the Art of Acala that Hui Ku practised. Lin Feng took a look at it, sure enough it was the entire scripture minus the general outline at the beginning.

Lin Feng laughed. The upper-half of the scripture he already has and the part of Hui Ku's here is a complete version of the Art of Acala.

As for the other things like cultivation pills and such, even though they are what Lin Feng needs, there wasn't anything particularly good.

After all the Great Thunder Monastery has already been destroyed for 20 years, even if Hui Ku brought out some valuable pills from the monastery he would have already eaten them.

The only thing worth noting was that Hui Ku actually had two pill recipes.

One is the Greater Thunder Revival Pill, it is the Great Thunder Monastery's world famous healing panacea, it has a miraculous effect in healing the damaged body, reviving the dead and regenerating bones.

While the other one made Lin Feng's mouth water, the Barrier Breaking Pill. It's designed to help cultivators overcome their cultivation bottlenecks and the bottleneck of a minor stage. After using the Barrier Breaking Pill one will immediately advance to the next minor stage. Using this pill can also greatly enhance the success rate of advancing to foundation establishment from qi disciple or to auras core from foundation establishment.

But the materials required to create these two pills are all very rare and the success rate is not high.

Lin Feng himself, one doesn't know alchemy and two doesn't have materials, he can only give them a wistful look.

"I'll put them away first, later I'll give them to Xiao Yan that kid to slowly figure things out. The system says that he has a gift for alchemy, presumably it's not a lie." Lin Feng put away the pill recipes: "I've got to hurry up and find a way out first and meet up

with those two little guys and then go look for Zhu Yi.”

“Zhu Yi, sigh, wonder how that kid’s doing.”

Lin Feng didn’t think that a bullshit matter like a spatial shift could actually happen in the underground palace, in the end right now he still hasn’t gotten his third disciple yet and has instead even become separated from the two he already has.

The fuck, could it be working hard for 50 years and then returning to before the liberation in a night? (TL: Everything for naught.)

“How can I leave this place?” Lin Feng was troubled in his heart when the system notification sound suddenly rose up in his mind: “Host has gotten close to the side quest item, the Black Cloud Flag!”

Are you kidding?

Lin Feng was stunned, this really is a serendipitous accident. Before he didn’t even give the side quest any thought, who knew that two consecutive spatial transportations in the underground palace actually sent him in front of the Black Cloud Flag.

“This Black Cloud Flag is Daoist Master Hei Yun’s soul-bound magic item, Daoist Master Hei Yun is also the person who created the Black Cloud Underground Palace...” A thought suddenly appeared in his heart and he hastily rechecked the quest.

Due to Lin Feng already being near the Black Cloud Flag right now, the quest description has also added a description of the Black Cloud Flag.

Black Cloud Flag, Daoist Master Hei Yun's soul-bound magic item, refined using Daoist Master Hei Yun's famous spell "Great Heavens Shift". It can shift through space within a short distance, combining attack and defense in one. It can also carry people to fly and has endless uses.

Lin Feng's eyes lit up: "So that's how it is, the reason there's so many sudden spatial shifts in this underground palace is probably related to this Black Cloud Flag. If I can obtain the Black Cloud Flag then leaving this underground palace will definitely be as easy as pie and it might also be able to help me find those three little guys."

Even though he had the way out, Lin Feng was even more careful. The Black Cloud Flag is nearby which means that the Nether Blood River is also nearby, moreover it's also the source of the Nether Blood River in this underground palace.

Sure enough, after Lin Feng continued walking forward for a while he heard the surging sound of water travel over from the distance.

After taking a couple of turns, the tunnel reached its end. Exiting the tunnel, what appeared in front of Lin Feng was a giant underground lake.

But within this lake is not water but Absolute Blood River Water, the foul, nauseating smell that assailed the nose rushed at his face, virtually knocking Lin Feng unconscious.

In the air above the lake there was a pitch-black fissure, that is the spatial rift.

Space is like drawing paper, everything else is scenery in the drawing, and this fissure is like a hole that was ripped in the drawing paper.

From the fissure, foul tainted blood constantly flowed out from it, landing in the lake below like a waterfall.

Above the lake permeated this thick, dark red blood aura.

Standing there and having yet to truly come in contact with the tainted blood, Lin Feng could already feel his mana stagnate, just that thick blood aura could virtually already taint Lin Feng's mana.

Lin Feng looked towards the blood lake beneath his feet, thinking that there is a passageway beneath the blood lake and that the source of the Nether Blood River he saw when he encountered Hui Ku should be this place. It's just that he doesn't know to where that blood river flows?

The system notification rose up once again. This time it directly pointed out to Lin Feng the location of the Black Cloud Flag. Lin

Feng pulled himself together and prepared to first collect this magic item and then think about his next step.

“So bored!”

“Crash!”

Lin Feng was just about to go collect the Black Cloud Flag when an unexpected voice suddenly sounded beside his ear.

Closely afterwards there was also the sound of jadeware smashing on the ground.

Lin Feng was startled, there was actually someone here and he was completely unaware of it before.

Following the sound and looking over, he saw a white-clothed young man wearing a green bamboo hat on his head leaning against a giant rock and holding an intricate white jade cup. The expression on his face was looking at Lin Feng with a faint smile.

Lin Feng's pupils retracted, not far away from the bamboo hat young man was a pile of white jade fragments piled up on the ground like a tiny mountain.

Between the crystal clear fragments there was also a decent amount of crimson red wine silently flowing, looking at it it actually looked a bit similar to the tainted blood in the Nether Blood River.

The bamboo hat young man raised the white jade cup in his hand, he only took a sip of the delicious grape wine in the cup and then smacked his lips, sighing towards the sky: “It’s so boring!”

“Crash!”

Before his voice had faded away, the white jade cup along with the wine in the cup fell to the ground together, becoming a member of that pile of broken fragments.

The corner of Lin Feng’s eyes twitched. Right now this pile of pure white jade fragments and the wine that flowed between it was like a massive mountain in his eyes.

A mountain built from fresh gurgling blood and grim white bones.

The bamboo hat young man flipped his palm, an identical jade white cup appeared in his palm and the cup was already filled with wine.

He shook the wine cup in his hand, twisting his head and looking towards Lin Feng. He spread his lips and grinned, a couple of white spots on his face jumped together.

“Looking at your appearance, you are that daoist who gave the Blaze Sword Sect a bad time? You don’t look like much.”

Chapter 47: Watching How You Die!

This bamboo hat young man's body was emitting an aura that Lin Feng felt was extremely dangerous, at the bottom of his heart there was a voice that yelled without stop.

“Run! Run! Run!”

This was entirely a biological instinct, an instinctual warning when encountering something that may cause himself to die.

Lin Feng had to constantly constrain himself to ensure that his body stood on the spot unmoving and not immediately turning around to run.

The bamboo hat young man's completely unmasked mana fluctuations told Lin Feng that the person he is facing is an aurous core stage cultivator.

Moreover it's an aurous core stage cultivator even more powerful than Blaze Sword Sect's Elder Li that he met before.

Lin Feng laughed helplessly in his heart: “Even though I act like an expert in front of my disciples, that's because I have no choice. In the end I'm still just a qi disciple stage small fry. Don't keep sending this kind of aurous core stage opponent over, I really can't afford it!”

The flying swords of Mt. Shu Sword Sect disciples are all

different, but the carvings on their scabbards are all the same landscape design. It is the same as the Blaze Sword Sect's flame robes and is a token of identity known by the world.

Lin Feng naturally also recognized it at a glance, thinking in consolation: "Yan Mingyue, Hui Ku plus this guy in front of me, who'd have thought that in a few short months of time I encountered one of each of the disciples of the three great holy lands."

Even though his calves were already spasming a bit, Lin Feng still secretly held the sarira in his palms, preparing at any time to fight for his life. Wanting him to fold his arms and await death is not possible.

Liu Yang downed all of the wine in the white jade cup and jumped up from the giant rock. He tilted his head looking at Lin Feng: "Didn't they say you're also with a little kid, where is he?"

Originally Lin Feng was prepared to launch the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation, but upon hearing Liu Yang's question a thought suddenly appeared in his heart and he had an even better idea.

After calculating the details in his heart and feeling that there weren't any major holes, Lin Feng started his performance.

"Little kid, what little kid?" Lin Feng revealed a humble expression of reverence, his face puzzled.

Liu Yang frowned: “Stop your charade, I’m talking about that 3 to 4 year old child you had with you when you were fighting with the people of the Blaze Sword Sect.”

Lin Feng’s expression was astounded: “I may have little experience, but I’ve still heard of the name of the Blaze Sword Sect. It is a member of the Nine Heavens Sword Alliance and is one of the several well-known sword sect, how would a small wandering cultivator like me dare to provoke them?”

Hearing this Liu Yan suspiciously examined him: “But this is the right clothing, there’s no mistake.”

Lin Feng laughed helplessly: “I am only a qi disciple level 10 cultivator, how would I have the balls to provoke the Blaze Sword Sect?” While speaking Lin Feng released his own mana fluctuating, opening his hands and using his mana to crush a rock.

Liu Yang naturally doesn’t care about this level of mana, but he can clearly determine the depths of Lin Feng’s cultivation level.

But he was still puzzled in his heart: “If you don’t do anything then I actually can’t see through your cultivation level?”

Lin Feng produced a forced smile saying: “I inadvertently obtained a small item that can hide my cultivation level.” He swallowed his saliva, taking out a ribbon and handing it over to Liu Yan with a fearful and ingratiating smile: “Please take a look.”

The ribbon was just a regular item, but after Lin Feng took out the ribbon he actively released his own mana, causing Liu Yan to think that the reason he couldn't see through his level was indeed because of the ribbon.

Liu Yang took over the ribbon but couldn't sense any spell formations operating within. He tried it out himself and was also unable to hide his cultivation level. He suspiciously looked towards Lin Feng, but right now Lin Feng no longer had any secrets in front of him, he was clearly at qi disciple level 10.

“Why does it have no effect when I use it?” Liu Yang asked.

“Maybe it's because my level is low.” Lin Feng said in embarrassment: “It's just a small trick, it's not worth your time oh great immortal of the Mt. Shu Sword Sect.”

Liu Yang smiled: “You know I'm from the Mt. Shu Sword Sect?”

Lin Feng's cast a glance towards the scabbard at Liu Yang's waist, saying with a smile: “The Mt. Shu Sword Sect, the number 1 holy land in the world of the way of the sword, it's name reverberates like thunder. No matter how ignorant I am I naturally also know of it.”

Liu Yang curled his lips, completely losing interest in Lin Feng: “Boring.” He paused for a moment and then asked: “Have you seen a young daoist dressed just like you with a 3 to 4 year old child in this underground palace?”

Lin Feng blankly shook his head. Liu Yang then asked: “Then what did you come to this underground palace for?”

“I.. I came out to hone myself and accidentally entered this underground palace.” Lin Feng answered a bit sheepishly.

Liu Yang laughed coldly, boundless killing interest spread outward, prickling Lin Feng and making him tremble.

“Calm your anger please, calm your anger.” Lin Feng hurriedly said: “I... In truth I heard that there is a treasure at the bottom of this underground palace, so I came to try my luck and see if I was lucky.”

“Treasure?” Liu Yan was a bit surprised: “What treasure?”

Lin Feng answered honestly: “Legends say that 1000 years ago this place was the wandering cultivator Daoist Master Hei Yun’s cultivation abode. After Daoist Master Hei Yun perished in the blood river his soul-bound magic item the Black Cloud Flag still remained in this cultivation abode.”

Liu Yang curled his lips: “Daoist Master Hei Yun? Never heard of him, he seems to be an aurous core stage cultivator? An aurous core stage magic item, it’s not a big deal.”

Lin Feng smiled apologetically: “You have great power, naturally you do not care about it. But I heard that this Black Cloud Flag has the effect to shift through the void, presumably it is very rare thus

I came to try my luck.”

“Shift through the void?” Liu Yang became interested. Spells and magic items that can shift through the void are all very rare and have endless uses, even he felt moved about it.

Liu Yang attentively sensed the surroundings for a moment and then frowned saying: “I can’t sense that there is a treasure here.”

Lin Feng secretly glanced at the blood lake at the side and stammered about unable to speak.

Liu Yang noticed his movement and laughed: “It’s in this Nether Blood River? Separated by the Absolute Blood Water, it is indeed not easy for my mana to probe it, but...”

He slanted his eyes and looked at Lin Feng with a faint smile: “How do I know you’re not tricking me? How about this, you go down first to find it for me.”

“I originally had intentions of seeking treasure, but when I found out that the treasure was actually within the Nether Blood River I fell into a dilemma. I am unwilling to leave but I also don’t dare to go down.” Lin Feng hurriedly shook his head: “With my insignificant cultivation level how can I bear the erosion of the tainted blood in the Nether Blood River? I’ll turn into pulp in a mere matter of seconds.”

His face was filled with terror, looking at the Nether Blood River

below like avoiding the plague.

Seemingly to distance himself as far as possible from the tainted blood, Lin Feng climbed on top of a stone beam protruding from the cliff above the blood lake, looking at the turbulent Nether Blood River below him with a face of horror.

Liu Yang laughed loudly: “This Absolute Blood River Water is the most evil and foulest thing in the world and can taint all mana and magic items. It is indeed very sinister, but it cannot trouble me!”

“Even if the treasure really is below the Nether Blood River it doesn’t matter, instead it can make me not that bored, but...” Liu Yang looked towards Lin Feng with a cold laugh: “There better really be a treasure below here or else I’ll make you regret coming out of your mother’s womb!”

On the surface Lin Feng revealed an expression of heartfelt admiration: “Only the capable can obtain treasures, you obtaining the treasure is the true mandate of heaven. That I can watch at the side is already my greatest fortune!”

Liu Yang laughed complacently, Lin Feng smiled with him at the side while laughing coldly in his heart: “I am watching at the side, but I’m watching how you die!”

Chapter 48: You're A Good Person

In the sound of laughter, Liu Yang waved his hands and nine blood-red banners flew out.

Lin Feng's eyes watched those nine blood-red banners fly into the air and then land above the blood lake.

The blood-red banners and the tainted blood in the blood lake were actually calling and responding to each other.

The tainted blood in the blood lake slowly rose and fell like it was alive, exhaling and inhaling and harboring a fascinating rhythm.

And in the air those blood-red banners flapped in the air without any wind, swirling and fluttering. Their rhythm was actually in unison with the tainted blood in the lake, both sides resonated with each other and they pulsed even more strongly and clearly.

“These nine blood-red banners were actually refined using True Blood River Water?” Lin Feng said in his heart: “This is an outright dark magic item, who'd have thought this guy actually still had this up his sleeves.”

Liu Yang slanted his eyes looking at Lin Feng and sneered: “This is a magic item I obtained when I killed a dark cultivator before, it was refined using precisely the tainted blood in this Nether Blood River.”

Looking at the nine fluttering blood-red banners above the Nether Blood River, Lin Feng's expression did not change but cold sweat had already appeared in his palms: "This guy's cultivation level is pretty high and he also has this kind of magic item in his hands, if I wasn't scheming against him while he wasn't guarding against me I'd pretty much be dead today."

"But no matter how sly you are you've still gotta drink your Papa Lin's dirty water!" (TL: I tried.)

Lin Feng stood on top of the stone beam, humbly bowing down: "I wish your greatness success!"

Liu Yan smiled noncommittally. He is just arrogant and not stupid, but the problem is that at present for him who is at the aurous core stage, Lin Feng who only has a level of qi disciple level 10 was honestly like a mundane person to him, he could crush him to death with one finger.

Towards opponents with little difference in strength, Liu Yang naturally puts some thought into things, but for cases where the difference between both sides is so great that he can easily steamroll over with just his strength, Liu Yang was honestly too lazy to use his mind.

"Besides this Nether Blood River in front of me there's nothing else that can pose a threat to me. And now with these nine Blood Lake Banners forming a formation to protect me, I'm not afraid of the tainted blood eroding my mana. Everything is set!"

Thinking here, Liu Yang snorted and then walked forward, directly stepping into the blood lake.

Lin Feng stood on top of the stone beam, his expression was calm and collected but he was actually extremely nervous in his heart.

Now that Liu Yang has entered into the blood lake Lin Feng instantly breathed a sigh of relief. He watched as Liu Yang nonchalantly stood in the center of the blood lake, his body surrounded by nine blood-red banners blocking the turbulent tainted blood for him.

Lin Feng curled his lips: “He really thinks this place is his home field?”

Smiling for a moment, Liu Yang’s expression was relaxed. He lifted his hand and formed a spell sign, the nine Blood Lake Banners beside him all shook together and a dark purple blood aura faintly flowed over the banners.

While the blood aura flowed, it gradually merged together and went deep into the Nether Blood River below Liu Yang’s feet.

Instantly, the seething blood lake had a trend of gradually calming down. Seeing this Liu Yang smiled complacently, lifting his eyes and looking towards Lin Feng who was above him.

Lin Feng was also smiling, but his smile was completely different from the humble and submissive smile from before, he was

laughing extremely triumphantly.

Liu Yang's face sank: "What are you laughing about?"

Lin Feng laughed saying: "I'm laughing that the show has only just started, the good stuff is at the back."

While speaking Lin Feng stomped his feet, heavily stomping on the stone beam he was standing on and directly crushing the stone beam. Countless stone fragments fell towards the blood lake like it was raining.

Liu Yang furrowed his brows, an expression of surprise and anger surfacing on his face.

But very quickly his eyes narrowed into a slit. He suddenly discovered that after Lin Feng crushed the stone beam, a pile of bones and a pitch-black flag surprisingly appeared from the stone beam.

The bones emitted a faint golden glow. Liu Yang knows that this is the result of their aurous core mana not dispersing and merging together with their remains after an aurous core stage cultivator passes away, similar to buddhist sariras.

But what Liu Yang was more concerned about was that pitch-black flag.

The pitch-black flag looked extremely ordinary, not a hint of any

mana fluctuations were released from it causing Liu Yang to be completely unaware of its existence before.

This flag is precisely that Black Cloud Flag Lin Feng wanted to collect.

This Black Cloud Flag was not actually at the bottom of the blood lake but was instead inside of the stone beam right above the blood lake.

Seeing the remains and the Black Cloud Flag, how could Liu Yang not have known that he'd been had. But before he could react, after Lin Feng crushed the stone beam he immediately grabbed the flagpole and pulled the Black Cloud Flag out from the fragmented rocks.

With this pull, it was like a spark being thrown into a pan of oil. The entire underground palace suddenly fell into havoc, it was like the world was ending.

Liu Yang's expression turned ghostly pale. He wanted to fly out of the blood lake, but who knew that the Nether Blood Lake that was in his control a moment ago also suddenly revolted.

Countless amounts of tainted blood flew into the sky like an erupting volcano!

And at this moment, the originally unexciting Black Cloud Flag also released powerful mana fluctuations, black light flowed and it

revealed its true colours.

Seeing this Lin Feng silently laughed, he did not guess wrong.

The Nether Blood River is not an ordinary river, its special characteristic is contaminating and devouring all life so it is extremely dangerous. Once it crosses over to the human realm from the Netherworld it will cause disaster and go around doing evil.

But after such a long period of time, the Nether Blood Lake did not even spread the slightest bit towards the surface and was instead forced to flow underground. The reason is because of Daoist Master Hei Yun's remains and this Black Cloud Flag.

Daoist Master Hei Yun may be a wandering cultivator, but his compassionate feelings are worthy of being revered by all. After he created this cultivation abode and accidentally opened up a spatial rift between the Netherworld causing the blood river to invade the human realm, he did not shirk his responsibilities and single-handedly sealed off the blood river breach.

If not for Daoist Master Hei Yun's remains and his magic item suppressing this blood river branch, don't mention this underground palace, the Nether Blood River probably would have already flooded towards the Zhou Dynasty's imperial capital.

After so many years, a marvelous but brittle balance had formed between the remains, magic item and the Nether Blood River, both sides were at an equilibrium.

This is why the Black Cloud Flag's mana did not leak out and Liu Yang who was at the aurous core stage was also unable to sense it, because the Black Cloud Flag's mana was all cancelled-out by the Nether Blood River.

Now that Lin Feng has pulled out the Black Cloud Flag, with the loss of the Black Cloud Flag's mana suppression the Nether Blood River was instantly like a beast out of its cage and roaring outwards.

Liu Yang was scrambling about, the surrounding tainted blood was like a monstrous flood wanting to drown him. Right now the nine Blood River Banners were like candles in the wind, not only were they unable to help Liu Yang, they were instead like wandering sons who had returned home and were about to throw themselves into the embrace of the Nether Blood River.

What Liu Yang practises is in then end not the Blood River Secret Art. When the Nether Blood River is calm he can still rely on the Blood Lake Banners to protect himself, but now that the blood lake has fallen into a frazy he immediately became in jeopardy.

Liu Yang's eyes were crimson red and staring at Lin Feng: "You daoist, die!" Disregarding the blood water that had already stained his body and was wildly contaminating his mana, Liu Yang patted his sword scabbard and a beam of sword aura even more frenzied than the blood lake shot straight towards Lin Feng's head.

The Shaoshang Sword, the most domineering of Mt. Shu's Six

Meridian Swords and also the most domineering sword technique in the world!

Before the sword aura had even jumped out of the scabbard, Lin Feng already sensed that he'd been enveloped by an extremely chilling murderous intent. He felt as if even his soul was about to be frozen, a thought couldn't stop appearing in his heart: "Don't dodge, there's no point, with such a powerful sword aura death is guaranteed..."

When the sword aura truly appeared before him, Lin Feng who was transfixed by the sword pressure even felt that his mind had already stopped, not even a thought could turn in his head. The sword aura did not touch his body, but just the wind brought up by the sword was about to cut him into pieces.

If he didn't have any preparations Lin Feng would without any doubt die under this vengeful attack of Liu Yang's.

But right now he smiled faintly, he even had the spare time to wave his hands towards Liu Yang to say goodbye.

"Buddy, you really are a good person. If not for you I'd still have to rack my brain about how to seal this Nether Blood River after pulling out the flag, thanks!"

While speaking, the Black Cloud Flag in Lin Feng's hand lightly shook. Black light rose up and it had already opened up the void, sweeping up Lin Feng and disappearing out of sight.

“No!!!”

Liu Yang watched in near hopelessness as Lin Feng disappeared on the spot, his violent and domineering powerful sword aura could only cut at the empty air.

The next moment he was already swallowed by the boundless blood sea.

“If I don’t die then even if I have to chase you to the ends of the world I will cut you into a thousand pieces!” (TL: Future cameo appearance confirmed.)

Liu Yang’s angry howls seemed to still echo in the air. Lin Feng picked his ears: “How’s about you first be a good boy and replace the Black Cloud Flag to suppress the Nether Blood River for me and then we’ll talk.”

In the first place he never expected to screw over Liu Yang and kill him so easily like this, or else after he took away the Black Cloud Flag it would be him having a headache about the flooding Nether Blood River.

How things are right now is pretty good. With Liu Yang acting as the sacrificial lamb, to protect himself he can only do his best to suppress the swelling blood river and the blood river thus then becomes Liu Yang’s cage.

Lin Feng remarked from the bottom of his heart: “What a good person! This kind of good person who sacrifices himself for others is honestly too few, or else how wonderful and happy of a world would this be?”

As for whether or not this guy will get out one day, this was temporarily out of Lin Feng’s control. For Lin Feng, this is pressure and also motivation to keep going higher, urging him to improve his own strength as quickly as possible.

The most important matter right now is still to first find those three poor disciples of his.

Chapter 49: We Are From The Yu Clan

Lin Feng played with the Black Cloud Flag that had already shrunk to the size of his palm.

This is the first aurous core stage magic item that he has obtained. Even though it has been tainted by the Nether Blood River and its power is less than 30% of its peak state, even then it is still an extraordinary magic item. It is more powerful than all of the magic items Lin Feng currently has, even the Northern Aurora Sword is a cut below.

The Black Cloud Flag combines attack and defense in one and has the ability to shift through space for short distances, it really is nice.

Even more importantly is that different from the Northern Aurora Sword, this Black Cloud Flag is an aurous core stage magic item, within it there are spell formations that automatically absorb spiritual energy to nourish itself. When using it, Lin Feng instead does not expend that much mana like the Northern Aurora Sword.

But how to cleanse the tainted blood on the flag in the future and let it restore its original luster is a very troublesome matter.

Right now what made Lin Feng pleased was the system notification sound that rose up in his mind: “Host has obtained the Black Cloud Flag and completed the random side quest Black Cloud Underground Palace, reward 500 trading points!”

Lin Feng laughed. Before he finds out the pattern of the lottery system he actually better prefers these down to earth trading points.

Compared to the lottery system that depends on luck, the items in the trading system with a clear price tag are a bit more dependable, he buys whatever he wants. Of course the pretense is that he has enough trading points.

After pondering for a moment Lin Feng was not in a rush to exchange for anything and instead decided to save up the points.

Based on his experience, if he can take in a third disciple, besides a lottery chance the system will also reward 500 trading points.

Lin Feng plans on saving up some points and then going on a shopping spree.

Just as he guessed before, as Daoist Master Hei Yun's soul-bound magic item the Black Cloud Flag is indeed closely connected to this Black Cloud Underground Palace. The mana within the magic item is inextricably linked to the spiritual energy flowing in the underground palace.

After Lin Feng refined the Black Cloud Flag using his own mana, his mind communicated with the flag and a detailed map of the Black Cloud Underground Palace instantly appeared in his head.

“If there's a map then that makes things simple.” Lin Feng

nodded his head, thinking in his heart: “Wonder if it can confirm the positions of Zhu Yi and the others?”

This thought just appearing, three dots of light instantly appeared on the map.

Lin Feng was overjoyed, he knows that these three dots of light separately represent Xiao Budian, Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi, but afterwards what made him surprised is that these three dots of light were actually all gathered together. This means that his two disciples are together with Zhu Yi right now.

Lin Feng didn't feel happy, his eyebrows instead raising up slightly. He gave another command to the Black Cloud Flag: “Are there other people around the three people?”

Giving the command, 5 dots of light instantly lit up on the map. Each of them was very bright and they were right around Zhu Yi and them.

Lin Feng sighed, things might be a bit worse than expected.

“Where is Liu Yang?”

A massive dot of light appeared on the other side of the map, its brightness was stronger than all of the previous dots of light put together, although this massive dot of light representing Liu Yang was flashing constantly, presumably due to Liu Yang wrestling it out with the Nether Blood River.

Lin Feng's forehead heavily wrinkled. Just as he thought, the brightness of the dots of light represent the height of the target's level.

Liu Yang's dot of light is the brightest and matches with his aurous core stage level.

Zhu Yi's dot of light is the weakest, it was practically unseeable from being surrounded by the five big dots of light.

Xiao Budian's brightness was about the same as Xiao Yan's but is was also faint.

Those five big dots of light very likely represent five foundation establishment stage cultivators.

This means that not only Zhu Yi, even Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian have also landed in their hands. Regardless of whether they're the Society of the Strong Gale or the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, for Lin Feng it's all not good news.

"Hope they're not hurt." Lin Feng shook the Black Cloud Flag and disappeared from the spot.

When he reappeared Lin Feng had already been transported to the location of Zhu Yi and co.

Under the help of the Black Cloud Flag it was like Lin Feng had become one with the Black Cloud Underground Palace. Only Liu Yang and Huang San those kinds of auras core stage cultivators can discover his existence, these foundation establishment stage cultivators are unable to sense him.

Lin Feng did not show himself at the first moment, he plans on first looking at the situation.

With this look Lin Feng couldn't help but be a bit stupefied.

The scene in his imagination of his three disciples being captured and being tortured in every possible way and then not submitting did not appear.

In the tunnel, Xiao Budian and Xiao Yan both had a calm demeanor and were chatting happily with six cultivators of the house of the Marquis, walking towards the surface together.

Only Zhu Yi, even though he was a bit downcast he was still in a normal mood and did not receive any trouble, following behind everybody and advancing forward.

Huang San was killed by Liu Yang, these cultivators of the house of the Marquis were all a bit at a loss. Liu Yang witnessed the truth of them being together with Zhu Yi. Under this kind of circumstance if they insist on killing Zhu Yi and pushing the blame onto the Society of the Strong Gale, things won't be as easy to fool.

It looks like Liu Yang won't care about such a minor matter, but if news travels out then that would be very bad. To save face the Marquis of Xuanji would definitely kill them and bury them with Zhu Yi.

Due to this kind of consideration, after some deliberation the six people finally decided to just bring Zhu Yi back like this, whatever the outcome it's still considered an achievement.

But who would have thought that they'd encounter Xiao Budian and Xiao Yan who had become separated from Lin Feng.

To this date no matter how you count it, Xiao Budian is still only four years old. A level of qi disciple level 6 was truly as eye-catching as a firefly in the night. The shock that he brought to this group of foundation establishment stage cultivators was even greater than compared to the Blaze Sword Sect at Wuzhou City.

Xiao Budian at that time who was still only at qi disciple level 4 already stunned Elder Li who was at the aurous core stage. Now with his level of qi disciple level 6 and matched with his cute, clean child appearance, the massive contrast made this group of foundation establishment stage cultivators temporarily lose their ability to think.

And then they reacted over. If they don't pull this kind of talented child with prodigious potential into their sects, their sect founders would definitely jump out from their graves in anger.

Regardless of the purple fine-clothed middle-aged man or the five

Five Elements Sect cultivators, they all surrounded Xiao Budian with smiling faces.

In comparison, Xiao Yan's current strength of qi disciple level 7 at the age of 15 was not very remarkable.

After the affair with the Blaze Sword Sect, Xiao Budian had a clear understanding of his situation and knows that a lot of people covet his talent.

He just has a playful spirit still but he actually matured very early. These days following Lin Feng the little guy has become even more slippery.

Facing the group of foundation establishment stage cultivators who surrounded over, Xiao Budian did not shy away. His big, black eyes turned and he revealed a pair of shiny little canines, saying with a smile: "How do you do uncles and grandpas, junior Yu Hao pays his respects."

Xiao Yan's eyes flashed and he also said very politely: "Junior Yu Yan greets everybody."

"Yu?" These cultivators may all have different sects and teachings, but they all work in the House of the Marquis of Xuanji and are well-knowledged. Hearing Xiao Budian and Xiao Yan call their surnames Yu, the first reaction in their minds was the Zhou Dynasty's neighboring country, one of the four great clans of the Great Qin Dynasty the Yu clan.

The leader of the five people of the Five Elements Sect the yellow-clothed old man asked with a smile: “Little buddy, your surname is Yu, are you a child of the Great Qin Dynasty’s Yu clan?”

Xiao Budian heavily nodded his head and said with a smile: “Yeah, old grandpa how do you know we are from the Yu clan, do you recognize someone from my clan?”

“The Yu clan’s name reverberates like thunder, unfortunately I have not had the fortune to meet a clan member.” The yellow-clothed old man’s face became even more sincere, but in his heart he was very disappointed.

A person from the Yu clan, that’s not easy to fight for.

The Yu clan that is ranked amongst the Great Qin Dynasty’s four great clans, they could also be considered well-known in this world. Of course they can’t compete with the three great holy lands, but like the Blaze Sword Sect they are both dominant powers within the borders of the Great Qin Dynasty.

The Yu clan’s heritage may be inferior to the Blaze Sword Sect that has been around for ten thousand years, but because of family blood their bonds are even stronger than a sect.

The six foundation establishment stage cultivators all looked at each other and called out unfortunate in their hearts. With this little guy’s talent, even in the Yu clan he’s definitely the most precious little baby. Don’t mention their sects, even if the Mt. Shu Sword Sect and the Void Temple came to ask for him they would

still be given the cold shoulder.

One middle-aged cultivator of the Five Elements Sect secretly transmitted his voice towards the yellow-clothed old man: “The Qin Dynasty’s diplomatic envoys did indeed arrive at Tianjing City a few days ago, could there be people of the Yu clan amongst them and this child followed the elders of his family over?”

The yellow-clothed old man did not bat an eyelid and still looked towards Xiao Budian with a smile asking: “Why did you guys come here?”

Xiao Budian answered innocently: “Me and my clan-brother came out to play together and saw a cave in the distance, so we came in to check it out. Who knew that we couldn’t get out anymore, can you bring us out old grandpa?”

Chapter 50: Keep Silent

“Me and my clan-brother came out to play together and saw a cave in the distance, so we came in to check it out. Who knew that we couldn’t get out anymore, can you bring us out old grandpa?”

In the dark tunnel of the underground palace, Xiao Budian’s sweet child voice crisply rose up.

Lin Feng who was silently following behind them shook his head and smiled. This little guy really is good at playing dumb and acting adorable, with just a little bag he dragged in the entire Yu clan.

Despite this little imp looking all cute and lovely, he’s probably thinking about how to knock other people out from behind.

I’ve got to be careful in the future too and not be fooled by this little guy’s harmless outer appearance, this little imp really knows how to cause trouble.

Hearing Xiao Budian’s question, the yellow-clothed old man said with a smile: “We’re on our way back to Tianjing City too, it just so happens that we can also bring you guys back. Your family must be worried sick.”

When he said this his eyes were tightly locked on Xiao Budian, the other five people also had the same action.

Xiao Budian blinked his big, black eyes, his eyes revealing a colour of joy and cheering aloud: “Great!”

Xiao Yan at the side also revealed an expression of “We’re saved.”

The six cultivators of the house of the Marquis of Xuanji all secretly nodded their heads. Looks like these two little kids don’t seem to be faking it, they are indeed from the Yu clan.

Little did they know that Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian had already made an agreement beforehand. If they encounter trouble then they’ll raise the Yu clan’s flag.

The two people may not have seen Zhu Yi in person before, but they’ve both heard Lin Feng describe his appearance before which is why they recognized Zhu Yi with one look when they met. And it was very evident that even though these six people are cultivators of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, they are not on friendly terms and were bringing along Zhu Yi like escorting a prisoner.

Senior and junior apprentice-brother looked at each and unanimously decided to save Zhu Yi.

But the vast mana fluctuations of the six people told them that these six people were all foundation establishment stage cultivators. Don’t mention the six of them together, even if there was only one person, them two together wouldn’t even be the match for one hand.

Thinking that the yellow-clothed old man mentioned that their “family” was waiting at Tianjing City, Xiao Budian secretly moaned in his heart. He didn’t know before that people from the Yu clan had actually come to the Great Zhou Dynasty and arrived at Tianjing City.

Xiao Yan swept him with the corner of his eyes, hinting at him to calm down. Xiao Budian collected himself and then got close to Zhu Yi, asking curiously: “Big brother, are you also training with your elders?”

The yellow-clothed old man laughed. The other people also started laughing. Their smiling faces were very strange, one of them laughed saying: “Little buddy, he is not the same as you, he’s nothing but a scholar who learned a dao technique without permission.”

Hearing this, Zhu Yi raised his brows and said calmly: “Even though it is not of my free will, but just looking at the results it could indeed be considered training.”

The yellow-clothed old man slightly knit his brows and became angered in his heart. He knew that Zhu Yi was talking about the matter of Huang San being killed by Liu Yi with one attack.

But Xiao Budian does not care about what Zhu Yi’s eye-opener is pointing at. Instead he is a bit curious right now as to why his master would have his eyes on this green-clothed scholar as a disciple.

At this moment, the purple-fine-clothed middle-aged man who was silent the entire time suddenly lifted his head and said with a heavy voice: “Wait, something’s wrong.”

Everybody was startled. The purple-fine-clothed middle-aged man first stared at Xiao Budian: “You practise a thunder class dao technique.” He then turned his gaze towards Xiao Yan: “You practise a fire class dao technique.”

The other foundation establishment stage cultivators also reacted over, all of them using their mana to investigate and discovering that it was indeed so. The expressions on their faces all became dark.

The yellow-clothed old man said slowly: “The water class dao technique the Art of the Water God is known throughout the entire world, why don’t you two practise the dao technique of your clan?”

Xiao Budian’s and Xiao Yan’s hearts slightly sank. They didn’t think that they would reveal a flaw here. The two people’s minds rapidly turned, Xiao Budian answered while maintaining his composure: “Whatever dao technique my master teaches me is whatever I learn.”

The yellow-clothed old man’s face became dark: “Nonsense, if you really are a direct descendant of the Yu clan how could you take an outsider as your master?”

“Because his master is even stronger than the Yu clan.”

A calm voice lightly rose up. Lin Feng slowly walked out and appeared before everybody.

Xiao Budian and Xiao Yan revealed a smile at the same time, bowing towards Lin Feng: "Greetings master."

The yellow-clothed old man creased his brows: "You talk big, may I ask who you are?"

Zhu Yi stared at Lin Feng, his eyes revealing a hint of surprise but he did not say anything.

He didn't say anything but Lin Feng approached him on his own. After closely observing Zhu Yi for a while he let out a sigh: "I nearly missed you back then, I really didn't think that you are actually Bingyun's son, you've already grown so big."

With this remark Zhu Yi instantly became rooted on the spot.

The cultivators of the house of the Marquis stared at Lin Feng in puzzlement, only that yellow-clothed old man was dumbfounded and shocked: "You... You actually know Meng Bingyun?"

Of the six people only this old man vaguely knows Meng Bingyun's background. The other five people all think that she is just a concubine of the Marquis of Xuanji, they've never even paid attention to her exact name before.

Lin Feng did not respond to the old man, just continuing to stare at Zhu Yi: “That day the reason I headed towards Spring Mountain was to visit the grave of an old friend. I came across you by chance but I did not recognize you.”

“Afterwards only after asking that old monk in the temple did I know that you are Bingyun’s son.” Lin Feng said with deep feeling: “That you can regularly go and sweep your mother’s grave is very good. The world has already forgotten Meng Bingyun, but at least she has left something valuable in this world.”

Zhu Yi’s eyes turned slightly red. He bowed his body and said: “Even though I have never heard my mother mention you, but my mother has passed away for many years and you can still remember her. I thank you here on behalf of my mother.”

Lin Feng’s eyes stared straight at Zhu Yi. He said slowly: “In that past I once promised your mother that if you were willing, I could take you in as my successor and teach everything I know to you, helping you step upon the path of immortals and live an unrestrained life for eternity.”

“Zhu Yi, are you willing?”

Zhu Yi’s face revealed an expression of contemplation. Lin Feng did not rush him and calmly stood on the spot.

But the cultivators of the house of the Marquis were upset. Starting from the leading old man they all stared angrily at Lin Feng and scolded aloud.

“Young Lord Yi is the son of the Marquis of Xuanji. Who he chooses as his master, what path he walks in the future and what kind of life he lives will naturally be arranged by the Marquis. All Young Lord Zhu has to do obey, I believe that the Marquis’ arrangements will always be the best.”

“The Marquis of Xuanji, Marquis Zhu is his father. Don’t mention that Meng Bingyun has already died a long time ago, even if she was still alive she would still just be a concubine by the Marquis’ side, she has no power to interfere in the Marquis’ decisions!”

“The Marquis is the pillar that hold up the sky of the Zhou Dynasty, the golden bridge above the sea. He is the sky of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, all personnel and matters within the house of the Marquis have to follow the Marquis’ arrangements or else that is going against the heavens and they will suffer the wrath of heaven!”

“Leave quickly you daoist. This world may be big, but if you aggravate the Marquis of Xuanji there will be no place in this world for you!”

Lin Feng didn’t even look at them, his eyes were staring at Zhu Yi the entire time. At this moment he turned his head and indifferently glanced at them.

“When I am speaking with someone, keep silent.”

Finishing speaking Lin Feng casually waved his hand. Dazzling golden light flew into the air and illuminated the entire tunnel, boundless mana swept the entire area!

Chapter 51: Bullying With Numbers

With a wave of Lin Feng's hand, golden light flickered and enveloped the entire tunnel.

Everybody was stunned and they all suddenly smelt the faint scent of sandalwood enter their nostrils. Their vision was filled with dazzling golden light and waves of buddhist chanting entered into their ears as if it came from the distant horizon, but also seemingly rising up from the depths of their hearts.

Accompanying the buddhist chanting was Lin Feng's calm voice: "Zhu Hongwu may be Zhu Yi's blood relative, but not for a single day has he conducted his responsibilities of teaching him. He only uses etiquette and rules to bound his body and mind, satisfying his own selfish desires and desire for control. He is a shame as a father and a husband, he has no right to interfere with Zhu Yi choosing the path he wants to walk."

"Zhu Yi is the son of an old friend of mine, regardless of whether or not he becomes my disciple today I will not sit still and watch others suppress his development."

"This child's own path will be chosen by himself and he alone will be responsible for it."

Lin Feng's calm and indifferent, yet also powerful words fell into Zhu Yi's ears. Even Zhu Yi who's always had a strong will felt a wave of warm soothingness in his heart, a lot of the indignation stuck in his heart for many years also disappeared.

The face of the middle-aged man in a body of purple fine-clothes was as cold as ice, he shouted out: “Die zealot!” Waving his two hands, nine rings of light flew out and headed straight for Lin Feng.

Zhu Yi has seen the fine-clothed middle-aged man strike out before. He knows that the people trapped by the rings of light will be unable to move and can only wait to be captured. Seeing him use the same trick to fight Lin Feng he couldn’t help but speak out to warn him: “Hurry up and dodge, don’t get caught by the light!”

Lin Feng had a calm composure, he chanted in a prolonged voice: “24 Heaven Arhat Formation, open!”

The sariras that were released before shined brightly. The golden light became increasingly more radiant and blended together, turning into a heavy haze and covering the entire tunnel. The scent of sandalwood permeated the air and thunderous buddhist chanting shook the ears.

A giant hand poked out from the golden light haze and slapped away three rings of light.

Afterwards, an arhat light figure covered in golden light stepped out from the light haze. With its massive hundred foot tall figure it had already arrived in front of the fine-clothed middle-aged man with two steps. Its fist the size of a house came smashing down on his head.

The fine-clothed middle-aged man let out a cold snort. The spell sign of his two hands changed and the nine rings of light suddenly connected together as a line in mid-air, stabbing down towards the arhat's head like a sword.

The golden arhat chanted the name of Buddha in a low voice, its two palms coming together and clapping towards the center, catching the rings of light that had linked together into a line.

The rings of light changed again. The nine rings of lights slipped over each other, linking together like a chain and then arced through the air tying up the golden arhat.

At this moment the nine rings of light were connected end to end, turning into a giant ring of light and enclosing the golden arhat in the middle, bounding it and causing it to be unable to move.

The golden arhat exerted force to break free but it was as if the ring of light was made of elastic. It constantly expanded and shrank, neutralizing the arhat's great strength and causing it to be unable to break free.

The fine-clothed middle-aged man laughed coldly: "And I thought you would be quite skilled, you're nothing but so!"

The five cultivators of the Five Elements Sect also revealed smiles of disdain on their faces. The yellow-clothed old man stroked his white beard and smiled saying: "So it's a scum of the Great Thunder Monastery, too bad your dao technique has yet to reach a

sufficient level...”

“Boom!”

Another pair of giant palms poked out from the light haze and a second golden arhat revealed itself. Following closely behind it was also a third one...

The laughter of the cultivators of the house of the Marquis abruptly stopped.

“Ouch!” Under his great shock, the yellow-clothed old man accidentally pulled off a few hairs from his beard causing him to grimace in pain.

The fine-clothed middle-aged man stared in terror at the two massive golden arhats that were also 100 feet tall that rushed out together. They stood separately at two sides and together grabbed the ring of light binding the first golden arhat.

“Buddha is merciful!”

With a low shout the three arhats exerted force together, working from inside and outside and directly tugging to pieces the ring of light.

His soul-bound magic item destroyed, the fine-clothed middle-aged man spit out a mouth of vital blood and then fell backwards towards the ground without making a sound.

Lin Feng smiled asking: “Who is it who is nothing but so?”

One Five Elements Sect cultivator shouted: “Three against one, what is there to be proud of? We five people here will destroy your arhats!”

Lin Feng chuckled: “Your meaning is that you’re going to bully me with numbers?”

The cultivator shouted asking: “So what if I am?”

“Not much.” Lin Feng lightly clapped his hands and then one after another golden arhats emerged from the light haze.

A 100 foot tall arhat, its head bumping straight into the ceiling of the tunnel. Looking at it it possess a peerless pressure.

And when 24 of such massive arhats appear together in the tunnel they instantly created a type of terrifying pressure the covered the skies.

Lifting their eyes and looking, in the entire tunnel the cultivators of the house of the Marquis could not see the stone walls and the ceiling of the tunnel, they could only see the colossal bodies of the golden arhats.

24 golden arhats, 24 foundation establishment stages, this kind

of line-up appearing in front of the cultivators of the Five Elements Sect virtually made them completely breakdown. They blankly watched as the golden arhats surrounded them.

Lin Feng's soft laughter rose up in the light haze: "Bullying me with numbers? Hehe..."

The yellow-clothed old man's face was ghastly pale but he could still maintain his composure: "Don't panic, this should be a formation, just charge out of the area of the spell formation!"

The other four people also calmed down. The five people cast a spell together and five-coloured divine light flashed in the buddhist light formation.

Different from the formation when fighting the Society of the Strong Gale before, this time the five people were completely serious. The five people all spit out a mouth of vital blood filled with their own vital energy. The vital blood landed in the five-coloured divine light and rapidly evaporated while a change occurred to the five-coloured divine light.

At this moment, the originally distinctly separate five colours of the pillar of light had mixed together and turned into a beam of black light.

The black light was like a slit that had suddenly split open in a piece of black silk.

Brown soil slowly seeped out from the slit, gathering together and spitting out a tender green bud. It rapidly grew in the wind and the surrounding air magically congealed into drops of glistening water droplets, sprinkling down on the bud and giving bloom to a gorgeous and burning flower of fire.

A faint golden glow flashed from the stamen of the fire flower. The next moment a tiny golden sword shot out from the stamen, arcing across the air like a fleeting swan.

The sword aura was subtle, it looked unassuming but it was filled with destructive power. The lethality of this beam of sword aura is not the least bit weaker than an aurous core talisman!

Lin Feng who was hidden within the light haze was indifferent towards it. With a thought, buddhist light flickered above the heads of the 24 arhat light figures and blended together, turning into a golden disk and smashing towards the sword aura.

Just like a thin and delicate sword encountering a giant axe that could split the world, in moaning sounds that sounded like crying the long sword was humorously but also tragically split into broken pieces!

The five people coughed out blood in unison. The yellow-clothed old man howled: "Run! Every man who gets away counts!"

Hearing this Lin Feng laughed saying: "Nobody's getting away."

“The glaring eyes of the arhat suppress the heavens! Crush! Crush! Crush!”

The 24 golden arhats opened wide their eyes and shouted out together, 48 giant, shiny golden hands pressed down together.

In the sound of shouting and screaming the cultivators of the Five Elements Sect were all killed by the golden arhats.

The purple-fine-clothed middle-aged man who had fallen to the ground unconscious before suddenly jumped up from the ground and ignited a talisman in his hand. He roared hoarsely: “You will pay.”

The talisman was lit ablaze, flickering with the light of fire in the air. The fine-clothed middle-aged man extended his finger and wrote a giant “Buddha” character in the air. (TL: This is the character, 佛)

Pausing for a moment he then wrote the character “Yu”. (TL: This is the character, 于)

A thought rose up in Lin Feng’s heart and he did not stop him at the first moment. Pausing for a moment, only after the two characters “Buddha” and “Yu” were lit ablaze together with the talisman and turned into a beam of light piercing through the air did he control the arhat formation and also kill the fine-clothed middle-aged man.

Using unmatched power to sweep away six foundation establishment stage cultivators, Lin Feng was pleased in his heart.

Even though he's already dealt with two aurous core stage cultivators before, those two times were both achieved under near-death circumstances using trickery. They weren't like this time, completely fair and square, using his own strength to crush the enemy and winning with great satisfaction.

Lin Feng said in his heart: "Sure enough increasing one's own strength is the absolute principle."

These 24 sariras really are good stuff. They themselves can provide sufficient mana to supply the spell formation and don't need to waste Lin Feng's mana, allowing Lin Feng who is at the qi disciple stage to be also able to use the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation this kind of overpowering formation.

Retracting the sariras and formation, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian walked over and greeted him again: "Master!"

Xiao Budian flattered Lin Feng with a giant grin: "Master is so amazing!"

Lin Feng smiled and patted his tiny head, turning his head and looking towards Zhu Yi who had a quiet expression.

Right now Zhu Yi has already completely calmed down. He bowed towards Lin Feng: "Thank you for saving me."

Lin Feng's expression was calm. He didn't now say anything, he knows that Zhu Yi still has something to say.

Sure enough, after being silent for a moment Zhu Yi continued saying: "I have one question, I hope that you can answer it for me."

Lin Feng waved his sleeves: "Speak your mind."

Zhu Yi inhaled a deep breath and slowly asked: "May I ask in your heart, in this world is reasoning the biggest or is strength the biggest?"

Lin Feng looked closely at Zhu Yi. The green-clothed scholar's eyes were calm and resolute, clearly he has his own answer.

Chapter 52: 3 In 1 Big Gift

Zhu Yi asked seriously: “May I ask in your heart, in this world is reasoning the biggest or is strength the greatest?”

“Without strength you will be unable to uphold your reason. With empty strength but no reason, it is nothing but mindless violence.” Lin Feng smiled lightly: “What is the biggest in the world? A person with strength speaking reason, this reason is the biggest!”

Zhu Yi’s eyes exploded with an astonishing spirit.

“That’s right! If I had your strength, I would definitely dare to stand up for myself in front of my father. What is the biggest in the world, reason is the biggest. Father and son can also argue by reasoning, even emperors and officials can argue by reasoning!”

“If the prince have great faults, they ought to remonstrate with him, and if he do not listen to them after they have done so again and again, they ought to dethrone him! Those subservient principles of my father have strayed from the true nature of scholars. But towards these principles, with my feeble strength how can I argue over him?”

“If the king makes a great mistake then scholars need to dissuade him. If the king does not listen repeatedly and insists upon his actions then he will be dethroned! This is the principle of scholars, unfortunately without strength I am unable to uphold these principles.”

“Just as master said, speaking reason with strength, this is the correct path!”

Finishing speaking Zhu Yi lifted the lap of his robe and kneeled on the ground, kowtowing heavily: “Please take me in master, Zhu Yi is willing to practise under master’s teachings and learn dao techniques, learn reason!”

Lin Feng secretly breathed a sigh of relief: “The third one, the hardships all these days is all worth it!”

Officially taking in Zhu Yi as his disciple, the third grid of data appeared in the disciple system that belongs to Zhu Yi.

Name: Zhu Yi

Age: 15 years 3 months

Current Cultivation Level: Guiding energy into the body, about to enter qi disciple level 1.

Potential Attributes: “Bone Root -> 7; Comprehension -> 9; Will -> 8; Blessings -> 10

Recommended Teaching Plan: “Recommended to practise thunder class or buddhist dao techniques. In terms of abilities recommended to practise spells as the main direction of development.

Lin Feng pondered for a moment. Even though he has the Kṣitigarbha Sutra and the Art of Acala these two top-notch dao techniques, he still decided to pass on to Zhu Yi the Nine Heaven

Thunder Technique. The reason for this is because he's got a few more thunder class abilities and spells on his hands, paired up with the Nine Heaven Thunder Technique it is more advantageous for combat.

“This is your eldest apprentice-brother Xiao Yan and also my current head disciple.” Lin Feng pointed at Xiao Yan and then pointed towards Xiao Budian: “This is your junior apprentice-brother Shi Tianhao, originally he was the first disciple whom I took in, but he is a big sloth and voluntarily chose to be the smallest.”

Zhu Yi looked towards Xiao Yan, his eyes flashing. He then bowed towards him: “Greetings Eldest Apprentice-Brother.”

Xiao Yan had his arms behind his head, he smiled and said with a lazy attitude: “No need to be so formal, between us apprentice-brothers there's no need to be so courteous.”

Zhu Yi smiled lightly and still very seriously clasped his hands and saluted Xiao Budian. After pausing for a moment he said: “Junior apprentice-brother Tianhao.”

Xiao Budian bowed towards him with a smiling face: “Greetings Senior apprentice-brother.”

Zhu Yi took a deep look at him and didn't say anything more. He said in his heart: “People say it matters not when we start learning, whoever attains shall be the teacher. Compared to this junior apprentice-brother there is too much of a difference between us. I

need to do my best to catch up and then surpass him to be able to achieve the effect of acting by example as the senior apprentice-brother.”

When the three apprentice-brothers finished greeting each other Lin Feng opened his mouth and said: “I travel the world and will not stop in the Zhou Dynasty for very long. I also don’t have any intentions of taking up residence in Tianjing City, what plans do you have?”

“If you want to remain in the Zhou Dynasty I can pass on dao techniques for you to record and then return at regular intervals to see you.”

Zhu Yi thought seriously for a moment and responded saying: “The ancients say it is better to travel ten thousand miles than to read ten thousand books. I am willing to follow master to travel the world.” After pausing for a moment he said softly: “I don’t intend to participate in this year’s imperial examination anymore, but three years later I hope that master can allow me to return to Tianjing City to participate in the imperial examination.

Lin Feng smiled, he knows that besides attending the imperial examination to complete his aspiration, Zhu Yi also has thoughts of returning home in glory after attaining success in his cultivation prowess and reasoning with his father, the Marquis of Xuanji.

“Entering under my teaching all you need to do is obey my rules. I will never restrict your freedom.” Lin Feng smiled saying: “Like I said, you have to walk your own path on your own, for your own matters make your own decisions.”

Zhu Yi smiled saying: “I understand.”

Lin Feng lead his three disciples and left the Black Cloud Underground Palace. Standing at the entrance of the underground palace Lin Feng felt regretful in his heart: “I have the Black Cloud Flag, this underground palace is like my own home. If there wasn’t the Nether Blood River causing trouble I could treat this place as my base. Too bad, it really is too bad.”

Same as the previous two times, after taking in Zhu Yi as his disciple the reward the system gave was also a lottery chance and 500 trading points.

Lin Feng still continued to save up his trading points. He already has his eyes on something good in the trading system, but it is very costly and requires him to save up a bit more.

In any case after looting Hui Ku and the six cultivators of the house of the Marquis Lin Feng has obtained many cultivation pills beneficial to cultivating. Even though he’s got an extra mouth to feed now it is still enough to use.

Lin Feng entered the lottery system: “Let’s see if anything good will appear in the lottery this time.”

This time Lin Feng hopes to be able to get a martial skill. Zhu Yi is suited to practise spells. Cloud Dragon Escape and the Nine Heavens Thunder Summoning are enough for him to learn for a while, while over at Xiao Budian who is suited to practise both

spells and martial skills, Lin Feng has still yet to truly teach him a martial skill. Not to mention Xiao Yan who is suited to specialize in the martial path.

Mr. Vulture's bone mace is actually refined using a martial ability called White Bone Hammer Smash. The old geezer himself is proficient in the martial way. He was at an old age and was unable to increase his cultivation prowess. His qi and blood gradually declined which is why he used his own martial skill to refine this bone mace magic item to fight enemies.

White Bone Hammer Smash is actually pretty good, but including the Art of Acala that everyone knows comes from the Great Thunder Monastery, if Lin Feng is always teaching his disciples abilities and dao techniques from other sects it is inevitable that they will have doubts in their hearts.

Thus Lin Feng hopes to obtain a martial ability of less well-known origin, of course its power also has to be acceptable. If he can't get one from the lottery draw then Lin Feng will probably have to bear the pain and expend trading points to trade for a martial skill from the system.

“Ocean Wave Palm? Not bad, but it doesn't have much growth.”

“Thunder Arhat Fist? The martial skill for monks of the Great Thunder Monastery to build their foundation. No good, disregarding its low level, any person would be able to recognize that it's a martial skill of the Great Thunder Monastery.”

Very unluckily, the three abilities in the wheel system were all spells.

And while the three types of abilities in the dice system were all martial skills, it's unfortunate that they are either not strong enough or are the signature martial skills of other sects. People can recognize them with one glance.

“The third one? Hm, Divine Vulture Palm, the famous martial skill of the wandering cultivator Master Vulture from thousands of years ago. But since Master Vulture passed away it has already been lost... This one's not bad!”

Finally his luck wasn't completely horrible. After looking at the description of the third martial skill Lin Feng's eyes lit up.

Divine Vulture Palm is in the eighth grid, in other words when Lin Feng rolls his dice he needs to roll an eight to be able to obtain this martial skill.

“The number is very lucky, I choose you!”

Giving the command in his mind the three dice instantly started spinning.

Like the previous time, the three dice still don't stop at the same time. They become still one after another and very quickly the first die stopped spinning.

A giant “6” was facing upward.

Lin Feng’s heart instantly sank. It was just the first die and it was already a six. To obtain the Divine Vulture Palm at eight points the last two dice can only roll ones.

Not even an extra point is okay, this probability is honestly too low.

Very soon the second die also stopped. It was precisely a one!

Lin Feng breathed out a heavy sigh of relief. His eyes stared closely at the last die and he silently prayed in his heart: “I only want a one, I only want a one!” At the same time he rapidly scanned each of the potential items he could get.

The first two dice add up to a sum of seven, then after the last dice settles down the potential total is 8-13.

Number 8, Divine Vulture Palm.

Number 9, nothing.

Number 10, an Azure Spirit Pill used to cure poisons.

Number 11, a one-time use talisman with decent power, Thunder Spirit Gold Talisman.

Number 12, the mystery chest with a question mark.

Number 13...

“Hm? Wait a second, mystery chest?” Lin Feng was slightly surprised. A thought was turning in his mind when the third dice had already stopped.

Lin Feng swallowed his saliva and looked over. Facing upwards on the third dice was a big “5”!

Six plus one plus five, twelve.

Lin Feng stared with mixed feelings at the mysterious chest that had already appeared before him. Speaking of it his luck is actually pretty good. Out of a total of four lottery draws he got the special prize twice.

But who knows exactly what will come out from the chest? Right now Lin Feng desperately needs a dependable martial skill.

With a nervous heart Lin Feng opened the chest. Three orbs of light flew out from the chest.

Lin Feng was stunned, he then saw the first orb of light fly to his front. The light dispersed and a fire-red coloured pill landed in Lin Feng’s palm.

“Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill, condensation of the fire essence of the world. Hot but not intense, has a miraculous effect in healing cold injuries.”

Lin Feng let out a sigh: “I have no need for this thing. Forget it, I’ll put it away first just in case.”

I got the big special prize, don’t give me something entirely useless. Lin Feng was rather upset, after putting away the Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill the second orb of light landed in front of him. The light dispersed and revealed its true form.

“A martial skill, Wayward Flying Sword?”

“One thousand years ago Wayward Sword Saint’s secret sword technique. Using this sword technique Wayward Sword Saint climbed Mt. Shu and challenged the Mt. Shu Sword Sect., emerging unscathed. Since the death of Wayward Sword Saint it has already been lost?”

This is a martial skill even more awesome than the Divine Vulture Palm.

Looking at the sword manual of the Wayward Flying Sword in front of him, the depression in his heart was instantly swept away. He only felt like laughing towards the sky.

With a giant grin on his face Lin Feng put away the sword manual and then stared at the third orb of light. He was delighted

in his heart: “The special prize this time is really awesome. Looks like it’s a three in one big gift, giving out three items at once, wonder what good thing this third one will be?”

The orb of light landed in Lin Feng’s palm and the light dispersed.

Lin Feng looked at the item and suddenly froze. He blinked his eyes and for a moment he didn’t know what to say.

“Jade Tree of Knowledge Leaf, the leaf of one of the four great spiritual trees of the world, the Jade Tree of Knowledge.

Lin Feng was slightly at a loss: “What do I need this thing for. Jade Tree of Knowledge, Jade Tree of Knowledge... Isn’t that the true form of that female demon Long Ye?”

“If you have no need for this thing then why not give it to me?”

Lin Feng was in the middle of thinking when an extremely lazy voice suddenly rose up in his mind.

That is a female’s voice. It is not crisp and pleasant, instead it is low and hoarse. But it possesses a peculiar charm and is very alluring, leading the heart to willingly sink into the bottomless abyss.

But right now Lin Feng was covered with chills. He had an expression like he’d seen a ghost and he nearly screamed: “You’re

Long Ye?!”

Chapter 53: None Of Them Are Fools

“If you have no use for this Jade Tree of Knowledge leaf then why not give it to me.”

Long Ye’s tone of voice was soft and soothing, as if she was lightly whispering words of love into her lover’s ear and pouting.

But hearing her voice Lin Feng’s back became covered in cold sweat and he felt his hands and feet become cold.

At the first moment he determined that the voice actually came from his Northern Aurora Sword.

“This demoness, has she been attached to my spell sword the entire time? Starting from half a year ago at Stone Village she already...” Countless thoughts flashed across Lin Feng’s heart. He forced himself to calm down and slowly opened his mouth saying: “You’re finally willing to speak?”

Only when the words left his mouth did Lin Feng discover that even his voice was a bit hoarse, but he still did his best to appear nonchalant, as if he already knew that Long Ye was hiding beneath his eyelids the entire time.

Lin Feng’s mind entered into the Northern Aurora Sword. A blanket of white light flashed by and a human figure immediately appeared in Lin Feng’s mind.

Long hair flowing behind her, bare-footed and her clothes as white as snow. Her face was inhumanly beautiful, it was precisely Long Ye.

Her beauty was the greatest that Lin Feng had ever seen, only Yan Mingyue could compare with her. This pair of archrivals really could be called peerless beauties.

Unfortunately Lin Feng was entirely not in the mood of admiring the beautiful woman in front of him. He still remembers in the past to save Xiao Budian, he lead Murong Yanran and co. to fight with Long Ye and then he took advantage of the situation and destroyed Long Ye's body with a beam of Northern Aurora Mystic Light.

Long Ye's "I've remembered you" at that time was still fresh in his ears, making Lin Feng shudder in fear.

Long Ye laughed softly: "I really can't see through you. Hey, exactly what is your cultivation level?"

Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath and said: "Before I was merciful and let you live, looks like you have yet to learn your lesson."

Long Ye laughed saying: "I've learned my lesson, that's why even until now I haven't killed you yet."

Lin Feng's heart felt a chill, he then continued to hear Long Ye say: "Because I really can't see through you. I consider my

cultivation level as relatively decent. Even though now I am heavily injured, my judgement still remains but I cannot see through you.”

“If I say that you are at a high level, but when you use your escape technique to travel you are just at the qi disciple stage. You never fight on your own and only control this foundation establishment stage spell sword to fight enemies. You also only have a qi disciple stage standard when setting up formations.

Long Ye spoke softly: “Do you really only have a level of qi disciple stage and it is simply that you possess some sort of treasure that can obstruct the probing of others? Honestly, there were so many times where I almost could not resist attacking you.”

Lin Feng secretly clenched his fists. He acted calm and said lightly: “How can the likes of you see through my depths.”

Long Ye quietly stared at Lin Feng. She suddenly smiled, her smile was like the moon breaking through clouds, stunning all of creation: “So, I’ve changed my mind. I won’t bother you anymore, instead I’ll make a trade with you.”

Lin Feng rapidly calculated in his heart to see whether or not he could kill this demoness and completely get rid of all future troubles.

While calculating in his heart Lin Feng casually responded: “A trade? I have the Jade Tree of Knowledge leaf that you want, what can you give me?”

Long Ye brushed the hair by her ear, the corner of her lips revealing a faint smile: “You seem to be looking for satisfactory disciples?”

“Hm?” Murderous intent surged in Lin Feng’s heart, the highest level of alert rang in his heart. The system is his greatest secret, nobody can know about it.

Because this damned system’s setting is incredibly bullshit. If Lin Feng does not complete the main quest he will be directly killed by the system. If he lets people know the contents of his quest and then they obstruct his way, then Lin Feng will really be done for.

The 24 sariras and the Black Cloud Flag were all in place. Lin Feng was prepared to strike out at any moment while on the surface he was still acting as if nothing had happened: “Seeing outstanding talent anybody would be moved, I am naturally no exception.”

Long Ye said: “Oh? But I’ve noticed that your disciples are all people of talent who were previously buried. Others were unable to discover their uniqueness but you had a discerning eye.”

Lin Feng chuckled dryly. He did not pick up the conversation but his murderous intent was already nearly inconceivable.

But he then heard Long Ye continue saying: “Seeing you taking in disciples I know that you have big plans. You have plans of establishing your own sect? Regardless of you humans or we

demons, we all need a suitable place to cultivate.”

“If you want to establish a new sect then you require even more a suitable place to act as your base. I just so happen to know a place that is still ownerless, you might need it?”

Lin Feng’s mana that was already circulating was stopped right in its tracks, getting stuck in his chest and making him nearly cough out blood from the stuffiness.

After a long while Lin Feng finally caught his breath and he asked snappily: “Where?”

Long Ye smiled saying: “You’ve agreed to my trade?”

Lin Feng calmed his heart and said calmly: “How do I know whether you speak the truth or lies? We’ve had some nasty conflicts before, you don’t have the capital for me to believe me.”

Long Ye rolled her eyes at him. Her expression was exceedingly charming, just like she was flirting with her lover: “If you want to increase the price then just say so.”

Lin Feng was overwhelmed in his heart and only calmed his mind after a difficult struggle.

Long Ye said: “Okay then, I’ll add another item. This item I can give you first and then you give me the tree leaf and then I’ll tell you the location of the place and then you go check it out yourself.

No matter what you don't lose, are you satisfied now?"

Lin Feng slightly furrowed his brows: "What item?"

Long Ye raised her hand, her fair palm was holding a short, intricate stone flute. The stone flute revealed an ancient and great aura.

Lin Feng's pupils slightly retracted. He said in his heart: "This aura, I seem to have encountered it somewhere before... Where?"

"That's right, this is the aura of the dao technique of the Void Temple! I've sensed it on Yang Mingyue before, this stone flute is related to the Void Temple."

Thinking here the conversation with Yan Mingyue that day instantly surfaced in Lin Feng's mind. Yang Mingyue once mentioned that there is something in Long Ye's hands that regardless of her or the Void Temple have to try and get back.

Could it be this stone flute?

Lin Feng lifted his head and looked at Long Ye. He didn't speak but from his eyes Long Ye could already understand his query. Thus she nodded her head: "That's right, this is the item Yan Mingyue is looking for. But I also do not know exactly of what importance this item has towards her and the Void Temple."

She crooked her head and looked at Lin Feng with a cute and

playful expression: “Are you willing to make this trade?”

Lin Feng did not speak, seemingly weighing things out in his heart.

But in reality there was a storm raging in his heart, countless thoughts flashed by: “That day this demoness clearly bore a grudge against me, why can she act as though nothing happened now?”

Lin Feng didn’t believe that this Long Ye would have a big heart and not care about old grudges.

Besides being unable to grasp Lin Feng’s true strength and thus causing her to have concerns, Long Ye should also have other intentions.

For her there is more good than harm in keeping Lin Feng alive.

Where is the good? There can only be one possibility, and that is targeting Yan Mingyue and the Void Temple.

A light of understanding rose up in Lin Feng’s heart. The mutual probing and repeated secret battles between him and Yan Mingyue before all landed in Long Ye’s eyes. From Long Ye’s point of view, keeping him alive is thus leaving behind a possibility of hindering Yan Mingyue.

“If I want to establish the number one sect in the world and become history’s number one founder then I will definitely clash

with the current big sects. The Void Temple stands at the very front.” Lin Feng laughed helplessly in his heart: “This demoness may not know this point but she undoubtedly made a correct choice.”

Thinking here a thought suddenly flashed across in Lin Feng’s mind. Yan Mingyue clearly knew that he learned the Heaven Cage Sigil but she didn’t do anything. Besides being unable to see the depths of his strength is it not also because she has a grudge with Long Ye?

At the time Lin Feng hoped for Yan Mingyue to go deal with Long Ye, perhaps Yan Mingyue also had the same intentions, wanting to borrow Lin Feng’s hand to go deal with Long Ye.

Yan Mingyue may truly want to get back the stone flute in Long Ye’s hands, but she won’t necessarily fight to the death against Long Ye.

On one hand she’s worried that they’ll both be heavily injured or even go down together, on the other hand she very likely wants to leave behind Long Ye to conversely hinder Lin Feng.

These two woman, they really aren’t easy to deal with!

But I’m not easy to bully either.

After planning things out Lin Feng made up his mind.

Chapter 54: All Sides Take Action

“After obtaining the Jade Tree of Knowledge leaf, what will you do?”

Even though he already had a plan in his heart, Lin Feng still opened his mouth and asked.

“Yan Mingyue wants to return to the Void Temple, I naturally also have my own place to return to.” Long Ye smiled faintly: “I’ve already said before, I don’t have any thoughts of bothering you anymore.”

“For your own good you’d better not.” Lin Feng said coolly: “I accept your trade, it’s a deal.”

Lin Feng believes that if Long Ye obtains the Jade Tree of Knowledge leaf then she will definitely recover a significant amount of her strength. After all her true form is a Jade Tree of Knowledge.

After completing this trade Lin Feng can also use Long Ye to go hinder Yan Mingyue.

Lin Feng didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. Them three people have fallen into this kind of bizarre and also tangled up circle of plotting. Each person hopes that the opponent in front of them can go deal with and hinder the third person.

Playing with the stone flute in his hand Lin Feng looked at Long Ye's departing figure with a thoughtful expression.

In a sense, Long Ye has essentially thrown a hot potato at Lin Feng.

If he uses it well, Lin Feng can use this stone flute to scoop up sufficient benefits from the Void Temple.

But conversely, it can also bring disaster to Lin Feng. If the number one holy land in the world ignores everything and wants to forcefully take a certain item, nobody in the entire world dares to say that they can definitely keep it.

Lin Feng pondered in his heart. Maybe the conflict that exists between Yan Mingyue and the new Daoist Wayfarer of the Void Temple is something that he can take advantage of?

“Speaking of it, what exactly does this stone flute do? Why does the Void Temple value this little thing so highly.” Lin Feng scratched his head, he couldn't feel any strong mana fluctuations from the stone flute.

The little things looks to be so ordinary.

Lin Feng shook his head and retracted his thoughts: “The matter of the cultivation abode can be put back, currently the most important matter is still my fourth disciple!”

Finally, this is the last one!

Hopefully he can successfully complete it.

It will definitely be successful... right?

The capital city of the Zhou Dynasty, Tianjing, the south-east sector of the city, the House of the Marquis of Xuanji.

Inside of the courtyard stood a skinny old man. The old man held a talisman in his hand, two words were clearly printed on the talisman, a “Buddha” character and a “Yu” character.

The skinny old man creased his brows: “Huang San failed and it’s related to the scum of the Buddhist sect and the Qin Dynasty’s Yu clan?”

Around him stood a circle of cultivators of the house of the Marquis, but in front of this old man they were all reverent and respectful. They did not release a single sound for fear of disturbing the old man’s thoughts.

This skinny old man is the second steward of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, people call him Mister Tao Er. (TL: Er, 二, means 2. San, 三, means three.)

Fatty Huang San is as venomous as a snake, there are also people

who dare to call him a slave behind his back. But with Tao Er, even members of the main branch of the Zhu clan have to respectfully call him Mister Two when seeing him.

The reason for it is because this old man who looks skinny and shrivelled, like even a gust of wind could blow him down, is sufficiently strong!

Whenever the Marquis of Xuanji goes on his campaign of conquest this skinny old man will always follow beside him. He has experienced an untold number of wars, fights, schemes and assassinations. The number of enemies who have died by his hands, just the number of auras core stage cultivators already surpasses the double digits.

In front of him Huang San is just a child.

After a moment Mister Tao Er put away the talisman in his hand and turned around walking towards the main house in the residence.

Seeing him the guard hurriedly greeted him: "Mister Two."

Mister Tao Er nodded his head: "I need to go see the Marquis, it is an urgent matter."

The old man entered the main house and then came out after while. Facing the cultivators of the house of the Marquis waiting for him, Tao Er slowly opened his mouth, but his tone of voice was

filled with an air of killing intent.

“Three things.”

“One, gather up people and head towards the place Huang San and co. went missing. Search every single inch of the place, I want clues.”

“Two, capture all of the already known members of the Society of the Strong Gale and the scum of the Great Thunder Monastery, don’t let anyone of them escape.”

“Three, come together with me and head towards the residence of the Qin Dynasty diplomatic corps to interrogate the members of the Yu clan about this matter.”

Tao Er spoke slowly, every word weighed heavily: “The Marquis’ original words were only two words, investigate thoroughly!”

.....

Tianjing City a day later, a big residence in the western sector of the city, this is the residence of the Great Qin Dynasty’s diplomatic corps.

In the west branch, after sending off Mister Tao Er who visited, a middle-aged man in a body of sapphire blue robes sat silently in a chair.

A young man across from him said angrily: “Zhu Hongwu is too arrogant. His subordinate goes missing and he puts the blame on us!”

The blue-robed middle-aged man glanced at him: “What do you say we should do?”

The young man answered without even thinking: “Do what? We don’t do anything. What does this have to do with us, we’re clearly being framed.”

The blue-robed middle-aged man looked at him and sighed in disappointment.

The young man knew right away that he answered incorrectly and hurriedly lowered his head.

The blue-robed middle-aged man’s expression was calm, but the words that he spoke blazed with a murderous aura: “Somebody is framing we the Yu clan and we just do nothing, just watching them frame us and pour dirty water on our bodies?”

The young man woke up: “You mean?”

The blue-robed middle-aged man snorted: “Whoever dares to mess with the Yu clan must pay for it!” He looked at the young man: “I’ll hand this over to you. The House of the Marquis of Xuanji investigates theirs, we’ll investigate our own. I’d like to see

who dares to mess with the Yu clan!”

The young man hesitated for a moment: “But we are after all serving as envoys in the Zhou Dynasty, this place isn’t our territory and we don’t have enough people.”

The blue-robed middle-aged man said coolly: “Just contact the main family.”

His gaze was a bit deep and quiet: “It really is eventful lately, it’s also not very peaceful over at the Shi clan. It’s said that somebody wants to harm Shi Tianyi. During these moments we cannot fall into disorder, but even more so we cannot do nothing, like that the enemy will instead swarm over all at once.”

Around the Black Cloud Underground Palace, a grey-clothed person stood in the deep mountains. He wore a massive straw hat that covered his face.

“There is the aura of sariras here. Hui Ku was here before and also fought with someone.”

The grey-clothed person silently felt the change in the surrounding spiritual energy: “Fortunately the sariras were not damaged.”

“Hui Ku you sect betraying scum, you dare to defile the bones of the sect elders like so. I will take back the sariras and let their souls

rest in Nirvana.”

“As for you this piece of scum who defiles his elders, I will send you into the cycle of reincarnation!”

Upon smelling the scent of a human, countless savage beasts gathered around the grey-clothed person.

The grey-clothed person took off the straw hat revealing a shiny bald head. A strong light surged in his eyes and when the beasts came in contact with his gaze, they all scattered in fright. Some weaker beasts were actually so frightened that they were unable to control their bladder and bowels, collapsing to the ground.

With a droop of the grey-clothed monk’s eyelids the light vanished and he became ordinary again. Putting on the straw hat, his body flickered and he had already vanished within the vast woodlands.

The battle at the Black Cloud Underground Palace caused all sides to take action.

Lin Feng was unaware of this. He did not hang around the Black Cloud Underground Palace and instead brought along his disciples hitting the road.

Not sure if he already used up all of his luck before this, during his entire trip he did not encounter a fourth candidate who met the

criterion as his disciple.

“Do I have to go back and find Xiao Zhener that little girl?” Lin Feng was stumped in his heart. He traversed half of the Great Zhou Dynasty’s land and also passed through thousands of miles of territory of the Great Qin Dynasty but he still had no gains.

But time was rapidly flying by and in the turn of an eye only one month remained of the one year quest time limit.

Right now the master and disciples were at the southern border of the Great Qin Dynasty. Even though Lin Feng was anxious in his heart, in front of his three disciples he still maintained his composure. While travelling the master and disciples also trained.

This day Zhu Yi’s cultivation had broken through a bottleneck and he was about to increase his level.

Thinking for a moment, Lin Feng left behind Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian to protect Zhu Yi while he controlled the Black Cloud Flag to wander around in the area.

Lightly shaking the flag, under the flowing black light Lin Feng opened up the void and rapidly advanced forward.

He was in the middle of flying in the void when a blanket of dazzling light suddenly lit up before Lin Feng’s eyes.

Where the light vanished was a hazy mist, as if chaos was raging.

Everything looked hazy and blurred.

Lin Feng was startled: “What’s going on? The Black Cloud Flag broke open the void and actually brought me to an alternate space?”

Chapter 55: One Step Late!

With the flickering of the light, Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and actually barged into an alternate space.

The space was shrouded in mist and everything was chaotic and hazy.

After the mist dispersed, what entered the eyes was a boundless void. It appeared desolate and ancient, light occasionally flickered in the darkness but it was an uncountable distance away from Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was alarmed: “What exactly is this place?” He was in the middle of being puzzled when a great mana aura permeated the surroundings and constantly expanded.

The void ruptured once more and a dazzling light once again filled Lin Feng’s vision. When his vision returned to normal he had already returned to Heaven Primal, moreover it looked like his location was still at his previous flight path.

“Was I simply pulled into that void space by chance?” Lin Feng pondered. When he turned his head a face was suddenly imprinted into his eyes.

This is a large old man, he has a wide face with big ears and looks quite dignified. He was staring at Lin Feng and sizing him up, his expression was extremely perplexed.

Lin Feng's heart skipped beat and he thought of that vast mana fluctuation he felt in that void space.

No matter if it's Elder Li of the Blaze Sword Sect or Liu Yang of the Mt. Shu Sword sect, their mana may be deep and powerful, but compared to this big old man before him they are not worth mentioning.

Lin Feng had a guess in his heart, but he didn't even dare to continue thinking along that path because that would make him lose all courage.

At this moment the big old man opened his mouth and spoke. His voice was like rolling thunder: "I am Master Pubei of the Eternal Dao Sect, who are you?"

"The Eternal Dao Sect?" Lin Feng did not have any impressions in his mind. Only after checking the system did he know that this is a sect at the southern border of the Great Qin Dynasty, the master with the highest cultivation level in the sect is at the nascent soul stage.

Without a primordial soul cultivator holding down the fort, this kind of sect naturally cannot compare to the three great holy lands and the Nine Heavens Sword Alliance. But with a nascent soul stage monstrosity they could be considered a prominent sect at the southern border of the Qin Dynasty. The location of the sect is near the Qin Dynasty's most southern area the Ancient Star Domain. That place is the boundary between the human world and

the demon world.

While checking information Lin Feng said: “I am a wild cultivator, just call me Daoist Lin.” Not waiting for Master Pubei to open his mouth again, Lin Feng asked in advance: “Looking at your appearance you seem to be hurt?”

Master Pubei did not respond and closely observed Lin Feng for a moment again, but he still couldn't see the depths of Lin Feng's cultivation level.

Under Master Pubei's great pressure, Lin Feng felt like he was a small boat in a raging storm. Wave after wave crashed against him that could that could engulf him at any moment.

Don't mention retaliating, even if Master Pubei doesn't do anything, simply by applying mental pressure Lin Feng is unable to last for very long.

Luckily after probing for a long time Master Pubei still couldn't perceive Lin Feng's cultivation level. With doubts in his heart he retracted his mana and Lin Feng finally felt a lot better.

“That's right, I was wounded by someone in the Void Battleground. But it is not serious, I can recover after a brief period of closed-door training.” Blue energy faintly flickered over Master Pubei's face, clearly the enemy had penetrated his body using ice class mana.

Lin Feng's heart stirred: "The Void Battleground?" Looks like that void world I accidentally entered before is the Void Battleground.

Lin Feng has heard of the Void Battleground. That is an alternate space independent from the Heaven Primal world. It resides alone beyond the heavens and is vast in space. Even though human cultivators have always been exploring that place, there still remains many regions and areas within the Void Battleground that remain unknown.

Inside of the Void Battleground there are many cultivation resources that are scarce in the Heaven Primal world. But spatial turbulences surge within and it is extremely unstable and dangerous. Even if auras core stage cultivators enter within it is still almost certain death.

Thus in general only great cultivators of the nascent soul stage or primordial spirit stage enter within to search for treasure. But even so, unknown dangers and interpersonal conflict cause many powerful cultivators to fall within that void.

Incidentally, the old elder of Stone Village once mentioned that Xiao Budian's father and grandfather regularly enter into the Void Battleground. In fact, it was precisely because his grandfather went missing in the Void Battleground that his parents went to go save him, thus causing Xiao Budian to suffer disaster.

This progenitor of the Eternal Dao Sect, Master Pubei, in front of him is clearly also a member of the people who enter into the Void Battleground and in the end he suffered a defeat within.

Lin Feng said nonchalantly: “The Void Battleground? There may be risk but presumably you did not walk away with empty pockets either.”

Master Pubei snorted: “Just risk? The progenitor of the Mount Heng School who went in together with me directly perished within. If not for you suddenly barging in and disturbing the void thus allowing me to seize the chance to rip open a rift, this old life of mine would probably also be lost within.”

Lin Feng thought for a moment and took out the Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill that he got from the lottery: “Meeting is a form of fate, I see that your injury is brought about by ice mana. With your mana even though you can heal yourself, it will undoubtedly waste a lot of time.”

“I just so happen to have a Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill here. It has a miraculous effect in healing this type of injury, I give it to you as a gift.”

Master Pubei was greatly surprised. He doesn't even need to take over the pill, with just a glance he knows that Lin Feng speaks the truth. He couldn't help but be immensely puzzled: “Why do you give it to me?” He may say that, but this old man was truly domineering and he bluntly grabbed over the pill.

Lin Feng smiled faintly: “I wanted to give it to you and so I did so. Where do all these whys come from?”

Master Pubei's eyes flashed. He laughed loudly and said: "It was I who was foolish. Okay then, I accept your kindness. If you have time I welcome you at any time to come to the Eternal Dao Sect as a guest."

Lin Feng laughed: "When I have the time." Finishing speaking he turned around and left. Master Pubei was eager to take the medicine to heal his injury and so he naturally did not ask Lin Feng to stay.

Even though Lin Feng doesn't know how much of an effect it will have, but he is still very happy to be able to obtain the favor of a nascent soul stage cultivator using a pill that he doesn't need.

Returning back to the location of his three disciples, the three people were having a lively chat.

Lin Feng asked: "What are you guys talking so happily about?"

Xiao Budian smiled saying: "Master, just now we heard someone tell a strange story. Around here there is a sect called the Mount Heng School. A couple of days ago they opened their doors for new disciples. There was a big brother who didn't pass the assessment and was unable to enter the sect. In the end he actually jumped off a cliff on Mount Heng wanting to suicide."

"He failed to kill himself and was rescued by the people of the Mount Heng School. I heard that they're going to make an exception and take him in as a registered disciple." (TL: In general it goes something like registered disciples, outer disciples, inner

disciples, core disciples and direct disciple.)

At the side Zhu Yi sighed saying: “He is a persistent one and his personality is especially unyielding. But in the end he got what he wanted and his hardships were not for naught.”

Xiao Yan on the other hand shook his head: “Entering into the sect like that, what can he do even if he gets a master? The elders of the sect reluctantly took him in so as to not have a reputation of driving a person to death. They definitely won’t carefully teach him and his sect brothers will also mock him saying that he was only able to enter the sect due to his suicide.”

Zhu Yi said: “Constantly striving to improve oneself is worth commending. I just hope that he can continue persevering or else his pressure will becoming increasingly greater.

At the beginning Lin Feng was just listening to it as a story. But as he continued listening he suddenly felt that something was a bit off: “This kid, why does he sound a bit like the main character of the trash school and mortal school of novels?” (TL: The trash school of novels is where the MC starts off as a piece of trash. Check out “[A Record of a Mortal’s Journey to Immortality](#)” for the mortal school.)

Lin Feng asked: “Just now you guys said that the Mount Heng School has already taken him in?”

The three disciples nodded their heads together: “They just brought him back to the sect.”

Lin Feng didn't say anything more. He brought the three people and immediately headed towards the Mount Heng School. While walking he felt anxious in his heart: "Please get there on time. If I get there a step late and miss him then who do I cry to."

Chapter 56: Sudden Surprise

Lin Feng rushed over to Mount Heng but unfortunately he was indeed a step too late. All the new disciples were in the middle of the disciple ceremony.

The system notification sound rose up: “Discovered target suitable to becoming host’s direct disciple.”

Lin Feng closely scanned the crowd and confirmed that the person the system is talking about is a youth at the very back of the crowd.

That youth’s figure is a bit thin and small. His lips are tightly pressed together and the other disciples beside him are all looking at him with expressions of disdain.

A string of system notifications sounded beside Lin Feng’s ear.

“Talent system has finished organizing the data, target number five’s data is as below.”

“Bone Root -> 5; Comprehension -> 10; Will -> 10; Blessings -> 8.”

“Conclusion: Target lacks innate talent but possesses great potential, recommended to take in as a disciple and carefully guide him, he will definitely become a pillar of the sect.”

Lin Feng was dumbfounded.

What did he see? He actually saw two max attributes. In this kid's four data values there are actually two values that are a max value of 10.

Comprehension is one's understanding of cultivating dao techniques and abilities. Xiao Budian and Xiao Zhener both have a comprehension of 8. This means they can very quickly have a good grasp of anything they learn. The master only needs to teach them once and they themselves are able to build upon this foundation and obtain mastery.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi are even higher, they both have a comprehension of 9. This means that not only do they learn quickly, they can also step out of the box and make innovations.

And what does a comprehension of 10 mean? It means that he instantly grasps whatever he learns and using his own understanding, he can correct the flaws in dao techniques and skills making them reach a more perfect state.

As for a will of 10? It indicates that this person's mind and will are extremely strong, indomitable and unyielding. Nobody and nothing can defeat his spirit.

How many hundreds of millions of beings are there in the Heaven Primal world? Even a prodigy out of a million is still an astronomical number, but in the end only a very few number of them are able to truly amount to something. The reason is because

if one's will is not strong enough then it is very easy to waste one's gift.

Two max attributes plus a blessing of 8 made this kid's completely garbage bone root become not so glaring.

Just as the system concluded, he lacks natural talent but possesses incredible potential. So much so that it's almost a cheat!

Seeing the disciple ceremony in progress, Lin Feng's mind rapidly turned: "What do I do, should I just mess up this disciple ceremony? This Mount Heng School is a big sect of the southern border on par with the Eternal Dao Sect, their strength is not weak..."

"According to what that Master Pubei said, the nascent soul progenitor of this Mount Heng School perished in the Void Battleground. Then the strongest master here at present should be auras core stage, but I don't know how many auras core stages they have. This place is the base of the Mount Heng School, they have the homeground advantage..."

Right now there only remains not even one month until the time-limit of the system quest. Lin Feng's expression was uncertain, he spent a great amount of effort to calm himself down: "So be it, I'll secretly meet with this kid for a moment and then think about it. What is his name?"

"Oh right, Wang Lin."

Lin Feng looked on as Wang Lin entered into the Mount Heng School and heard the system notification beside his ears change to: “Target matches the criterion but already has a master, needs to abolish the current master-disciple relationship to be able to become the host’s disciple.” Lin Feng’s heart was dripping blood.

“Goddammit, just one or two days of time. If I got here one or two days earlier then that would be right when Wang Lin was rejected by the Mount Heng School and in physical and mental pain. All I’d have to do would be to go forward and fool him a bit and I’d be able to easily take him as my disciple.

Feeling any more regret doesn’t help the situation, Lin Feng collected his emotions and started to make plans.

Just as Xiao Yan illustrated, entering into the Mount Heng School using this kind of method, Wang Lin will definitely be detested by his teachers, scorned by his sect-brothers and hated by all. His sense of belong to the sect will not be strong, Lin Feng still has a very good chance.

Thus Lin Feng decisively concealed himself in the Mount Heng School.

He won’t and doesn’t need to enter into those important places. All he has to do is find the residence for registered disciples like Wang Lin. The guard and formation restraints of this kind of place are all very lax and are not a problem for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng found his way towards Wang Lin’s residence and heard

a couple of Mount Heng School disciples mocking Wang Lin.

“A person like you is practically the shame of our Mount Heng School!”

“When the inner disciple exam comes around why don’t go try jumping off a cliff? If you can enter into the inner-sect using suicide again than I’ll say you’ve got some skill.”

Wang Lin was silent, allowing them to mock him. The couple of people walked out of the room while cursing and speaking foul-words.

Only Wang Lin remained in the room. He let out a long breath and lowered his head muttering to himself: “Father, mother, I will definitely succeed, I will become an immortal!”

Lin Feng smiled. His body flickered and he had already arrived in the room. He smiled saying: “You can’t become an immortal in this kind of environment.”

Wang Lin was startled, he stared blankly at Lin Feng who suddenly appeared: “Who are you?”

Lin Feng lightly waved his sleeves, he didn’t answer Wang Lin’s question and instead asked: “Cultivating and seeking the universal way is a long and rugged road. There isn’t much beauty and romanticism, instead there are many thorns and difficulties. In the first place your talent is worse than an average person, if you don’t

do your best to catch up then what hope do you have of succeeding?”

“But in this kind of sect you will only be assigned menial jobs of fetching water and cutting wood. You are called a disciple but you are actually just manual labor.” Lin Feng said calmly: “Your starting point is low to begin with and your speed is even slower, how do you continue walking down this path?”

Wang Lin tightly pressed his lips together. He looked at Lin Feng before him who was wearing a white, wide-sleeved robe and daoist clothes. After a long while he opened his mouth and said: “What is your meaning?”

Lin Feng sighed softly: “I’ve met you before when you were just born. Your natural talent may be poor but our fates are tied together. At the time I already had thoughts of taking you as my disciple. I wanted to waited until you turned 16 before returning, but I didn’t expect that you would have already entered into this Mount Heng School.”

“If you are willing you can leave the Mount Heng School and enter under my teaching.” Lin Feng said generously: “I will carefully guide you and teach you all of my skills and abilities. I will not be like this Mount Heng School and dishonor you by ordering you around like a labourer.”

Speaking up to here Lin Feng laughed softly: “As for my ability, if you want to see it then I’ll take down this Mount Heng School in an instant!”

Wang Lin looked at Lin Feng in amazement. His eyes clearly held a certain degree of fervor, his lips moved wanting to say something but he suddenly held it back.

Not only so, his gaze looking at Lin Feng even had a hint of vigilance and his right hand subconsciously went into his clothes.

Lin Feng was slightly dazed. Wang Lin expression looking at him right now was like guarding against a thief. This was not something Lin Feng foresaw.

“That action of his right hand reaching into his clothes, he seems to be trying to protect something?” A thought appeared in Lin Feng’s heart and he cried out crap in his heart: “Crap, this kid’s blessing is also 8 points, could he have found sort of treasure?”

That appearance of Wang Lin’s, he clearly thinks that Lin Feng knows his secret and is here to trick him for his treasure.

Lin Feng wanted to cry. Looks he wasn’t just a bit late, this Wang Lin’s luck has clearly already started to take a turn for the better. His hegemony aura is flourishing and he is already about to walk upon the path of greatness that belongs to him. (TL: If you’re wondering about the hegemony aura, read the Dragon Proud Sky page in the Almanac of Knowledge.)

Regardless of whether that is some sort of super godly item or if there is an old grandpa inside, overall Wang Lin is already about to make his rebound.

Lin Feng was depressed in his heart but on the surface his expression did not change. He stared calmly at Wang Lin: “Do you find it inconceivable? No matter, make your own decisions. I will stop in the small town at the bottom of the mountain for 20 days. If you’ve made up your mind you can come to the town to find me.”

Under the circumstance where Wang Lin has already become wary of him, he cannot drag his feet and keep sticking to him or else he will instead arouse a negative mentality in him and he will only be even more distrustful.

Finishing speaking Lin Feng used the Cloud Dragon Escape Technique and disappeared out of sight.

Wang Lin was stunned and was slightly regretful in his heart: “Was I too paranoid?”

After going down Mount Heng Lin Feng’s expression was overcast. While walking he calculated in his heart what he has to do to be able to take the bull by the horn and poach his disciple from the Mount Heng School.

“The spiritual energy of this Mount Heng School really is better than our own sect and is more suitable for cultivation.” A voice suddenly travelled into Lin Feng’s ears. Lin Feng’s footsteps paused slightly and he hid his body, after a moment he saw two youths walking up Mount Heng.

“Not too long from now this place will be our Eternal Dao Sect’s territory.” The other youth snorted saying: “Our progenitor Master Pubei safely returned but the progenitor of the Mount Heng School died in the Void Battleground, everything is fate.”

“Only the strong can live in a good cultivation abode, they’re about to move out very soon.”

Watching the figures of the two youths disappear into the mountain, Lin Feng furrowed his forehead and silently pondered.

Maybe with this sudden surprise he now has an opportunity.

In a bit a warm smile like the sun surfaced on Lin Feng’s face.

“What is mine will not get away!”

Chapter 57: Qi Disciple Great Circle Of Perfection

Hearing the contents of their conversation, these two teenage cultivators should both be disciples of the Eternal Dao Sect whom Master Pubei belongs to.

Not long after they climbed the mountain they said their farewells and left. Afterwards some meddlesome disciples on Mount Heng spread word that the Eternal Dao Sect will be visiting in a few days. Disciples from the two sects will spar and test their skills.

The Eternal Dao Sect and the Mount Heng School are relatively close to each other geographically, for the past thousand years the two sects have given each other mutual aid, guarding together against outside forces and demon invasion. But at the same time they have also been secretly competing with each other, disciples often battle with disciples of the other sect and both sides have their wins and losses.

But with this time's competition Lin Feng clearly sensed a different atmosphere.

The Mount Heng School's nascent soul stage progenitor died in the Void Battleground but the Eternal Dao Sect's Master Pubei returned safely.

And it just so happens that the Mount Heng School's base is better than theirs. Right now the Mount Heng School that has lost

a nascent soul stage progenitor holding down the fort is like a three year old child holding a gold bar.

Due to the southern border of the Qin Dynasty being bordered on demon territory, humans and demons are in constant war causing countless mountains and cultivation abodes abundant in spiritual energy to lay in waste. Thus a blessed spot beneficial towards cultivation is enough to make everybody fight over it.

The Mount Heng School is occupying a treasure ground like Mount Heng but unfortunately does not have a nascent soul stage cultivator holding down the fort, this will probably draw the greed of all the cultivation sects at the southern border.

And the Eternal Dao Sect which is the closest one and at the same time also the one who got news first will undoubtedly seize the initiative.

In front of a superior cultivation abode that can be used as the thousand year foundation of the sect, that bit of friendship in the past is completely useless.

Maybe Master Pubei doesn't want to completely turn hostile against them which is why in the sparring between the disciples this time the Eternal Dao Sect will very likely have some sort of special movements.

For example, adding a prize and betting each other's bases?

In a short period of time countless thoughts flashed by in Lin Feng's mind. He had a faint feeling in his heart that his Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill might have also played a key role in the development of this matter.

Without the Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill and Master Pubei returning injured from the Void Battleground, the first thing to do would definitely be to enter closed-door training to heal. Only after healing his injury would he then scheme for the Mount Heng School's base and who knows when that would be.

It could be a few days or a couple of months, maybe even dozens of years.

Lin Feng sighed: "Every bite and every sip is preordained, it really is a mysterious fate. Originally I only wanted curry favor with that nascent soul stage progenitor but who would have thought that I ended up helping myself."

Whether or not it can provide help isn't certain yet. The Mount Heng School disciples who spread the news only know that the Eternal Dao Sect will be visiting in a few days but they don't know the specific time. And Lin Feng only has one month of time left, if the Eternal Dao Sect comes after two or three months then it will be too late.

"I still have to make some preparations." Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and flew in the air: "If there really is no other choice then I'll have to go and capture him. In any case that Mount Heng School doesn't know Wang Lin's potential and doesn't value him. If I capture him they won't necessarily take things seriously."

Returning to his three disciples Lin Feng still appeared calm and relaxed but he was busily making preparations in secret.

In the middle of the night Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged, slowly doing his breathing technique. The surrounding spiritual energy rapidly gathered with his body as the center and was absorbed into his body, charging at a hidden meridian point.

When a meridian point is unlocked, spiritual energy that is absorbed will be rapidly converted to mana and stored within the meridian point. Like this the cultivator's mana will obtain a considerable advance.

This is a meticulous job that requires the cultivator to persevere doing dull breathing techniques and refining spiritual energy to breakthrough one's bottleneck.

The energy in the Heaven Thunder Moon Jade has already been depleted. Lin Feng can only cultivate according to the regular path. The cultivation speed these couple of month has slowed down and is not as fast as before. After successfully advancing to qi disciple level 11 it came to a standstill.

But even though the speed is slow, Lin Feng is not worried. He knows that before his steps were too large and his foundation was a bit too unstable. His speed may have slowed down for these few months but his steps are firm and he can clearly feel that he is more adept in the usage of mana.

Through a long period of honing Lin Feng has already reached the peak of qi disciple level 11. Right now he is tackling the very last meridian point.

Under his unrelenting efforts the final meridian point was finally unlocked. The spiritual energy that was originally unmoving and built up here instantly poured downward like a flooded dam, entering into the withered meridian point and forming a massive spiral.

The rotation of the spiritual energy became faster and faster, the spiritual energy at the center was being constantly converted to mana and nourishing Lin Feng's body.

Different from before where things were over after filling it with mana, Lin Feng continued to consecutively swallow multiple Energy Recovery Pills that recover mana. He constantly pushed the mana in his body, forming a massive cycle in his entire body!

The 12 meridian points were all unlocked and connected as one. The mana stored in the meridian points was no longer isolated like bodies of dead water as before, instead they turned into a surging river, constantly circulating in Lin Feng's body.

Lin Feng exhaled a long breath and suddenly released a loud shout that echoed like a tiger's roar and dragon's cry.

His voice was covered by the mana ward of the Black Cloud Flag and was unable to travel out of the room, but Lin Feng's heart was very satisfied.

At this moment with the twelve levels all unlocked, Lin Feng has reached the great circle of perfection of qi disciple level 12, the peak of the qi disciple stage.

Lin Feng pushed open the room door, his face revealed a satisfied smile. He said in his heart: “In cultivating dao techniques, the higher one’s level the slower the progress. Even though I had the help of the system and started directly from qi disciple level 4, but reaching the great circle of perfection of qi disciple level 12 in less than one year is still pretty fast, right?”

“Could it be that I’m actually a prodigy too?”

He was in the middle of thinking when his three disciples greeted him. Lin Feng smiled and said in a happy mood: “How is the cultivation going? Is there anything you guys don’t understand?”

Xiao Yan: “I just wanted to tell master. Last night I saw the moon rise and the sun set, the stars glittered in the sky. As I watched I had a faint insight into a type of incredibly profound principle of the martial way. After pondering for the night I came up with a martial skill and I just wanted master to review it. In addition, the bottleneck in the level of my dao technique seems to also have loosened due to this and I think that I can breakthrough it very soon”

The corner of Lin Feng’s lips twitched. Dude, you’re already qi disciple level 9. If you advance again then that is qi disciple level 10. If I remember correctly you used four years of time in the past

before reaching the great circle of perfection of qi disciple?

Zhu Yi: “If I may speak master, last night I was strolling in the mountain and chanced upon a strange flower. Spiritual energy overflowed from it and it was covered in golden light. It does not seem like an ordinary item . I did not dare to take liberty and specially brought it back for master to take care of it.”

Lin Feng expressionlessly took over the spiritual flower. Through searching the system he learned that this flower is called a Three-Leaf Orchid, it is precisely the main material for that pill which aids people in breaking through their bottlenecks, the Barrier Breaking Pill!

Xiao Budian: “Master, master, I advanced to qi disciple level 10! Uh, I somehow just randomly did so... I don’t really know what happened.”

Lin Feng was speechless, his eyes looked towards the heavens at a 45 degree angle. He felt like something slid by in the corners of his eyes...

“Coach, I also want a marriage annulment!”

“Coach, I also want an abusive father!”

“Coach, is it too late for me to start drinking animal milk right now?”

Sending off his three disciples in depression, Lin Feng returned to the room. After sitting blankly for a moment he took out a ring from his clothed.

It was precisely that ring sealing the remnant soul of the tao tie. Before Lin Feng was afraid of the tao tie so he was constantly reinforcing the Heaven Cage Sigil to seal her, in the end he was practically about to forget that there was still this matter.

He just used the ring to practise the Heaven Cage Sigil when he had nothing to do. After finishing practising he threw it to the back of his mind.

But now he's changed his mind. If he really does go to the Mount Heng School to capture Wang Lin, if the aurous core stage cultivators want to take things seriously then Lin Feng needs even more cards in his hands.

Right now he wants to unite and mobilize all power of use.

Chapter 58: Little Girl, Uncle Will Take You To See Goldfishes

Besides the Mount Heng School, Lin Feng is well aware that even though he doesn't know whether it is a godly item or old grandpa, it is certain that Wang Lin still has a big golden leg to hug. This is also Lin Feng's job competitor.

Lin Feng's mind entered into the ring. Inside of a cage weaved together by pillars of light in the dark space sat a little girl. She had two pigtails and looked like a cute little doll.

The little loli was sitting in complete boredom and constantly grumbling: "So hungry, so hungry..."

The corner of Lin Feng's lips twitched: "This glutton."

Seeing Lin Feng the little loli wrinkled her cute little nose, she turned her head with a "Humph" and didn't look at him.

The little girl's behaviour was a bit childish but Lin Feng did not dare to take her lightly. In a sense, the level of danger of this savage beast cub who looks like a loli is in no way inferior to an aurous core stage cultivator.

Because currently Lin Feng can only use the Heaven Cage Sigil to trap her but is unable to completely kill her.

Pushing the power of the 24 Arhat Heaven Formation may do the trick, but it's not a hundred percent guarantee.

With caution in his heart Lin Feng still had a smiling face on the surface: "Little girl, are you used to living here?"

Hearing Lin Feng ask this the tao tie cub instantly scowled and wanted to explode at him. Only after taking a close look at the light cage around her did she grudgingly hold back her anger and release a heavy snort: "Stay in here for half a year and you'll naturally know what it feels like."

Pausing for a moment the little girl still couldn't resist asking: "I say, it's one thing to imprison me here, at least give me some food, I really am so hungry!"

Lin Feng thought in his heart, if I let you devour mana and spiritual energy, after you recover your strength I won't be able to imprison you anymore.

Even though she's been imprisoned by the Heaven Cage Sigil the entire time, Lin Feng did not torture or weaken her. She may not have eaten this whole time, but the mana that she originally had has not disappeared. It is impossible for her to starve to death.

The hunger that she feels may be real, but that is entirely due to the tao tie's glutinous nature.

Lin Feng said with a smile: "The amount of time that we've

known each other now is not short and I still don't know your name?"

The little loli rolled her eyes: "Why should I tell you?"

Lin Feng didn't get mad. He said with a smile: "There's something good in it for you if you tell me, such as, food..."

The tao tie cub's eyes instantly lit up and her face lit up with pleasure: "Really?"

"Really, but the precondition is that you have to speak the truth." Lin Feng extended a finger and flicked a pole of the cage, his voice turned cold: "If you dare to fool me you know the consequence."

The little loli retracted her neck: "Since I was little my parents both called me Tun Tun." (TL: 吞吞, tun tun, her name basically means swallow/devour.)

"Tun... Tun?" Lin Feng didn't know whether to laugh or cry. This name really is high-class, it really couldn't be more fitting.

Tun Tun swallowed her saliva: "Is there food?"

Lin Feng calculated things out. The Heaven Cage Sigil that he set up when he was at qi disciple level 7 could already trap Tun Tun at her current strength, giving her a little taste of sweetness can't hurt. But he has to control the amount to ensure that that his qi

disciple level 12 strength can still seal her.

After finishing his calculations Lin Feng threw some pills towards Tun Tun.

Tun Tun did not hesitate and was truly like her name. Opening up her little mouth she swallowed them all in one go. After she finished eating she smacked her lips: “It’s too little, it’s not even enough to fill the gaps of my teeth.”

Lin Feng smiled slightly: “This is just the beginning, as long as you’re good there’s a lot more where that came from.”

Tun Tun’s eyes flashed and she was instead not so keen anymore: “You human, what do you want to do?”

Lin Feng smiled saying: “The sword aura of that old geezer from the Blaze Sword Sect last time, did it taste good?”

Tun Tun became furious: “You want to trick me again into being your shield?”

“You can only blame yourself for having too small of an appetite, you’re blaming me for getting stuffed?” Lin Feng was completely calm: “But don’t worry, after that time I have an approximate idea of the limit of your appetite. I will take note to control the amount next time I find food for you.”

Lin Feng smiled like the wolf grandma tricking Little Red Riding

Hood: “You better think carefully, besides this method there isn’t another way to fill that little stomach of yours.”

Tun Tun’s face was uncertain, Lin Feng’s words were like the tempting words of the devil from hell: “Think about it, being hungry is such a painful thing. Your heart feels so flustered, like somebody is scratching at it with a tiny claw...”

Tun Tun shuddered. She felt helpless in her heart, right now she is at his complete mercy and is completely in Lin Feng’s control.

“F, fine.” Tun Tun agreed helplessly.

Man dies for wealth and tao ties die for food...

Hearing this Lin Feng laughed weirdly, just like [a creepy uncle who successfully tricked a little loli to go see goldfish](#).

Working things out with Tun tun, Lin Feng’s mood became a lot better: “I’m already at qi disciple level 12, next up is foundation establishment.”

Foundation establishment is establishing one’s dao root. Different from the qi disciple stage being split into 12 levels, the foundation establishment stage is only split into three levels generally referred to as foundation establishment early stage, foundation establishment mid-stage and foundation establishment late stage. Sometimes they are also called the three realms; qi ocean, spirit tower and core furnace based on their traits.

Foundation establishment early stage, the cultivator establishes a qi ocean. Their mana is as vast and boundless as the sea and is far superior to qi disciple stage cultivators in terms of the total amount.

The cultivators of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji that Lin Feng met before in the Black Cloud Underground Palace were all foundation establishment early stage. The five people of the Five Elements Sect with the yellow-clothed old man as the leader and that purple fine-clothed middle-aged man were all qi ocean realm cultivators.

Foundation establishment mid-stage, the cultivator forges a spirit tower using the boundless mana in the qi ocean. This spirit tower is the true foundation of a cultivator's dao technique. A thousand story building rises from the ground. Forming the aurous core in the future and hatching the nascent soul all starts from here.

Elder Ye Ge of the Celeritas Sword Sect who brought Murong Yanran to the Xiao Clan to break off the engagement, Mr, Vulture, the white-clothed scholar and the black-clothed swordsman who attacked big monk Hui Ku are all foundation establishment mid-stage, spirit tower realm cultivators.

As for foundation establishment late stage, that is refining a core furnace above the spirit tower. Compared to spirit tower realm cultivators, core furnace realm cultivators simply have slightly more refined mana. The difference in fighting strength is not big.

But refining the core furnace is the most important process of the foundation establishment stage, because the core furnace will directly determine the success of a cultivator forming their aurous core. Whether or not one can tackle higher stages after aurous core depends all on the quality of the core furnace.

Big monk Hui Ku whom Lin Feng killed and robbed the sariras from was actually already foundation establishment late stage, a core furnace realm cultivator. Due to the Art of Acala dao technique he practised being flawed he was unable to form his aurous core and break through to the next stage. This is also the reason why he was so obsessed with Xiao Yan.

The foundation establishment stage may only be split into three realms, but there is still a difference of strength between cultivators of the same level. This is because spirit towers are split into 9 grades, grade 1 is the best and grade 9 is the worst.

By extension one can obtain a core furnace from grade 1 to grade 9. There is a great difference between each grade and an even greater difference is displayed in the future after forming the aurous core. There will also be a difference in the quality of the aurous core. The core furnace directly determines a cultivator's cultivation potential in the future.

Refining a grade 9 core furnace above a grade 9 spirit tower, being able to form an aurous core is already a massive fortune. As for the quality of the aurous and advancing stages in the future, don't even think about it.

As for refining a grade 1 core furnace above a grade 1 spirit tower,

after the cultivator advances to the aurous core stage they will definitely have a promising future.

Why did Xiao Budian suffer disaster in the past? It was because he was born with a qi ocean and above the qi ocean stood a sovereign spirit tower that is above a grade 1 spirit tower!

Erecting a sovereign core furnace above a sovereign spirit tower, the aurous core formed will inevitably be the very best. Don't mention aurous core stage, nascent soul and even primordial spirit are all within sight.

Lin Feng thought: "Xiao Budian's bone root is still a max value of 10. When he opens his qi ocean in the future and erects his spirit tower can he still obtain a sovereign spirit tower?"

While thinking Lin Feng pushed open the room doors and walked out of the room. He saw that his three disciples were all in the courtyard and their gazes were looking towards the distant horizon together.

Seeing Lin Feng come out the three people hurriedly greeted him. After greeting him Lin Feng asked them what they are looking at. Xiao Yan responded saying: "Master, just now a giant centipede that was a whole hundred meters long flew by in the sky. Many human figures could be faintly seen on top of the centipede and it headed in that direction."

Following the direction of his finger and looking over, Lin Feng's eyes flashed.

“That direction is the location of the Mount Heng School, could it be that the people of the Eternal Dao Sect have arrived?”

Notes:

[1\]](#) Welcome back to Chinese Meme Time. Today we will be talking about the origin behind “Uncle will take you to see goldfishes.” This phrase originates from a crime in Hong Kong. For the purpose of abduction, a middle-aged man raised some goldfish on a rooftop and would say to little girls: “Little girl, how’s about uncle take you to go see goldfishes?” After taking them to the rooftop he would then find the opportunity to rape them. Afterwards people used “Goldfish man” to represent men with pedophilia and even expressing men who engage in chat with young girls while carrying evident deceitful purpose, especially old men.

Chapter 59: The Exchange Competition That Was Brought Forward

After settling down his three disciples, Lin Feng shook the Black Cloud Flag and flew in the direction of Mount Heng by himself.

From far away he could see a thousand-legged centipede in the sky that was a whole hundred meters long. This centipede was completely black, thunder rumbled as it flew while stepping on black clouds. It circled above Mount Heng and seemed to be showing off.

Afterwards a violet sword aura rose into the sky from the highest summit of Mount Heng, it turned into a dragon shaped light figure in the air and roared at the centipede.

Only then did the centipede retract its arrogance, carrying the cultivators of the Eternal Dao Sect on its back and landing on Mount Heng.

The majority of people of the Mount Heng School all had their attention attracted by the centipede, Lin Feng very easily found his way up the mountain again.

The leader of the Eternal Dao Sect is a white-bearded old man, his cultivation level is foundation establishment mid-stage and he looks very friendly. He released bursts of laughter: “Fellow daoist, this time a lot of disciples with good potential have appeared in your Mount Heng School.”

The Mount Heng School's nascent soul stage progenitor headed towards the Void Battleground and no news has been heard from him for hundreds of years. The aurous core stage cultivators in the school are all in closed-door training. Currently the head of the Mount Heng School is a middle-aged foundation establishment mid-stage cultivator.

Towards the white-bearded old man's compliment, the head of the Mount Heng School was very modest. The atmosphere between both sides was very harmonious.

Lin Feng on the other hand sneered in secret, he knows that this harmonious and friendly atmosphere won't last for long.

The Eternal Dao Sect is a visitor from afar and were first arranged to rest in the guest rooms. Three days later the exchange competition between the disciples of both sects will officially start.

The disciples participating in the competition are basically all at the qi disciple stage. Since arriving in this world, the dao techniques and skills Lin Feng has encountered are all of relatively high level, thus Lin Feng could not muster up any interest in the spells and martial skills used in the competition between the disciples of the two sects.

Half of his energy was used to hide his whereabouts, the other half was placed on Wang Lin.

Currently Wang Lin has only entered the school for a few days,

and he is also just a registered disciples. There is nobody teaching him dao techniques and all he does on the mountain is manual labour.

But Lin Feng actually sensed a faint spiritual energy fluctuation from Wang Lin's body. Even though it is very weak and he is still a far way from qi disciple level 1, but Wang Lin does indeed have signs of starting to channel energy into his body.

Lin Feng was greatly surprised: "Wang Lin does indeed possess astounding potential, but his bone root is after all a bit poor, even below the regular standard. He belongs to the type who rises up later on, he shouldn't be making progress so quickly at the start of his cultivation?"

Right now Wang Lin was following well-behaved behind a middle-aged cultivator and seriously watching the competition that had already started on the stage. Inside of the crowd he was completely unassuming.

Lin Feng shifted his gaze over from Wang Lin to the middle-aged cultivator: "He actually has a master? Then it's this person who taught him dao techniques, but he still shouldn't be so quick." This middle-aged cultivator himself is just at qi disciple level 8. Still being at this level in his middle ages means that this person pretty much has no potential left to tap into. In his life being able to successfully reach foundation establishment is pretty much the end.

"Looks like Wang Lin really did obtain a certain miraculous encounter. If it's not some sort of godly artifact or super dao

technique than it's an old grandpa." Lin Feng's face became dark. This time not only did he get beaten by the Mount Heng School, even the position of old grandpa was robbed from him.

Lin Feng calculated in his heart, if he didn't guess wrong, the Eternal Dao Sect with Master Pubei backing them up will most likely take the Mount Heng School's base. Due to this the Mount Heng School's reputation will drop drastically and the sect cohesiveness will definitely drop too.

Wang Lin who was originally not valued and now also has his own miraculous encounter might leave the Mount Heng School due to this.

Adding that right now he looks so unassuming, Master Pubei and the Eternal Dao Sect most likely won't care about him either.

Lin Feng's greatest competitor is that old grandpa who came out of nowhere.

"Wonder how much strength that old bastard still has?" Lin Feng exhaled a long breath, he's already made up his mind.

Fight the old grandpa and steal Wang Lin!

This disciple is his.

Currently the competition between the disciples of both sects has already become very intense. One Mount Heng Sect disciple had

the upper hand, forcing the disciple of the Eternal Dao Sect to use a magic item like a yellow paper to withstand him.

Two beams of white light flew out from the Mount Heng School disciple's sleeves. They rapidly flew in a circle in the air and then struck towards the opponent at a lightning fast speed.

The Eternal Dao Sect disciple let out a rueful laugh. All of his energy was focused on withstanding the opponent's previous attack, he doesn't have any energy left to block this second attack.

Right at this moment. Somebody in the crowd of Eternal Dao Sect disciples below the stage suddenly released a cold snort. Afterwards a black beam of light charged out, intercepting the two beams of white light in the air and grinding them to pieces.

The people of the Mount Heng School all yelled in anger. That Eternal Dao Sect disciple laughed coldly and jumped onto the stage. Looking at the Mount Heng School disciples below the stage he said in arrogance: "All of the qi disciple stage disciples of the Mount Heng School come at me all at once, I alone am enough!"

The expressions of the elders of the Mount Heng School also darkened, together they looked towards the leader of the Eternal Dao Sect the white-bearded old man.

The old man stroked his beard and released a dry cough saying: "Let's decided the winner with one person this time. If there is a person among your Mount Heng School disciples who can last for 10 seconds and not lose than we'll call it the win of the Mount

Heng School!”

He paused for a moment before saying with a grin: “There is something that I want to take advantage of this opportunity to say. If we the Eternal Dao Sect win today’s competition, than besides those prizes from before you also have to add another one. You have to lend this Mount Heng to us the Eternal Dao Sect for 500 years!”

Hearing his words, Lin Feng silently laughed: “It’s here, it’s coming!”

The faces of all of the cultivators of the Mount Heng School turned slightly green. The head of the Mount Heng School narrowed his eyes: “Fellow daoist, are you joking?”

The white-bearded old man smiled but didn’t respond. He turned towards that arrogant disciple on the stage: “Release the talisman.”

Hearing this the person opened up his shirt, revealing a talisman. Taking off the talisman his mana instantly surged, revealing a strength of the great circle of perfection of the qi disciple stage.

But even more eye-catching was still that talisman, upon seeing it all of the foundation establishment stage cultivators of the Mount Heng School revealed expressions of shock.

The white-bearded old man said coolly: “Fellow daoist, you can see that the mana on this talisman is unable to be created by

anyone other than a nascent soul stage progenitor. Truthfully speaking, out Eternal Dao Sect progenitor Master Pubei has returned from the Void Battleground... He brought back news, the two progenitors of your Mount Heng School have both died.”

“For old times sake we the Eternal Dao Sect did not take away your base by force or trickery and instead gave the Mount Heng School a last bit of consideration. In this competition if the Mount Heng School wins then this matter ends here. I’ve already brought the message, fellow daoist Huang Long, let the competition continue!”

Reality shows that at the moment, the Mount Heng School’s strongest qi disciple stage disciple is only qi disciple level 10. Even a bunch of people together aren’t a match for that qi disciple great circle of perfection Eternal Dao Sect disciple.

Lin Feng laughed very unscrupulously. It vaguely occurred to him that if not for his Nine Transformations Blazing Spirit Pill helping Master Pubei heal his injury in advance, this exchange competition might not have been conducted so early.

If this exchange competition wasn’t brought ahead of schedule, this exchange competition could very well have become little buddy Wang Lin’s first novice village battle on his path towards greatness.

At the moment where his sect-brothers are completely overshadowed and the enemy is extremely arrogant and domineering, he goes up and slaps the enemy down. Thereby stunning the audience and from then on stepping upon the right

path that belongs to him.

Mm, what a perfect script?

But right now the competition has been conducted in advance and Wang Lin is only at the energy channeling stage, he hasn't even reached qi disciple level 1 yet. How can he display his awesomeness and turn the tides?

Sure enough, in this exchange competition the Mount Heng School lost without any surprise. The disciples of the Mount Heng School watched bitterly and in anger at the Eternal Dao Sect leave.

The news of their nascent soul stage progenitors deaths weighed especially heavily on their hearts like a massive boulder.

Wang Lin was mixed in the crowd, his expression was enraged and frustrated, but he couldn't do anything.

His gaze was very complicated. He subconsciously reached into his clothes, in his heart his desire for strength became increasingly stronger.

With hopes of what if, the Mount Heng School did not move out right away. But what awaited them was instead despair.

Five days later, rolling black clouds covered the peak of Mount Heng. A voice like rolling thunder sounded in the sky.

“I am Master Pubei, all of the juniors of the Mount Heng School come out!”

Chapter 60: Not Just One Person Has Their Mind On Him

Black clouds gathered above Mount Heng, a small pitch-black mountain suddenly appeared in the air. It grew with the wind and instantly turned into a towering peak.

Following Master Pubei's spell sign, that massive mountain immediately smashed downwards. A screen of light like an upside-down bowl appeared over Mount Heng, protecting the Mount Heng School and withstanding the barrage of the giant mountain.

But following Master Pubei constantly applying force, the Mount Heng School's protective formation without a same-levelled nascent soul stage progenitor holding down the fort had already becoming increasingly weaker. It was crumbling and about to be breached.

Lin Feng had already went down the mountain, watching this amazing scene from far away his face was also a bit pale: "Nascent soul stage cultivators are truly powerful. The difference in level is too big, any amount of plotting is futile."

He looked at the protective formation of the Mount Heng School and also felt a bit lucky in his heart: "This formation is truly extraordinary, resisting again a nascent soul stage cultivator for so long. If I went to capture Wang Lin I definitely wouldn't be able to force my way in. Instead of saying "capture", "steal" would be a bit more appropriate."

At the same time, it also occurred to Lin Feng that after he creates his sect, his primary objective is to first get his hands on a protective formation that can protect his base, this is the basic foundation.

That Mount Heng School's protective formation may be tough, but without a nascent soul stage cultivator sitting center it was ultimately unable to withstand Master Pubei's assault. Under a series of barrages, spiderweb-like cracks appeared on the light screen, spreading in all directions.

"Break!" Master Pubei shouted. The giant mountain pressed downward, directly dropping three inches. All of Mount Heng trembled and in the sound of rumbling, rocks tumbled and dust flew. The massive mountain was actually forced down dozens of meters into the earth.

At this moment the Mount Heng School's protective formation was finally unable to hang on. It released the sound of a mirror breaking and the entire light screen instantly fell to pieces, vanishing out of sight.

Lin Feng sighed, he knows that the Mount Heng School is completely hopeless now.

Master Pubei's domineering voice travelled over from the sky: "Your Mount Heng School's two nascent soul stage progenitors have both died in the Void Battleground. You guys are unable to guard this Mount Heng, instead of letting it be stolen by someone else, it would be better to give it to the Eternal Dao Sect."

“Besides people, you guys can’t take anything else with you. Another word and I don’t mind wiping out the Mount Heng School!”

“In addition, right now the Eternal Dao Sect is recruiting disciples. If there are people amongst you guys who want to join, you can stay on the spot.”

Lin Feng shook his head. This Master Pubei really is ruthless, he wants to dig up the foundation of the Mount Heng School.

The two aurous core stage elders of the Mount Heng School were both blue in the face, but they could only keep everything in their stomachs and leave Mount Heng bringing along the few disciples willing to follow the school.

Lin Feng didn’t care about anybody else, all of his attention was on Wang Lin. Looking from far away, he saw that Wang Lin did not stay behind and instead left the mountain together with the Mount Heng School.

Lin Feng resolutely followed over. The two aurous core stage cultivators used their escape technique, their bodies turning into arcs of light and carrying the group of disciples willing to leave. They flew in the air for a long time before landing on a barren mountain.

Such a massive Mount Heng School, yet only a mere 20 or so people were willing to follow the school. With just a couple of

small fry they looked very miserable.

The two aurous core cultivators looked at each other. Their mouths were bitter but they still had to force themselves raise their spirits and encourage everybody. They didn't dare to allow the last bit of people to scatter.

Lin Feng silently crept up the mountain. He saw the two aurous core stage cultivators in the middle of meditating. They were clearly making up for the mana expended while maintaining the formation before, three foundation establishment stage cultivators were guarding beside them.

The rest of the qi disciple stage disciples were scattered in groups around the mountain. Some people were working hard training while others were cursing and complaining.

Wang Lin was sent to go get water for everybody. He went alone walking towards the small stream in the distance.

Lin Feng chuckled and was about to follow behind him, but when his feet had just moved Lin Feng's movements suddenly stopped.

Because he discovered that someone else was also silently following behind Wang Lin, and was paying attention not to make any noises, afraid of alerting the others.

This person was precisely that middle-aged cultivator who was suspected to be Wang Lin's master. In his eyes staring at Wang Lin,

a cold light faintly flickered.

Lin Feng's eyebrows slightly raised, it looks like he isn't the only one who has his mind on Wang Lin.

"I should just kill you while I'm at it and just perfectly get rid of your master-disciple relationship." Lin Feng laughed coldly and followed over.

Wang Lin arrived beside the stream. He turned his head looking around for a moment and didn't discover anyone.

But he didn't know that the middle-aged cultivator was not far away behind him and Lin Feng followed closely behind him.

The two stalkers both paid attention to restrain and hide their bodies and aura. Wang Lin who isn't even qi disciple level 1 naturally couldn't discover them.

After not discovering anyone behind him, Wang Lin crouched beside that stream and starred in a trance at the flowing stream.

The great change occurred too suddenly, making him a bit flustered. Essentially, he is still just a simple youngster, today is his first time experiencing the law of the jungle in the cultivation world.

This feeling made him feel constrained and desire powerful strength even more urgently to let him be able to do something

and not be like when the great change occurred, a powerless weed that no one cares about.

Wang Lin took out a grey stone bead the size of a baby's fist from his shirt and said in his heart: "This thing might be the key to changing my fate."

That day he was rejected by the Mount Heng School and he jumped off the cliff to kill himself due to unstable emotions, but he inadvertently obtained this stone bead.

Subtle spiritual energy travelled into Wang Lin's body from the stone bead, healing the heavy injury created from him falling from the cliff. Wang Lin instantly realized that this stone bead wasn't a normal item.

This is why that day Wang Lin was suspicious in his heart when Lin Feng visited him, he thought that Lin Feng had discovered the secret of the stone bead and came for the stone bead.

After Wang Lin entered into the Mount Heng School, he was taught some most basic dao techniques. But when he was unable to grasp the essentials, it was the stone bead that once again channeled spiritual energy into his body. Afterwards Wang Lin discovered that he could actually successfully channel energy into his body, this strengthened Wang Lin's judgement even more.

This stone bead is definitely a treasure.

The Eternal Dao Sect has a lot of people and their situation is complex. It was precisely to guard the secret of the stone bead that Wang Lin chose to stay in the Mount Heng School.

Seeing that stone bead, Lin Feng's eyes turned cold. He grinded his teeth: "You're the bastard..."

While the eyes of the middle-aged cultivator on the other side lit up, his face lighting up with pleasure: "I knew you had a secret on you, you little brat. Haha, god bless me, bestowing this treasure upon me."

Sun Xiaozhu revealed himself. Wang Lin was horrified, turning his head and seeing Sun Xiaozhu, his expression instantly turned pale.

"Good disciple, let me see that stone bead." Sun Xiaozhu walked over towards Wang Lin while chuckling. Wang Lin's fist holding the stone bead slowly tightened, he said in a low voice: "Master, this is just a regular marble, I'm just playing with it for fun."

Sun Xiaozhu sneered and suddenly slapped Wang Lin to the ground: "You still dare to fool me? With your garbage aptitude, there must be a special reason to you being able to channel energy into you body after entering the school for only a few days. If it wasn't to determine the secret on your body, you think I would take a piece of trash like you as my disciple?"

Wang Lin lay on the ground, his body curling into a ball and tightly hiding the stone bead in his embrace.

He tightly pressed his lips, not saying anything. His face was filled with an unyielding spirit.

Sun Xiaozhu laughed coldly saying: “After obtaining a rare treasure you don’t think of offering it to your master and actually dare to keep it for yourself? Be a good boy and give the item to me or else you’ll be in a lot of pain!”

“Nice job!” At the side Lin Feng was cracking his knuckles, hurriedly adjusting his clothes and preparing to make his appearance: “Your actions will perfectly compliment my majesty, thanks bro!”

Lin Feng was just about to walk out when Wang Lin who was on the ground suddenly released a low cry. He then saw black smoke rise up from the stone bead in his embrace. It formed a human figure in the air who laughed in a strange manner.

Lin Feng practically tripped over his own feet. He hurriedly stood still, grinding his teeth and staring at the human figure in mid-air: “Holy fuck, you really do have an old grandpa?”

Chapter 61: Business Snatcher

Even though Lin Feng was grinding his teeth in hate, but at any rate he at least had mental preparation. Wang Lin and Sun Xiaozhu on the other hand were completely dumbfounded.

Black smoke constantly rose up from the stone bead, forming a human figure in the air who released a grating laughter in a hoarse voice.

Lin Feng closely looked over, seeing that the human figure had the appearance of an old man. His demeanor was arrogant and overbearing.

“A puny qi disciple stage ant dares to covet my treasure? What a joke!”

The old man’s laughter was very bold, but Lin Feng sensed a heavy aura of malice and savagery between his brows.

This old geezer is definitely ruthless and diabolical, he isn’t a good guy.

Lin Feng’s eyes flashed. He didn’t rush to make a move and instead prepared to patiently observe for a while to get to know his opponent.

But Sun Xiaozhu did not have such control, he cursed saying: “What stray ghost are you, you dare to act so impudent?” While

speaking he brought his palms together and formed a spell sign.

With the surging of his mana, a beam of golden light flew out from his waist and struck towards the old man.

The old man laughed coldly. He pointed his finger and a stream of black mist gushed out, blocking the golden light.

“Watch me break your evil magic.” The spell sign in Sun Xiaozhu’s hands changed consecutively. When the golden light was about to come in contact with the black mist, it suddenly exploded open, turning into a flurry of golden light and landing in the black mist like a storm.

For a moment golden light flashed, piercing the black mist full of holes.

At the side, Lin Feng watched Sun Xiaozhu who was beaming with joy, he couldn’t help but sneer in his heart: “Who do you think you’re facing?”

Sure enough, floating in mid-air, that old man’s expression did not change at the slightest.

The black mist suddenly started to spiral, as if a massive vortex. The golden rain drops were very quickly swallowed by the vortex, unable to make another splash.

Sun Xiaozhu’s expression changed greatly, his face turned

deathly pale. After holding it in for a while he was still unable to hold it back, a mouthful of blood spraying out.

At this time how could he not know the old man's power. He pointed at Wang Lin and hissed: "Traitor, you dare to collaborate with this heretic to plot against your own master. We the Mount Heng School cannot tolerate a traitor like you. Today I expel you from the school!"

"Target has resolved the original master-disciple relationship, host can now take the target as disciple."

Hearing the system notification in his mind, Lin Feng stared a bit blankly at Sun Xiaozhu: "Holy shit, it's that simple?"

Wang Lin is just a registered disciple of the Mount Heng School, placed under Sun Xiaozhu's door. As long as Sun Xiaozhu this master resolves the master-disciple relation then he does not need the permission of the Mount Heng School."

If not that Lin Feng was still able to maintain his reason, he wished that he could instantly hug Sun Xiaozhu and kiss him.

This guy is family!

Sun Xiaozhu still doesn't know exactly what meaning his actions just now possess. Right now there was only one thought in his head: "There's no way for me to pocket it anymore, I can only escape back and find the seniors of the school to subdue this

demon.”

“Wang Lin you traitor. When I report to the two aurous core stage ancestors they will definitely take out the trash. They will kill you and this demon, exterminating evil and protecting justice.” After pointing his finger at Wang Lin and cursing him, Sun Xiaozhu ran away without even turning his head.

Seeing Sun Xiaozhu flee, that old man bared his teeth and smiled. He revealed a thick aura of bloodlust and brutality saying: “In my heyday, don’t mention two aurous core stages, even two nascent soul stages would just be chop-suey. But today I Zhuge Nan have fallen into hardship, I cannot allow you to go back and inform them.”

While speaking the old man pointed his finger. The black mist turned into a rope, rapidly flying towards Sun Xiaozhu. In the air it turned into the shape of a lasso, directly roping over Sun Xiaozhu’s neck.

Sun Xiaozhu had the living daylights scared out of him. He hurriedly retracted his domineering behaviour and cried out: “I was wrong, please forgive me once!”

Zhuge Nan laughed in mockery saying: “It’s too late to think of begging now!”

Finishing speaking the black mist lasso directly tightened. Sun Xiaozhu did not feel suffocated, but all of his mana had been bound.

The next instant Sun Xiaozhu screamed, his eyes were empty and he stood dumbly on the spot like a puppet. It turns out that his soul was directly taken away by Zhuge Nana, his body had already become an empty shell.

Lin Feng's pupils slightly shrank. He thought: "Being able instantly take away the soul of a qi disciple level 8 cultivator and he didn't even have the chance to fight back, this old geezer isn't easy to handle."

The black mist lasso released itself from Sun Xiaozhu's neck and returned into Zhuge Nan's body. The old geezer's face was filled with an expression of enjoyment. He exhaled a long breath towards the sky: "Delicious, I haven't tasted this in a long time."

Devouring the souls of people, Zhuge Nan's technique was very clearly dark magic. Don't mention Lin Feng, even Wang Lin could tell that his origin is not upright.

Zhuge Nan slanted his eyes. Seeing Wang Lin have a faint look of horror in his vigilance the old geezer snorted in disdain: "What are you looking at? We cultivators act against the heavens in the first place, whoever upsets you, you kill them."

"In the few days you've been in this bullshit school, how much humiliation have you suffered? If it was me, hmph! This school would probably have already been slaughtered by me. All who insult me, I will crush their souls!"

Wang Lin laughed helplessly: “I...”

“Don’t interrupt me, I haven’t finished speaking yet, hmph! This little school of yours has a couple of girls who look pretty decent, you really don’t know how to enjoy life. If it was me I’d already have captured them and used them as cultivation vessels, sucking their yin essence dry! Mm, I really miss that experience, I haven’t tasted that feeling in over 30 years.” (TL: If you don’t have any clue whatsoever of what he’s talking about, you’re probably not old enough to know.)

Wang Lin was already stunned speechless.

Zhuge Nan rambled on endlessly for half a day before finally stopping. He looked sideways at Wang Lin and snorted: “Stupid brat, what’s the feeling like of getting bullied in your school and one guy taking on the whole lot of you?”

Wang Lin thought about it for a moment. He’s only been in the school for only a couple of days and suffered a lot of ridicule and contempt. In terms of his feeling of belonging towards the Mount Heng School, it really isn’t that strong.

But during the exchange competition when that qi disciple great circle of perfection disciple of the Eternal Dao Sect stood on the stage and announced that he would challenge all of the qi disciple stage disciples of the Mount Heng School, amongst the crowd Wang Lin also felt his anger surge. He was enraged.

Unfortunately he doesn’t even have a level of qi disciple level 1.

He could only helplessly watch him point his finger at everyone's noses and provoke them.

Seeing Wang Lin's face reveal an expression of fury, Zhuge Nan smiled leisurely: "How's the feeling of having your school's base snatched by someone, getting driven out and running away like a homeless dog?"

Wang Lin pursed his lips: "What do you want to say?"

Zhuge Nan smiled saying: "Do you want to become stronger? Do you want to possess unrivalled strength? Do you want to slap a person back to their grandma's home when they provoke you?"

Wang Lin's eyes lit up..

On the other hand, hiding at the side, Lin Feng's eyes blazed with fire: "Fucking shit, this old bastard is not only stealing my business, he's also stealing my lines!"

Zhuge Nan laughed loudly: "It's nothing but a trivial matter. Follow under my teaching and in ten years you'll be able to climb the path towards the heavens and the road of success. At that time you will know that the nascent soul stage cultivator who snatched you guys' base today is nothing but a glass vase!"

"But the path of cultivation is filled with thorns, it is absolutely not a smooth road. You must face all kinds of pain and suffering, can you bear it?"

Wang Lin's face revealed a resolute expression.

On the other hand, the expression on Lin Feng's face was aggressive. His mana surge and he was prepared to fight.

“Fuck! Get the fuck out of my way, this disciple is mine!”

Chapter 62: The Script Isn't Right!

I can confirm that the correct name is Sikong Nan. Cough cough, the pirated version I'm using got it wrong last chapter. Remember people, don't pirate, support the official product...

Wang Lin's face revealed a resolute expression. He bit his teeth and said: "I can endure any kind of suffering."

Lin Feng stared coldly at Sikong Nan. Right at the instant when he was about to attack, he suddenly noticed that after Wang Lin agreed, a hint of imperceptible smugness and exultation flashed by in his eyes.

"Hm?" Lin Feng was slightly stunned. A thought flashed by in his mind: "This old geezer isn't like me who has a system and knows that Wang Lin possesses amazing potential. The current Wang Lin just looks like a piece of trash with extremely poor aptitude. Why is he so happy about taking in Wang Lin?"

In a split second Lin Feng forced back the impulse to attack.

"There's something wrong with this old geezer!"

With this pause, the smugness and exultation in Sikong Nan's eyes had already disappeared. He glanced at the gathering place of the Mount Heng School people in the distance: "This is not the place to speak. I'll take you to a secret place and then we'll talk."

While speaking, black mist swirled around Sikong Nan's entire body, enveloping Wang Lin and flying towards the distance.

Lin Feng quietly controlled the Black Cloud Flag and secretly followed behind: "Let's see what the hell you want you old bastard."

With a son of the heavens like Wang Lin who is basically like the main character of a xuanhuan novel, carrying an old grandpa around with him is practically the standard. But Lin Feng has this persistent feeling that there's something wrong with Sikong Nan this old grandpa."

The black mist carried Wang Lin and flew for over 50 kilometers before landing in a valley. Wang Lin landed on the ground dizzy. In front of him the black mist reformed Sikong Nan's figure.

Lin Feng followed behind them and arrived at the valley, but he saw Sikong Nan wave his hand, sending out a cluster of black mist that enveloped the interior of the valley. People on the outside could neither see inside nor hear the sounds within.

"This black mist is all the manifestation of that old geezer's mana. If regular means are used to sneak in, no matter how stealthy a person is, they will still be discovered by that old geezer." Lin Feng grinned: "Too bad it's not a problem for me."

Lightly shaking the Black Cloud Flag, black light flickered and Lin Feng entered into the interior of the barrier that Sikong Nan setup. The Black Cloud Flag moves by directly breaking open the

void. Lin Feng teleported from the space outside of the barrier to the space inside the barrier, he didn't even touch the black mist and naturally won't be discovered by Sikong Nan.

After Lin Feng silently snuck in, he saw that inside of the barrier formed by black mist, Sikong Nan and Wang Lin were standing face to face.

“Nobody should bother us here.” Sikong Nan said to himself. He then turned his head towards Wang Lin and said with a serious face: “Practising my dao technique requires the aid of this Netherworld Bead in your hands.”

Lin Feng's gaze fell upon the stone bead in Wang Lin's palm, Wang Lin himself also lowered his head looking at the stone bead.

Sikong Nan continued saying: “Your bone root is rather poor and your foundation is also weak. If you want to increase your strength as fast as possible then there is only one way. That is I use the empowerment technique to help you advance in leaps and bounds.”

Wang Lin asked in puzzlement: “Empowerment?”

Sikong Nan nodded his head saying: “In a bit, use all of your effort to communicate with the Netherworld Bead in your hand with your mind. It's best if you can arouse the Netherworld Bead's power to nourish your body, at the same time release your mind to me and open up your consciousness. I will empower you and help you increase your level.”

“Only by working from both sides and combining the power of both sides can you be reborn.”

Wang Lin blinked his eyes, he was silent for a long time before suddenly opening his mouth and asking: “Elder, why are you helping me?”

When the words left his mouth, Sikong Nan and Lin Feng were both stunned. This kid, it’s one thing when he doesn’t open his mouth, but when he does he asks the right questions.

Sikong Nana was dazed for a moment before releasing a cold snort: “I get angry just looking at that pathetic appearance of yours. I decided to take pity on you and give you a helping hand and you’re striking an attitude?”

Wang Lin’s eyes flashed, he said in a heavy voice: “Thank you for your kindness, but there’s no need to trouble you. Please send me back to join my school elders.”

Sikong Nan narrowed his eyes: “Ungrateful brat, do you know what you’re saying?”

Wang Lin pursed his lips and said modestly: “I am slow-witted and my level is lowly, I am afraid that I will be unable to repay your kindness. I cannot receive a reward without merit, I do not dare to accept such a huge favor.”

Sikong Nan started to cackle: “But this isn’t up to you!”

Wang Lin’s expression changed slightly, he heard Sikong Nan continue to say: “Originally I wanted to save some time, but since you don’t know how to appreciate kindness, I can only spend some effort and let you witness my ability!”

While speaking, Sikong Nan’s two hands formed a spell sign. Rolling black mist instantly spewed out, completely covering Wang Lin.

At the side, Lin Feng watched with his jaw dropping: “This script isn’t right, the main character is going at it with his old grandpa?”

Being covered by the black mist, stars floated in front of Wang Lin’s eyes and his head was drowsy, he only wanted to fall asleep right now.

Instinct told Wang Lin that if he just sleeps over like that, he’ll never wake up again.

At this moment a lightbulb lit up in Wang Lin’s head and a thought suddenly flashed by in his mind: “This old geezer’s cultivation level is far more than qi disciple stage. He’s too much higher than me, killing me is like killing a mosquito.”

“Even though he appeared from the Netherworld Bead, he doesn’t seem to be able to control the Netherworld Bead? Right now the Netherworld Bead is the only thing I can depend on. If

there is something that can protect me, it is definitely only this Netherworld Bead.”

Thinking here, Wang Lin forced himself to pull himself together and placed all of his spirit into the Netherworld Bead.

At critical times, Man’s potential will explode. Wang Lin really did successfully communicate with the Netherworld Bead.

The originally dusky and completely unassuming Netherworld Bead emitted a pale yellow glow that isolated Sikong Nan’s black mist.

Seeing this Sikong Nan stormed with anger, but he couldn’t do anything about it. He could only constantly strengthen his mana and hope that the black mist can breach the yellow light.

Right now the old geezer’s balls hurt like crazy.

In the past Sikong Nan contended against people for this Netherworld Bead. With his physical body destroyed and his soul heavily wounded he could only attach himself within the Netherworld Bead. Over dozens of years later, not only was he unable to refine this treasure, he instead had a trend of being refined by the Netherworld Bead and was gradually trapped within the Netherworld Bead, unable to come out.

When Wang Lin obtained the Netherworld Bead, his body was wounded and his blood dripped onto the Netherworld Bead. He

actually inadvertently used his blood to refine this treasure, but at the moment Wang Lin's level is too low and he is unable to control the Netherworld Bead.

Sikong Nan's plan was to take over Wang Lin. Not only would he regain a new body, he could also use this opportunity to refine the Netherworld Bead this treasure.

Who knew that Wang Lin would become suspicious and not give him a chance. But Sikong Nan also cannot kill Wang Lin. If Wang Lin dies, Sikong Nan will have to continue being trapped within the Netherworld Bead. So his plan right now is to use his spell to subdue Wang Lin and have him obediently hand over his body.

Too bad in this moment of life and death, Wang Lin actually successfully controlled the Netherworld Bead to resist against him. Sikong Nan was in an awkward situation, he could only continue competing with Wang Lin to see who gives in first.

Right now Lin Feng understood everything.

This isn't an old grandpa, this is clearly an old devil who wants to take over Wang Lin's body!

Understanding this point, Lin Feng completely made up his mind. Looks like the first bucket of gold in Wang Lin this main character's life is the treasure the Netherworld Bead and not some old grandpa.

This Sikong Nan is a freaking villain.

Not only will he not fight with Lin Feng for the position of old grandpa, he will instead become the villain stepping stone to compliment Lin Feng.

Of course, the precondition of everything is that he can't allow this old geezer to really take over Wang Lin's body.

Lin Feng laughed coldly while looking at Sikong Nan: "Old bastard, bullying my disciple? You really don't know how the word 'dead' is written."

Chapter 63: Get Away From My Disciple!

Even though there was the glow of the Netherworld Bead blocking, Wang Lin who was surrounded by black mist felt colder and colder.

It was not his body that felt cold, but his soul that shivered and chilled.

As if gusts of ill wind that blew from the depths of his heart, no matter how warm the outside is it cannot block it.

He doesn't know that this is the sign of excessive wear on his mind. If he continues like this he will damage his spirit.

Even though the Netherworld Bead can restrain Sikong Nan to a certain degree, Wang Lin's own cultivation level is honestly too low. His spirit is simply unable to control the Netherworld Bead and cannot bear the exhaustion brought by the Netherworld Bead.

Beside his ears is the cackling of Sikong Nan. His vision started to go black and Wang Lin felt like his mind was about to collapse. A lot of irrelevant content also started to surface in his mind.

The first thing that Wang Lin thought of is his parents: “Father, mother, am I about to die? Tiezhu is unfilial, I cannot go back to see you guys anymore...”

What's unbelievable is that the second thing that Wang Lin

thought of is a white robed young daoist with wide sleeves in daoist clothing.

“If I went with that daoist at the time, would I not have today’s disaster?”

Wang Lin’s mind was a mess, the moment before he was about to lose consciousness, a voice suddenly travelled into his ears.

“Old bastard, fuck off and get the hell away from my disciple!”

Wang Lin used all of his strength to open his eyes. Light flickered before his eyes and the last scene that entered into his eyes is a beam of white light that ripped apart the heavy black mist as it flashed. That white robed young daoist whom he saw before stood in front him and was looking at him with a face of concern.

Wang Lin’s lips moved, he wanted to say something but was ultimately unable to release a sound. His head crooked and he fainted over.

Seeing that Wang Lin had only fainted over due to mental exhaustion, Lin Feng relaxed his heart and turned around facing Sikong Nan.

Sikong Nan stared coldly at him: “Youngster, you dare to ruin my plans. I will pull out your soul to make a soul lantern and have you suffer the pain of having devil fire erode your soul all day and night!”

Lin Feng swung his sleeves and protected Wang Lin behind him. He said calmly: “Scram right now and I can allow you to live.”

Sikong Nan’s eyebrows instantly raised up, he said while cackling: “You court death!”

While the black mist surged wildly, it flew up into the air and gathered together, virtually forming a physical body. Afterwards it started to rapidly spin, pressing down heavily like a drill towards Lin Feng who was below it.

The spell sign in Lin Feng’s hands changed, his mana automatically converted to the pure buddhist mana of the Kṣitigarbha Sutra. A layer of faint golden buddhist light had also appeared over his body.

Lin Feng has yet to fully cultivate the Kṣitigarbha Gilded Body, so he does not dare to be careless. His two hands formed a buddhist hand sign and he used the buddhist mana of the Kṣitigarbha Sutra to drive it, releasing the Minor Samsara Technique.

Releasing the Minor Samsara Technique, golden light gathered above Lin Feng’s head, forming a massive “卐” character pattern. (TL: If you don’t know, that is not the nazi swastika.)

The black drill rapidly spun downwards. With a single spin, the golden “卐” character above Lin Feng’s head had already directed the black drill to the side, landing far away in the cliff at the side.

The cliff that had experienced the erosion of the rain and wind for thousands of year and still remained firm was directly smashed to bits by the black drill!

On the surface Lin Feng's expression did not changed, but alarm bells had sounded in his heart: "At present this old geezer only possesses a crippled soul, his strength is also equivalent to peak foundation establishment. If he recovers his peak state, how terrifying will he be?"

Regardless of the Kṣitigarbha Sutra or the Minor Samsara Technique, they are both secret techniques with infinite profundity of the Buddhist sect. Only with the combination of the two did Lin Feng withstand the first round of attack by Sikong Nan.

Moreover it was a good thing that he used the Minor Samsara Technique and used the method of leveraging force to deflect the black drill. Or else if he took it head on, with his incomplete Kṣitigarbha Gilded Body it would most likely not end well.

Lin Feng's pupils shrank: "Since I've made this enemy today, I absolutely cannot leave behind any future trouble! Raise not your hand when showing mercy, show no mercy when raising your hand."

Thinking here, he raised up his arms. 24 golden dots of light flew out in all directions, scattering on the ground.

Sikong Nan stared at Lin Feng and snorted coldly: “A baldy of the Buddhist sect? What I hate the most is monks.”

“I’ll have you witness my Hundred Demon Night Parade technique.” Sikong Nan’s spell sign changed in succession, the black mist emitted became increasingly thicker and gradually enveloped even the entire valley.

Shrill screams sounded in the black mist, dozens of crimson red dots of light suddenly lit up in the black mist, appearing very glaring.

The next instant, Lin Feng saw a dozen black shadows stumble out from the thick mist. They were a dozen pitch-black wraiths with hideous faces. It turns out that those crimson red dots of light that lit up before were their eyes.

Sikong Nan’s cackling rose up in the black mist: “Too bad, too bad, back in the day when I used the Thousand Demon Parade and Ten Thousand Demon Parade, what grandeur that was? Now I have fallen into hardship and only a dozen of worthless wraiths remain in my hand, but dealing with you is more than enough.”

“Little bastard, when I kill you I’ll turn you into a member of them and have you be at my command for eternity!”

Lin Feng closely looked over and saw that one of the weaker wraiths among them, even though his body was pitch-black and his face was twisted, but from his facial features he could still vaguely recognize that he is precisely that Sun Xiaozhu who was

just killed by Sikong Nan.

From the aura around this wraith, he has entirely retained Sun Xiaozhu's cultivation level of qi disciple level 8 from when he was alive.

Amongst this group of wraiths, Sun Xiaozhu's strength could be considered the weakest. The other wraiths at the worst possess mana of qi disciple great circle of perfection. There are six wraiths that should have been foundation establishment stage cultivators when they were alive and in the end had their souls pulled out by Sikong Nan for this technique.

In front of him the group of wraiths hissed and howled. Lin Feng turned a blind eye to them, his gaze looking towards the depths of the black mist. He laughed saying: "You really are teaching your grandmother how to suck eggs."

Sikong Nan was stunned: "What did you say?"

Lin Feng smiled, smiling radiantly and dazzling. He lifted his hand and lightly snapped.

"Pa!" With a crisp sound, dazzling buddhist light burst into the sky. Waves of golden light flushed the black mist clear. Buddhist chanting filled with benevolence could be heard without end. The ill wind and ghostly wails vanished in a flash!

The scent of sandalwood flooded the nostrils, causing people to

enter a state of tranquility. Lin Feng bathed in the buddhist light, closing his eyes and listening to the buddhist chanting. His hand lightly tapped to the beat and he was very comfortable.

But those dozen wraiths had it bad. They were completely surrounded by golden buddhist light, their entire bodies were as if they were being burned by fire. They could only curl up into a ball and struggle in resistance.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and smiled: “You just said, they’re more than enough to deal with who?”

With this smile he revealed his snow-white teeth that were even slightly glimmering.

But landing Sikong Nan’s eyes it made him shudder.

Sikong Nan has always thought that he was already vicious enough, but looking at Lin Feng right now who had a smiling face, he felt like he was facing a super prehistoric monster.

Lin Feng laughed, his right hand gently waving forward: “Then, let’s start.”

24 golden arhats chanted a buddhist prayer together that shook the ears. They rushed in great strides towards Sikong Nan and those dozen wraiths. When they moved the earth rumbled and mountains shook.

Chapter 64: I Said I'll Crush You So I'll Crush You!

After Lin Feng activated the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation, the battle instantly fell into a one-sided fight.

24 golden arhats who all possess a foundation establishment stage mana standard. They surrounded the dozen wraiths and beat the crap out of them.

Regardless of single combat ability or group combat ability, these wraiths aren't a match for the golden arhats to begin with. Moreover right now they are being restrained by the buddhist light and can only exert 80% of their skill. The result of the battle is naturally without question.

Sikong Nan watched the wraiths that he refined get killed one by one and cried out in distress.

“Kid, this isn't over until one of us dies!”

Sikong Nan's expression was savage. His two hands gathered in front of his chest and formed a spell sign. The black mist constantly gathered, gradually condensing into a black sphere of light.

The few remaining wraiths all released piercing screams. The red light in their eyes surged and shot towards the black sphere of light in front of Sikong Nan's chest.

Red light constantly mixed into the black sphere of light and it became increasingly darker and heavier.

And following the constant shooting of red light, those couple of wraiths all started to become dispirited, as if they had their strength sapped from them.

Lin Feng thought: “He seems to be using a secret technique, sacrificing these wraiths to complete a certain secret art.”

Thinking here Lin Feng waved his hands. The 24 golden arhats brought their hands together and the golden light above their heads connected together, forming a golden cloud of light.

Lin Feng didn't have any thoughts of waiting for his opponent to charge up his big move and then having a showdown with his strongest move after he's charged it up.

Attack the army while they are in the middle of crossing the river, this is the correct path!

In the golden cloud of light, buddhist chanting boomed. A beam of golden light flew out from the light cloud and turned into a massive golden wheel, smashing down towards Sikong Nan's head!”

A thick, blood-red pillar of light shot out from the black sphere of light with a bang. Black light circulated around the pillar of light,

its momentum was frightening.

The golden wheel and the blood-red light pillar crashed together. They did not emit any sounds, but powerful invisible shockwaves constantly spread out in all directions with the point of contact as the center

Even the golden light mist in the buddhist light formation was blown away by the continuous shockwaves.

Invisible waves swept over the entire valley. Ancient towering trees in the mountain toppled over and countless plants were lifted up from their roots. Sand and stone flew in a flurry and cracks appeared even on the solid stone walls.

The blood-red light pillar was not destroyed by the golden wheel and the golden wheel was also unharmed. Two powerful forces refused to budge in the air and had actually entered into a deadlock.

Seeing this Sikong Nan felt great hatred in his heart: “Cunning kid, if he waited for me to completely finish this technique I would definitely be able to destroy his buddhist magic in one hit.”

“Dammit, being so heavily wounded, not only has my cultivation level dropped greatly, even a lot of powerful abilities cannot be used. Or else even if I only have foundation establishment stage cultivation level right now, killing a little bastard like you would be like killing a dog!

Sikong Nan roared in his heart: “If you land in my hands I will definitely boil your soul like lamp oil!”

Lin Feng’s expression was indifferent, he nodded his head leisurely: “Not bad.”

His calm appearance made Sikong Nan even more blue in his heart.

“But, you’re still far from enough.” Lin Feng’s hand made a seal and formed a spell sign. The 24 arhat light figures instantly responded, chanting a buddhist prayer again in a low voice: “Buddha is merciful!”

The golden wheel instantly surged with light, forcefully pushing forward and pressuring the blood-red pillar of light to constantly retract backwards.

The wheel’s speed of advance was not fast. It moved steadily and without haste, but it was filled with an unstoppable, unrivalled prospect of strength.

I said I’ll crush you so I’ll crush you!

Sikong Nan’s expression changed greatly, this time he couldn’t even speak. He could only struggle to persevere and resist, but in front of the golden wheel’s overpowering momentum, he appeared to be so powerless, like a candle in the wind that could extinguish at any moment.

But Lin Feng did not stop there, he was unforgiving. Only a dead opponent is a good opponent.

Letting the 24 sariras support the spell formation on their own, Lin Feng's own mana had already converted from the buddhist mana to the thunder class mana of the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique.

Lightning, the most unyielding and most positive energy in the world. It is the most domineering and swift, and is precisely the nemesis of all ghosts, specially countering spiritual and evil magic.

Lin Feng's palms came together, right away the thunder essence around his body rapidly gathered, forming a massive lightning blade over 10 meters long in the air. Violent bluish-purple lightning shone directly on Sikong Nan's face, making his face purple in colour.

At this moment Sikong Nan felt like the light in the sky had suddenly dimmed. The sun did not disappear, it was that his vision was completely filled by the light emitted from another bluish-purple sun.

The skill derived from the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique, Wild Lightning Blade!

Lin Feng revealed his teeth smiling: "Old bastard, die!"

In Sikong Nan's terrified eyes, the violent massive lightning blade arced across dozens of meters of space, chopping down towards his head while bringing up sizzling sounds that constantly crackled beside the ears.

"No!" Right now all of Sikong Nan's mana was used in competing with the golden wheel, where does he have the extra strength to block Lin Feng's attack?

In the sound of his wailing, Sikong Nan's spirit that was floating in mid-air was directly cut in half by Lin Feng.

His lower body was directly blown to bits by the lightning. Countless electric sparks coiled around every inch of skin on his upper body, constantly exploding and appearing very miserable.

"This kid is savage, I can't fight recklessly against him anymore or else I'll definitely lose my life here today!"

Sikong Nan glared venomously at Lin Feng. His remaining spirit turned into a cloud of black mist and returned back into the Netherworld Bead.

Lin Feng slightly knit his forehead and took back the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation. He darted forward and picked up the Netherworld Bead. He can sense that within the Netherworld Bead, Sikong Nan's heavily injured spirit was actually rapidly recovering.

“Kid, no matter how arrogant you are, as long as I hide in this Netherworld Bead you can’t kill me!” Sikong Nan’s venomous laughter travelled out from the Netherworld Bead: “Sooner or later I’ll settle the score with you, let’s see who can laugh until the end!”

Lin Feng’s eyes lightly swept the Netherworld Bead. His finger drew a seal in the air and enchanted it onto the Netherworld Bead: “Without question the one who will laugh to the end is definitely me. As for you, hehe!”

Inside of the Netherworld Bead, Sikong Nan’s laughter abruptly stopped, as if someone had suddenly grabbed his neck. Only after a long pause did his enraged voice travel out: “What did you do? How can you cut-off the connection between me and the Netherworld Bead?”

“This... This is the Void Temple’s Heaven Cage Sigil?! How can you know the Void Temple’s secret technique, don’t you practise buddhist dao techniques?”

“Knowing dao techniques of the buddhist holy land and also knowing the skill of the daoist holy land, who exactly are you?”

Lin Feng did not pay attention to Sikong Nan who had already fallen into madness. He put away the Netherworld Bead and used the Black Cloud Flag to wrap up himself and Wang Lin who was still unconscious on the ground, leaving the valley.

Lin Feng attempted to use his mana to stimulate and wake up Wang Lin, but there was no reaction.

He wrinkled his brows and closely examined him, discovering that Wang Lin's soul was actually also trapped in the Netherworld Bead.

“I have to fish out his soul as soon as possible. He doesn't have any cultivation prowess, if his soul leaves his body for too long he won't be able to return to his body.” Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and flew: “The Heaven Cage Sigil also can only temporarily seal the old geezer. Leaving him alive is ultimately trouble, I'll find a place and completely deal with all the problems.”

Chapter 65: Master Isn't Home: The First Bullet

At the time when the people of the Mount Heng School were flying, they flew over 500 kilometers away from Mount Heng before stopping.

Afterwards Sikong Nan also brought along Wang Lin and flew for a long distance. After discerning the direction, Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and returned back in the direction of Mount Heng with Wang Lin and the Netherworld Bead.

Lin Feng's three disciples were still waiting for him in the small town at the foot of Mount Heng.

But before meeting up with his disciples, Lin Feng has to first find a quiet place and deal with Wang Lin and Sikong Nan.

He found a quiet valley less than 50 kilometers east of Mount Heng, opening up the Black Cloud Flag and sealing the entire space of the valley. He then crushed a voice-transmitting crystal.

A faint white light rose up from the crystal fragments, Xiao Yan's voice travelled out from the white light: "Master, what's the matter?"

Lin Feng said: "Lately master has been meditating on the way of the universe and my dao technique level has improved again, but I need to enter closed-door training for a period of time. I can't say

exactly how long. During this period of time you guys take care of yourselves, stay in the town and wait patiently for master to return.”

Pausing for a moment, Lin Feng still continued to say: “My location of closed-door training is a small valley 50 kilometers east of Mount Heng. If you guys truly encounter a problem that you guys cannot solve then you guys can come here to find master.”

Xiao Yan smiled saying: “Don’t worry Master, we will wait patiently for you to come back.”

Lin Feng said “Ok”, the white light on the crystal dissipated and the communication ended there.

Properly setting down Wang Lin’s body, Lin Feng sat cross-legged, the Netherworld Bead lay flat in his palm. He ultimately only has a qi disciple stage cultivation level, the Heaven Cage Sigil that he laid before was already about to be destroyed by Sikong Nan.

Lin Feng connected his spirit with the Netherworld Bead, his mind seemed to enter a dim, yellow space.

In the space, visible ripples constantly flowed, as if he was beneath water. Looking around was a stretch of pale yellow.

In the depths of the space, Sikong Nan was imprisoned in a cage formed by rays of light. Black mist coiled around his body,

constantly ramming the bars of the light cage. The light cage set up by the Heaven Cage Sigil was already crumbling, the old geezer could break out at any moment.

Seeing Lin Feng, Sikong Nan cackled: “You think that it’s all good if you use the Heaven Cage Sigil to trap me? It’s the exact opposite, this Heaven Cage Sigil has instead let me see through the depths of your cultivation level. You’re just a little qi disciple stage brat. When I destroy this sigil, your soul will go well with my drink!”

Lin Feng laughed without care: “Before that I’ll chop you into a salad first.”

Golden buddhist light instantly illuminated the dim space. Looking at the massive human figures in the buddhist light, Sikong Nan’s face was pale: “What is this magic item of yours, its mana can actually seep into the Netherworld Bead? These... These are sariras, you refined buddhist sariras into magic items?”

In the boundless buddhist light, Lin Feng sat quietly cross-legged. His two hands formed a buddhist hand sign and he smiled saying: “Old bastard, today I will use this buddhist light formation to send you back into the cycle of reincarnation.”

Xiao Budian stared eagerly at Xiao Yan: “Eldest Apprentice-Brother, is Master not coming back?”

Xiao Yan nodded his head: “Master has to breakthrough his boundary and advance his cultivation prowess, so he decided at the last minute to enter closed-door training for a period of time. The length of time of the closed-door training is uncertain, his position is a small valley 50 kilometers east of here.”

“Closed-door training this kind of thing stresses being undisturbed, so my opinion is that we just stay here and wait for Master.”

Xiao Budian lowered his head.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi exchanged gazes. Zhu Yi said: “Youngest Apprentice-Brother, if you really do miss Master then we’ll head over to the valley right now. We won’t disturb him, we’ll just guard around the valley...”

Not even finishing his sentence, he saw Xiao Budian lift up his head in surprise: “I didn’t say I want to go find Master.”

Zhu Yi said puzzled: “But your head was lowered and you looked to be in low spirits.”

Xiao Budian smirked: “I was thinking of where to go play later. Master is finally not around, even if I cause a bit of trouble there won’t be anybody to nag at me anymore.”

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi these two apprentice-brothers were both simultaneously speechless. They looked at each other and both

shook their heads laughing helplessly. They were defeated by this little imp.

Xiao Budian smiled saying: “Apprentice-brothers, let’s go out for a walk. Sitting here and aimlessly waiting is honestly too boring.”

Zhu Yi slightly knit his brows while Xiao Yan was quite moved. He himself also possesses an unrestrained personality, he’s never been a scrupulous and well-behaved person.

Seeing Zhu Yi appear to slightly disapprove, Xiao Yan smiled saying: “Junior Apprentice-Brother, let’s go together. Don’t you also regularly say that it’s better to walk ten thousand miles than to read ten thousand books?”

“What is walking ten thousand miles? It is experiencing more things, witnessing a myriad of people and situations, it’s not just busily travelling.”

Zhu Yi thought: “The ancient scholars all travelled across the states, spreading knowledge and educating the people while also increasing their knowledge and honing their knowledge and reason. Sitting quietly and reading is self-cultivation, observing the many states of the world is also self-cultivation. There are principles within the Heaven and Earth and also principles within commoners. They are all principles, I should have an understanding of them all.”

He has long read poetry and literature and his personality is also rational and calm. Compared to people of the same age he can bear

the loneliness more, but he is after all a teenager. He also has a side of curiosity and livelihood.

The three youngsters left without delay, leaving the town together and walking towards Chuzhou City that was 50 kilometers away.

Chuzhou City is an important city at the southern border of the Great Qin Dynasty. It is densely populated and commercially developed. Inside of the city it is very lively.

After wandering around for a bit Xiao Yan and co. arrived at the city square in the city.

The outer ring of the city square is all regular stuff like food and clothing for normal humans, but walking into the central area of the city square, it is the world of all sorts of cultivation materials.

The Qin Dynasty's southern border is next to demon territory. At the same time as being chaotic and dangerous, there are also all kinds of precious treasures. Chuzhou is the biggest trading center of the southern border of the Qin Dynasty for all sorts of precious treasures.

Walking in the city square, the three people looked around left and right. For the most part they were just strolling around, they can't afford to buy what catches their eye and they don't care for anything too cheap.

“Hm? This thing...” Xiao Yan suddenly stopped his steps, staring at an item placed in a shop. It is massive in size and is pitch-black, its length is virtually the same as his height.

Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian noticed his peculiarity and also stopped their footsteps. Xiao Budian smiled saying: “What do you have your eyes on Eldest Apprentice-Brother? You’re so preoccupied, let me see too.” With one look he couldn’t help but be speechless.

Zhu Yi’s curiosity was also peaked by their reactions and he also walked over. After seeing the item he was the same as Xiao Budian, he was also a bit speechless.

The item that attracted Xiao Yan’s attention is an incredibly big black greatsword. Um, instead of saying it is a greatsword, it would be better to say that is a giant, thick metal ruler with no blade. The black greatsword also didn’t have a tip, at the end of the sword it was as if it had been cut off at the middle by something, revealing a cross-section as smooth as a mirror.

Lines of slightly faint, strange markings were drawn on the surface of the pitch-black greatsword. The markings reached the sword hilt and virtually covered every part of the blade. Matched with the archaic pitch-black colour, it looked relatively mysterious.

Zhu Yi said with a stutter: “Eldest Apprentice-Brother, you, you have your eyes on this thing?”

Xiao Yan had a puzzled expression: “I get this feeling that this

item seems to have some sort of connection with me... Borrowing a line that Master regularly says, could this item and me be fated?”

Xiao Budian’s expression was strange. He held it in for a while but was unable to hold back, bursting out with laughter.

Zhu Yi also flashed a smile. Xiao Yan was a bit embarrassed: “Two little pricks, what are you laughing at.”

“I won’t laugh, I won’t laugh.” Xiao Budian hurriedly shook his hand, but the smile on his face just couldn’t stop.

Xiao Yan slapped his little head a bit vexed, Xiao Budian hurriedly covered his head: “Don’t slap me, I’m always getting slapped by Master, I’m already about to go dumb. Eldest Apprentice-Brother, if you keep slapping me then I’ll really become dumb.”

Xiao Yan scolded jokingly: “Just die from dumbness.”

Zhu Yi smiled at the side saying: “Since Eldest Apprentice-Brother likes it then just buy it.”

Xiao Yan thought about it for a moment and then slowly nodded his head.

The three people all didn’t notice that on the street outside of the store, a grey-clothed person wearing a large straw hat on his head suddenly opened his drooping eyelids. A strong light surged in his

eyes and he twisted his head staring at the shop that Xiao Yan and co. are in.

“This mana fluctuation, it’s the mana fluctuation of the Buddhist Thunder Staff! Buddha have mercy, I’ve finally found a clue!”

Chapter 66: Master Isn't Home: Trouble Comes Knocking

On the wide dirt road, a black-clothed youth was difficulty walking while covered in sweat. The youth's every step was like a heavy object falling on the ground, heavily smashing the ground and kicking up a wave of dust.

Looking close-up, one can see that on the back of the black-clothed youth he is actually carrying an incredibly massive black greatsword. The greatsword doesn't have a blade nor a tip and its length has virtually surpassed the youth's height.

This strange combination made the many passerbyers in the city square all unable to help but cast gazes of curiosity at him.

Beside the black-clothed youth, a green-robed youthful scholar walked side-by-side with him. A child only four or five years old walked energetically in front, occasionally turning his head and looking at the black-clothed youth.

The expression on the faces of the green-robed scholar and the child were both strange, wanting to smile but not daring to do so.

The black-clothed youth glared at them grumpily, dragging his leaden feet and walking under a tree beside the road.

Walking to under the tree, the black-clothed youth directly fell to his back and lay on the cooling grass, letting the sweat on his

forehead flow down like a small stream.

His two companions stood beside him, lowering their heads and looking at him. The smile on their faces was nearly about to burst.

The black-clothed youth is naturally Xiao Yan. Looking at that smiling appearance of theirs, he let out a snort: “If you want to laugh then laugh, careful that you suffocate to death!”

Xiao Budian exploded with a crisp laughter, Zhu Yi’s face also revealed a grin: “Eldest Apprentice-Brother, of all the things you could have been fated with you just had to be fated with such a bulky thing, now you’re suffering big, huh?”

Xiao Yan scratched his head in distress: “I didn’t think before either that not mentioning that this thing itself is crazy heavy, it can also suppress the circulation of my mana. This thing really wants to tire me to death. Just thinking about carrying this thing back to Mount Heng is terrifying.”

Xiao Budian took pleasure in his misfortune: “Eldest Apprentice-Brother, exactly what sins did you commit last life?”

Xiao Yan glared at him: “On the road back to Mount Heng, you and me take turns carrying it. Your cultivation pills were also used in buying this thing. If you don’t carry it and we can’t bring this thing back then I won’t give back the pills that I owe you.”

Xiao Budian was instantly heated: “You’re shameless Apprentice-

Brother! Xiao Yan smiled saying: “I’m sticking to you, what can you do?”

“You...” Xiao Budian just wanted to speak when his expression slightly changed and he twisted his head looking behind him.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi were also alarmed, raising their eyes and looking behind Xiao Budian. They saw a grey-clothed person wearing a big straw hat on his head, silently standing not far away from them.

The grey-clothed person took off the straw hat, revealing a shiny bald head. Six precept scars were neatly aligned on his head.

“Why is Hui Ku’s Buddhist Thunder Staff with you guys? Where is Hui Ku and where are the sariras?” The grey-clothed person slowly asked. His voice was not loud but it was as if it sounded from the depths of their hearts.

The expressions of Xiao Yan and his apprentice-brothers all slightly changed. The grey-clothed person only calmly stood there and he already gave them a lot of pressure. They didn’t even dare to recklessly move a pinky finger.

The three people all exchanged gazes, thoughts rapidly turning in their minds.

“This monk’s cultivation level is unfathomable. Master is not with us, if we fight recklessly it’s easy for us to be in an

unfavorable situation.” Xiao Budian’s big black eyes turned and he opened his mouth first saying: “It was a monk who gave it to our master and then master passed it on to us.”

The grey-clothed monk glanced at Xiao Budian, a hint of amazement revealed in his eyes. Clearly he’s perceived that Xiao Budian is not even five years old yet and already has a cultivation level of qi disciple level 10.

“Which expert is your master?” Subconsciously, the grey-clothed monk’s tone of voice became a bit more courteous. Being able to train such an outrageous disciple like Xiao Budian, his master is definitely not a regular person.

Xiao Budian shook his head: “Master doesn’t let us say.”

Xiao Yan looked at the grey-clothed monk and asked modestly: “How may we help you?”

The grey-clothed monk looked at him: “The Buddhist Thunder Staff is on your body, right? That is the magic item of our Buddhist sect.”

After being silent for a moment, Xiao Yan said: “The magic item was bestowed by my master. Without my master’s approval I do not dare to easily gift it to another.”

The grey-clothed monk’s drooping eyelids instantly opened, a strong light surged and he stared straight at Xiao Yan.

Xiao Yan's mind was shaken and he nearly fainted over. Under the gaze of the grey-clothed monk's eyes, Xiao Yan even had a feeling of guilt as if he'd committed great evil.

But his will is incredibly strong and he managed to stabilize his mind, staring back at the grey-clothed monk unyielding.

Zhu Yi was silent the whole time. At this moment he quietly took a step forward, standing side-by-side with Xiao Yan and facing the pressure brought by the grey-clothed monk.

Xiao Budian's little face also scowled. He stood together with his two apprentice-brothers and the three apprentice-brothers all faced the powerful enemy together, side-by-side.

The grey-clothed monk's eyes flashed and his eyelids drooped back down. The pressure instantly vanished and Xiao Yan and co. unanimously exhaled a sigh of relief. Only at this time did they discover that their backs were already covered in sweat.

"The monk who gave the Buddhist Thunder Staff to you guys, do you guys know where he is right now?" The grey-clothed thought for a moment and then opened his mouth asking.

Xiao Budian said first: "We don't know, it's already been almost half-a-year since we saw him."

"Half-a-year ago?" The grey-clothed monk pressed on: "Where

did you guys meet him?”

Xiao Budian answered without hesitation: “Near the Great Zhou Dynasty’s capital city, Tianjing. If you want to find him, there’s no harm in taking a trip to Tianjing.”

The grey-clothed monk stared at the three people for a long while and then nodded his head, putting his palms together and saying: “Namo Amitabha, thank you children.” Before his voice had died away, he had already vanished on the spot.

Xiao Yan was slightly dazed: “This monk is more bark than bite, he just left like that?”

Xiao Budian said snappily: “What, do you really want him to attack and cook us all in one pot?”

Zhu Yi pondered and said: “This monk could very likely come back, let’s go back and meet with Master as soon as possible.”

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian nodded their heads together and the three apprentice-brothers hurriedly walked towards outside of the city.

The air slightly fluctuated and the grey-clothed monk revealed himself, staring at their distancing figures.

“I’ve let out the line, hopefully I can catch a big fish.” The grey-clothed monk let out a low sigh and followed behind the three

people.

When Xiao Yan and co. were passing through the city gate, they coincided with a group of people entering the city who brushed past the three people.

An old man amongst the group sudden wrinkled his forehead and drew near to the leading youth: “Young Master Tian, this old servant just saw a small child...”

Young Master Tian asked: “What about the small child?”

The old man responded saying: “In the past this old servant once met that Shi Ziling, the child just now looks very much like Shi Ziling.”

Yu Tian’s eyes flashed: “Did you see wrong?”

Shi Ziling is precisely Shi Tian Hao, aka Xiao Budian’s father.

The old man nodded his head: “Young Master Tian, you know that this old servant’s pair of eyes is the most accurate in remembering people. That child looks at least 70% like Shi Ziling, if that child was still alive he should also be around this big.”

Yu Tian lowered his head and thought for a moment. He gave the order saying: “Go, find two people to follow and observe them. Report back after they find where they’re staying.”

In a small valley 50 kilometers east of Mount Heng.

In the Netherworld Bead, Lin Feng was controlling the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation and using immeasurable buddhist light to forcefully refine Sikong Nan.

The old geezer roared again and again, constantly resisting. He may not have been able to take control of the Netherworld Bead, but after staying within it for a long period of time, he can also borrow a bit of the Netherworld Bead's power. For the moment, Lin Feng really can't do much with him.

While controlling the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation, Lin Feng was also searching through the system.

"Ghost King Cannon... Hundred Demon Night Parade technique... Found it, it's here!"

Chapter 67: True Netherworld Water

“Ghost King Cannon... Hundred Demon Night Parade technique... Got it, I found it, it’s here.” Lin Feng felt rejuvenated and carefully read the descriptions.

Ghost King Cannon, a secret spell of the Thousand Ghost Sect of the past, siphoning the spirits of countless wraiths and releasing them after compressing them using an arcane technique. Its attack power is very powerful and it was one of the killing moves of the Thousand Ghost Sect.

Hundred Ghost Night Parade, a secret spell of the Thousand Ghost Sect of the past. After killing the target the user can imprison the soul and use an arcane technique to refine it into a wraith, hiding within the user’s mana. When needed it can be released to attack enemies. The wraith completely maintains its cultivation level during life and the number of wraiths that can be controlled is closely related to the user’s cultivation level.

Lin Feng’s eyes turned: “Thousand Ghost Sect? I think it was a dark sect that was once very prosperous, afterwards it was wiped out by the Mt. Shu Sword Sect.

The Heaven Primal world’s power structure is relatively stable. Besides 30 years ago where the Great Zhou Dynasty teamed up together with many forces and destroyed the Buddhist sect, there is basically little change.

Before the elimination of Buddhism, the three great holy lands

basically represented the strongest power in this world. Even with the matter of the elimination of Buddhism, the shadows of the Void Temple and the Mt. Shu Sword Sect could be seen, or else the Great Thunder Monastery couldn't have fallen.

Ever since the three great holy lands were in power, in the thousands of years of time, the days of the dark sects have not been well. They're basically rats that everyone hates. Even if a couple of big shots have appeared before, they were prominent for a time but they ultimately couldn't avoid the end of being suppressed and exterminated.

The Thousand Ghost Sect is a classical example. In its heyday its name far surpassed regular sects, almost nearing the three great holy lands. It was the holy land of the ghost cultivators of the world and was the leader of the dark sects.

But after the peak is decline. Due to this or that reasons, after the couple of core dark cultivators in the sect died, they ultimately couldn't avoid the fate of destruction. They were challenged by a sword cultivator of the Mt. Shu Sword Sect who wiped them out by himself, becoming one of the legendary stories in this sword cultivator's wild life.

Lin Feng glanced at Sikong Nan and suddenly opened his mouth asking: "You are a member of the Thousand Ghost Sect?"

Sikong Nan was slightly stunned and then burst out with loud laughter: "Surprise surprise, there is actually still someone who remembers the Thousand Ghost Sect."

“That’s right, I am precisely the last elder of the Thousand Ghost Sect, Sikong Nan.” He laughed proudly: “You kid, from where did you hear the name of the Thousand Ghost Sect?”

Lin Feng said slowly: “I heard a friend mention it.”

Sikong Nan laughed saying: “I’ll say you guys have some knowledge.”

Lin Feng continued to slowly say: “In his sect the story of your Thousand Ghost Sect has always been circulating around.”

Sikong Nan was surprised: “He is also from a dark sect?”

“No.” Lin Feng shook his head, his face revealing a warm smile like the spring sunlight: “My friend’s name is Liu Yang, he is a disciple of the Mt. Shu Sword Sect. In his sect, the story of a mighty senior taking down your Thousand Ghost Sect by himself has always circulated around.”

Sikong Nan instantly became silent.

The next instant, the space of the entire Netherworld Bead trembled, resounding with Sikong’s howl of utter fury: “I’ll kill you!”

Lin Feng secretly laughed. The angrier Sikong Nan is, the more

unstable his mana control will be and the more openings he will reveal.

Even the Netherworld Bead will reject him more.

Sikong Nan was instantly taught a lesson, being miserably suppressed by the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation. At this time he also knew that he had fallen for Lin Feng's evil trick. He rushed to calm down his mind and just barely succeeded, continuing to confront Lin Feng.

The spiritual energy in the Netherworld Bead is very thick, like lead and mercury. It is very difficult for Lin Feng to move this spiritual energy.

In addition, over an extended period of time of being in contact with this spiritual energy, Lin Feng discovered that his mana actually had signs of gradually going out of control.

It's not tainting his mana like the True Blood River Water, instead it has a trend of reverting the mana that Lin Feng painstakingly cultivated back into regular and pure spiritual energy.

The training of qi of cultivators is channelling the spiritual energy of the world into their bodies and converting it into their own mana. And within this Netherworld Bead there is actually a faint type of strange power that can reverse the conversion between spiritual energy and mana.

It is precisely by borrowing this power than Sikong Nan is able to withstand the buddhist light refinement of Lin Feng's 24 Heaven Arhat Formation.

After thinking deeply, Lin Feng discovered that the Netherworld Bead this treasure could very likely be related to the legendary True Netherworld Water, or even be created using True Netherworld Water.

True Netherworld Water is also ranked as one of the six great true waters of the world like the True Blood River Water. It originates from the Netherworld, an existence even closer to the Infernal Hell than the Nether Blood River.

The Netherworld is also known as The River of Forgetfulness, True Netherworld Water is also known as the Water of Oblivion. Its power can purify everything within the world and revert it back to its primordial state.

As long as the human soul is stained with even one drop of True Netherworld Water, it will lose all memories.

When mana is contaminated by True Netherworld Water, it will also be reverted back to the purest spiritual energy of the world.

Luckily this Netherworld Bead also seems to have been greatly damaged. There isn't any real True Netherworld Water in the bead, or else right now all of Lin Feng's mana would have already been reverted clean.

But the Netherworld Bead is after all created using True Netherworld Water and carries a certain degree of the True Netherworld Water's mystical effect, helping Sikong Nan withstand Lin Feng's refinement.

Lin Feng calculated in his heart: "Fire and water do not agree. If I want to subdue the True Netherworld Water, it can only be the seven great true flames that are on the same level as it. I don't have any of the seven great true flames in my hands, but there also isn't any real True Netherworld Water here."

"The Fury Flames of Acala is one of the spiritual flames second only to the seven great true flames. If I can cultivate the Fury Flames of Acala then I can definitely subdue this Netherworld Bead's mana."

Unfortunately, just like his Kṣitigarbha Gilded Body, currently Lin Feng has still yet to cultivate the skill of the Fury Flames of Acala. It's not that he doesn't have enough talent, but that currently Lin Feng who is only at peak qi disciple, the level of his dao technique is too low and it is not sufficient to cultivate the Fury Flames of Acala.

Lin Feng's gaze landed on the bodies of the 24 golden arhats and he thought: "Maybe I can borrow their strength."

The 24 sariras making up the formation are all the spiritual remains of the Great Thunder Monastery's eminent monks. The cultivation level of these mighty buddhist cultivators is far more than simply foundation establishment stage. It is because Hui Ku's cultivation level was only foundation establishment stage, which is

why he could only create 24 arhat light figures with foundation establishment strength.

Now that they've landed in Lin Feng's hands, following the increase of Lin Feng's dao technique level, foundation establishment stage is still okay, but if one day he is able to form an aurous core and attain aurous core stage cultivation level, he can remake these sariras and obtain 24 arhat light figures that possess aurous core stage strength. That, is a power that transcends the heavens.

Lin Feng converted his mana to the buddhist fire class mana of the Art of Acala. He then used to fire class mana of the Art of Acala to try and communicate with the 24 golden arhats.

Three golden arhats reacted, resonating with the mana of Lin Feng's Art of Acala.

Lin Feng's heart relaxed, he knows that his guess is not wrong.

The sariras manifesting these three golden arhats, in life as eminent monks, the dao technique that they practised should also have been the Art of Acala!

Lin Feng instantly laughed: "This will make things easy, I was just afraid that out of the 24 of you there wouldn't be a single one who practised the Art of Acala. Now there are actually three, hehe, old bastard, you're dead!"

Lin Feng constantly channelled the mana of the Art of Acala into those three arhat light figures. His mana stimulated the mana hidden with the sariras. Blazing flames instantly appeared over the three arhat light figures and they started burning up.

The other arhats split into three groups of seven, respectively guarding those three blazing arhats and continuously supplying their mana to the three blazing arhats.

The three blazing arhats brought their palms together and chanted a buddhist prayer. The fire on their bodies shot into the sky, connecting together as one and turning into a blazing sea of fire.

Warning signs emerged in Sikong Nan's heart. He stared in terror at the sea of fire above his head: "Little bastard, what do you want to do?"

Chapter 68: Within The Netherworld Bead

Under Lin Feng's control, the 24 golden arhats stood divided in three directions, surrounding Sikong Nan in the center.

The three blazing arhats rose up into the air. Beneath the bodies of each blazing arhat were seven arhats holding them up, powerful buddhist light was constantly supplied to the blazing arhats.

The fire on the bodies of the blazing arhats became increasingly stronger, shooting into the sky and connecting together as one above Sikong Nan's head, turning into a blazing sea of fire.

Lin Feng's face showed an expression of anger, he shouted with a staggering gaze: "Buddha is merciful, but sometimes He also shows wrath, releasing eternal flames of fury, eradicating all evil, burning everything and all!"

Rumble!

The entire space of the Netherworld Bead jolted, afterwards a golden buddha with four faces, eight arms and an expression of anger slowly ascended from the sea of fire. Between the buddha's brows is a closed, vertical eye.

The golden buddha chanted a deafening buddhist prayer. In the buddha's voice, the vertical eye between his brows opened, shooting out a small, ivory-white ember from the vertical eye.

The ivory-white ember looks incredibly feeble, as if a gust of wind could extinguish it.

Yet, upon seeing it, Sikong Nan was incredibly terrified: “A Wisdom King! You actually cultivated the Fury Flames of Acala!”

In the air, wherever the ivory-white flame burned to, the space there would start to collapse and disintegrate!

Lin Feng extended a finger and pointed. The ivory-white ember instantly turned into a straight line, shooting towards Sikong Nan.

Where the fire line passed by, the mana within the Netherworld Bead that purifies all was instantly destroyed. It was simply unable to block the advancement of the fire line. The fire line shot to Sikong Nan’s protective black mist, and it was as if a spark splashing into a pan of oil.

“Rumble”

The black mist completely vanished and it all started to burn up, turning into blazing flames. At this moment it all turned into fuel for the fire, helping the fire burn stronger.

The Fury Flames of Acala, within the flames are thoughts of incredible anger, thoughts of anger where even Buddha becomes angered and burns all. Even other flames, as long as they are not the seven great true flames, they will all be burned away by the Fury Flames of Acala.

Sikong Nan finally felt the threat of death, he was panic-stricken in his heart: “I truly am a tiger descended to the plains and being bullied by dogs! I have actually fallen to the state of being stepped on by this kind of kid. If it was in the past, I’d pinch him to death with a finger!”

“At this critical moment I can’t worry about that much anymore. Even if I die I’m going to pull you down with me.”

Sikong Nan roared saying: “Little bastard, let’s die together!”

Following his roar, a low rumble travelled out from the depths of the space within the Netherworld Bead.

Lin Feng slightly wrinkled his brows and listened carefully. It seems to be the gurgling sound of flowing water.

“This is...” Lin Feng’s expression changed drastically. He thought of something in his heart, but it was already too late for him to react.

The sound of flowing water travelled from far to near and became increasingly louder. In the end it turned into a loud rumbling as if a dam bursting!

A river with transparent, yellow water flowed down, rushing towards Lin Feng and Sikong Nan.

Lin Feng secretly cursed: “Fuck!”

Turns out it's not that there isn't any True Netherworld Water in the Netherworld Bead, on the contrary there is a tremendous amount of True Netherworld Water stored here.

It's just that Sikong Nan has always been unable to refine and control the Netherworld Bead, so this True Netherworld Water is also a great scourge for him and he didn't dare to lightly touch it.

But right now he has already been forced into a corner by Lin Feng, he's naturally let go of all concerns and figured that he might as well summon the True Netherworld Water to perish together with Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's expression was dark. The Fury Flames of Acala that he controls is still just a small ember. Against so much True Netherworld Water, it can't even make a splash and will be directly swallowed.

Sikong Nan laughed hysterically, getting swallowed first by the True Netherworld Water that rushed over. Lin Feng could very clearly see that the instant the fire surrounding him came in contact with the True Netherworld Water, it was all extinguished.

Seeing this scene, the corner of Lin Feng's eye jumped. His gaze wandered around looking at his surroundings and he was urgently thinking of a plan in his heart.

Suddenly, the scenery before Lin Feng's eyes lit up and he saw a massive, transparent sphere of light floating above the surging True Netherworld Water. Inside of the sphere of light is sitting a skinny teen, it was surprisingly Wang Lin.

“That is Wang Lin's soul.” Lin Feng instantly realized. He didn't dare to hesitate and jumped onto the light sphere. He was like standing on a small raft, advancing following the rushing Netherworld river.

Only at this moment did Lin Feng have time to observe Wang Lin who was in the light sphere. He saw that his eyes were tightly shut and he was unconscious. He did not have any reaction towards Lin Feng's arrival.

Lin Feng's eyes moved and he sat down above the light sphere. He was located right above Wang Lin's head and the two people were as if on the top and bottom bunk.

The light sphere drifted along with the flowing water. After drifting for who knows how far, a black stone pillar suddenly appeared in the center of the river. The light sphere bumped into the black stone pillar but was not bounced away and instead was tightly stuck to the stone pillar.

Lin Feng stared at the black stone pillar and observed it for a moment. He extended his hand stroking the stone pillar. Right away a long dao technique incantation poured into his head.

“This is... the Netherworld Nirvana Manual? This is the dao

technique to refine the Netherworld Bead this treasure?” It came to Lin Feng: “I see, so that’s how it is. After Wang Lin wakes up, he will obtain the Netherworld Nirvana Manual here and start to comprehend the dao technique and skills contained in the Netherworld Bead, thereby completely refining this treasure.”

“With the Netherworld Bead in hand, Sikong Nan that old geezer wouldn’t be able to do anything with him.”

Having a treasure and a dao technique, it would be about time for Wang Lin this lurking dragon to rise up into the sky. Stepping upon his golden path of invincibility.

This is probably the path of the chosen one that Wang Lin should be walking.

Lin Feng laughed. Since he’s encountered this kind of lucky thing, he naturally won’t be polite.

Lin Feng doesn’t plan on taking away the fortuitous opportunity that should belong to Wang Lin, but he cannot allow Wang Lin to grasp the Netherworld Nirvana Manual on his own and then independently refine the Netherworld Bead,

Having him, this master, teach him the dao technique and then guiding him to refine the treasure, this is the correct tempo.

Thinking here, Lin Feng smiled faintly. He calmed his heart and started to seriously meditate on the profundities of the

Netherworld Bead dao technique that came from the black stone pillar.

Inside of the Netherworld Bead is a spiritual space where no physical bodies exist, the area of the space is infinitely wide.

At a place very far away from the black stone pillar, a human figure suddenly floated up from the Netherworld river. It was surprisingly Sikong Nan.

But the Sikong Nan of now is greatly different from before. He is no longer circled by black mist and looking ghostly. Instead, his entire body has turned into the same dusky-yellow colour of the True Netherworld Water and his body is also semi-transparent.

Right now the old geezer's mana aura has also become the same as the True Netherworld Water, hiding an aura of annihilation and purification within the calmness.

"I may not have died, but I am worse-off than dead! I was actually refined by the Netherworld Bead this treasure. This life I cannot leave this Netherworld Bead." Sikong Nan's face was twisted and filled with hatred: "But I have also profited from misfortune, allowing me to not only no longer need to fear this True Netherworld Water, but to also be able to manipulate it."

Sikong Nan silently sensed his surroundings. The True Netherworld Water lifted up his body and then rushed in the direction of the black stone pillar.

“You two kids, this time you guys are dead!”

Xiao Yan and the other two were walking on the road. They were in a rush and returning back to Mount Heng together.

Xiao Budian suddenly blinked his eyes and said in a low voice: “Apprentice-brothers, someone is tailing behind us.”

Xiao Yan is carrying the black greatsword that suppresses his mana, making it difficult for him to even do the most basic travelling. He doesn't have the spare energy to sense his surroundings. Hearing Xiao Budian's words he controlled the impulse to turn his head to look behind and silently threw a sidelong glance at Zhu Yi.

Zhu Yi also didn't act rashly and instead silently spread out his mana to investigate.

After a moment, Zhu Yi nodded his head virtually unnoticeably: “There are indeed some people. Their cultivation level is only qi disciple stage, it's not that monk from back then.”

Xiao Budian big, black eyes turned: “When we left Chuzhou City, a group of people walked head-on past us. Amongst them was an old man. For some reason he was staring at me the whole time. Could they be together with him?”

After being silent for a moment, Xiao Yan said flatly: “Find a

place in front and deal with them.”

Chapter 69: Master Isn't Home: Secret Teachings Of The School

After knowing that they were being followed, Xiao Yan was silent for a moment and then said flatly: "Find a place in front and deal with them."

Right now he is carrying the black greatsword and his movement speed is as slow as a crawling turtle. If they allow the stalkers to reveal their location, their main group can catch up to them very quickly.

Xiao Budian and Zhu Yi looked at each other and both slightly nodded their heads. They are also decisive people, they will not tolerate ill-intentioned people to just follow behind them like that.

After reaching a tacit understanding, the three apprentice-brothers stopped communicating and didn't purposely increase their speed. But they gradually strayed from their original path and turned into a forest beside the road without changing their composure.

At this time, the two Yu clan cultivators following behind them revealed their figures and hurriedly chased into the forest.

Xiao Yan is carrying the black greatsword making his body extremely heavy. Walking on the ground, he really does leave a footprint with every step, so these two Yu clan cultivators aren't afraid of losing them either.

The tall cultivator amongst the two grumbled while walking: “Why does Young Master Tian have to have us follow these three little brats? It’s a complete waste of time.”

The short cultivator “shushed” him and said in a low voice: “Whatever Young Master Tian says, whatever we do. Don’t talk so much crap.”

He was in the middle of speaking when the footprints in front suddenly vanished. The reactions of these two cultivations was also quick, they immediately knew that something was wrong. They’ve very likely already been exposed.

Not waiting for them to react any further, a ringing sound suddenly travelled over from the thick foliage above them. The two people subconsciously raised their heads. The sound of wind travelled into their ears and a massive greatsword had already filled their vision.

Xiao Yan held onto the black greatsword and descended from the sky. His two hands holding onto the sword handle and chopping down with amazing power.

But the black metal greatsword is honestly too heavy, Xiao Yan is unable to nimbly wield it either. With this chop, the strength is truly amazing, but the faces of the two Yu clan cultivators both showed a smile of disdain.

The two people lightly jumped backwards together and had

already escaped from the attack range of the black metal greatsword. The greatsword is too heavy, Xiao Yan is unable to change directions and can only watch the two people evade the sword blade.

But Xiao Yan does not care and even has the leisure to smile at those two Yu clan cultivators.

The two people were rather baffled by his smile. But the next instant, their scalps suddenly went numb and their hairs stood on end, as if there was some disaster that was about to descend upon them.

Xiao Budian carried the white bone mace that was like a hammer and silently appeared behind the short cultivator. He used a polished technique that could not be more polished and hammered the back of the short cultivator's head.

The short cultivator let out a cry and felt like there were golden stars spinning in front of his eyes. He turned his body with great effort, forcing himself to focus his mind and not faint.

But just turning around, he still hadn't seen anything yet and a white shadow flashed in front of him. Another hit hammered down hitting him square in the forehead.

The short cultivator's eyes rolled back and he no longer had the strength to struggle. He fell straight back and directly fainted.

This two hit combo of Xiao Budian's had truly grasped the essence of quick, accurate and ruthless. He has already trained it to the point of perfection. Even if Lin Feng was here he would have to sigh with emotion, this kid truly has talent in the promising career of knocking people out from behind.

At the side, Zhu Yi and the tall cultivator who were still fighting also slowed down, their eyes simultaneously looked over at Xiao Budian's side.

It was honestly that Xiao Budian this moe to the extreme, cute little shota, knocking people out from behind so savagely and skillfully honestly looks so wrong.

But this kid still didn't have any realization and was instead very complacent. He smiled towards Zhu Yi and said: "Second Apprentice-Brother, this is our school's secret technique, specially used to capture the enemy alive. When master taught it, you still hadn't entered into the school so you didn't have the chance to learn it."

"Wait a bit, in a little while I'll demonstrate it to you again. Once you learn it you won't need to have so much trouble next time."

Zhu Yi's composure that he built up from a decade of studying finally broke. The corner of his lips twitched as he shook his head: "This... I'll pass on it." Looking at this little guy in front who currently has the highest cultivation level amongst them three apprentice-brothers, but is willingly taking the position of the youngest apprentice-brother, Zhu Yi actually felt slight chills on his back.

That tall cultivator in particular was staring in shock at Xiao Budian.

Is this still a kid that isn't even five years old yet?

If he is, why does he have such a high cultivation level?

Most importantly, why is he so shameless!

What secret technique that is specially used to capture the enemy alive?

Please, that is a sneak attack!

The short cultivator has already fainted. If he wakes up and finds out the truth, he'll definitely also be like the tall cultivator right now, hundreds of millions of ancient tyrannosauruses running past in his heart.

Xiao Yan held onto the black greatsword in distress and said to Zhu Yi: "Second Apprentice-Brother, don't listen to his crap. Master was joking with him and this kid treated it as real... Or I should say, he knows that Master is joking but this move is just this kid's cup of tea, so right now he is parading around under Master's name.

At the side Xiao Budian was smiling very happily while Zhu Yi

was shaking his head and smiling helplessly.

“For the moment, I can’t use this thing when fighting.” Xiao Yan sighed releasing his hand, throwing down the black greatsword and kicking up the dirt on the ground.

The next instant, Xiao Yan’s figure flickered and he had already disappeared on the spot: “Attack together, let’s end this fast.”

The tall cultivator blanked and then saw Xiao Yan suddenly appear in front of him. His cultivation level that was suppressed by the black greatsword before all exploded out, his fist punching towards the tall cultivator’s face.

Dodging Xiao Yan’s fist in a fluster, the tall cultivator felt a chill on his neck. A sword had already been placed at his neck. The sword was held in Zhu Yi’s hand. The green-clothed scholar had one hand behind his back in an indifferent manner: “It’s best if you don’t move. We already have a live one, whether we leave you alive or not depends on your own performance.”

Speaking of live ones, Zhu Yu’s eyebrows twitched again while looking at the short cultivator who was still unconscious on the ground, and he glared snappily at Xiao Budian.

Xiao Budian walked over with a grin and asked with a smile: “All right, speak, why are you following us?”

The tall cultivator wanted to open his mouth and talk bullshit,

but upon coming in contact with those glittering eyes of Xiao Budian's and then seeing Xiao Budian play with the white bone mace in his hand, he instantly felt a chill on the back of his head and he could only force himself to say: "I am a cultivator of the Yu clan. If you guys are smart it's best if you guys let us go or else you guys will suffer big time."

The smile on Xiao Budian's face gradually faded. He didn't speak either, he just silently stared at that tall cultivator.

This person never thought that he would be scared by the stare of a four or five year old child.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi exchanged gazes. Zhu Yi said softly: "The maternal family of that Shi Tianyi?" Xiao Yan nodded his head with a dark expression.

Zhu Yi turned back and stared at that tall cultivator: "Agent of evil, just eradicate him."

The tall cultivator's heart froze, and then staring at Xiao Budian's expressionless little face, all of his courage instantly dissipated.

But he is also just following orders, he doesn't know why he is following Xiao Budian.

But Xiao Budian and co. understood very quickly. After knocking out that tall cultivator, Xiao Yan said in a heavy voice: 'Could they

have recognized Youngest Apprentice-Brother?”

Zhu Yi nodded his head: “The probability is very likely. Maybe they are still unable to confirm it which is why they only sent two people to tail us, but it is certain that they are already suspicious.”

Xiao Budian lowered his head: “I dragged you guys down.”

Xiao Yan waved his hand and said unconcerned: “What are you saying. We are apprentice-brothers, there’s no dragged down shmagged down.” He looked at the black metal greatsword on the ground and scratched his head slightly distressed: “If you want to talk about dragging down, it’s me dragging you guys down instead.”

“What way is there to move with this thing and also increase our speed without leaving any traces?” Xiao Yan pulled a long face: “Everything that we have has been sunk into this thing. Throwing it away is too much of a shame.”

Hearing this, Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian also had distraught faces.

Chapter 70: Master Isn't Home: No Place To Run

On the stream of water in the mountain, a bamboo raft floated down the water.

On the raft sat a green-clothed scholar and a child only four or five years old.

Sitting on the raft, besides controlling the direction of advance of the raft, the two people not only didn't paddle to accelerate, they instead controlled the raft to not drift too quickly with the stream.

A couple of bubbles suddenly appeared in the water beside the raft. Afterwards a completely soaked black-clothed youth rushed out of the water, nimbly landing on the raft and greedily breathing in the fresh air.

“If only we had Master's Black Cloud Flag, we wouldn't need to waster so much effort.” The black-clothed youth is naturally Xiao Yan. The mana in his body circulated and hot air steamed from his body, instantly drying his clothes.

Zhu Yi said: “Saying that stuff now is all useless. This method may still be very slow, but at least we won't reveal our position.”

Xiao Budian jumped up from the raft and smiled saying: “My turn.” He plunged into the water and dived to the bottom. Xiao Yan's black metal greatsword was sunk in the sand under the

water, dragging out a straight vertical line underwater from where it came.

Xiao Budian grabbed the black metal greatsword. The heaviness is secondary, the crucial part is that his mana has become stagnant. He thought: “This thing of Eldest Apprentice-Brother’s is truly strange. Even though it is a burden, it is indeed a shame to throw it away. We’ll just take it back and let Master see it.”

Afterwards Xiao Budian drooped the tip of the black metal greatsword on the floor, dragging it on the sand and lifting his head looking at the raft above to determine his direction.

On the bamboo raft, Xiao Yan laughed helplessly: “Could I be considered wanting money over my life?”

Zhu Yi smiled faintly: “A saying that Master frequently says is ‘There are always more solutions than problems’. It may be shallow, but it holds a strong element of truth.”

The three people spaced out in the mountain for half a day and finally thought of this solution that isn’t a solution, using the water route to hide their tracks. But the black metal greatsword is too heavy and the small bamboo raft is simply unable to transport it. So they can only take turns dragging it in the water.

A couple of kilometers behind the three people, a group of people were pursuing them down the stream.

The leader is a young man. It is precisely the member of the main branch of the Yu clan, Yu Tian. His appearance is relatively handsome but his expression right now is incredibly dark: “This kind of stream in the mountains has countless branches. Chasing like this, it’s very easy for us to go the wrong way.”

He turned around and walked to the very back of the group. There is a black-clothed elder with a plain face, resting with his eyes closed and sitting on a chair, being carried by a couple of Yu clan servants using rods.

Yu Tian greeted him respectfully: “Elder Yue, please use your skill once. This is very important to the clan.”

The black-clothed elder named Elder Yue didn’t even move his eyelids and said coolly: “I am only responsible for protecting your safety, anything else is not my problem.”

Yu Tian slightly knit his forehead, but he did not dare to persuade him again. He could only back off to the side and think: “Why did the clan send this old monster over, what bad luck.” He doesn’t dare to actually say this and instead glanced at Elder Yue with an expression of fear. Afterwards he hurriedly lowered his head and turned around leaving.

The black-clothed elder’s body didn’t reveal any hint of man, but just sitting there resting with his eyes closed, he was like an immovable mountain. (岳, yue, mountain.)

The raft turned around a river bend and their vision opened up. Zhu Yi stood at the front of the raft looking into the distance: “Next we have to return back on land or else we will stray further and further.”

Xiao Yan nodded his head and used his mana to transmit his voice to Xiao Budian. Afterwards he jumped onto shore with Zhu Yi.

Xiao Budian also dragged the black metal greatsword and walked out from the water. He gave the black metal greatsword back to Xiao Yan while he himself recovered his mana while walking.

Zhu Yi asked: “Right now there are pursuers behind us. Do we still go back to Mount Heng to wait or should we go directly to Master?”

Xiao Yan pondered. Before he could answer, an old voice suddenly rose up “Young Master Yi has actually already taken someone else as his master? This really isn’t good, the Marquis once said that before Young Master Yi completes his studies, you cannot practise martial arts and cultivation.”

The expressions of Zhu Yi and his apprentice-brothers all changed. Zhu Yi’s eyebrows shook and he said calmly: “Mister Tao Er.”

The person who came is a skinny and shriveled old man. It is precisely the second steward of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, Mister Tao Er.

Following the appearance of Mister Tao Er, more and more cultivators of the house of the Marquis walked out from the mountain.

Tao Er closely sized up Zhu Yi, revealing an expression praise: “In not half a year’s time you reached qi disciple level 6. Young Master Yi is very gifted, the Marquis’ blood truly flows in you.”

“But you disobeyed the Marquis’ instructions, this is very bad.”

Zhu Yi took a deep breath and said with a heavy voice: “The profundity of Father’s cultivation level is his own skill. My cultivation level today originates from my own hard work and my master’s teachings.”

Tao Er shook his head: “Young Master Yi, you do not understand. The Marquis is just and harbors the future in his mind. His arrangements are absolutely correct, all you need to do is walk according to the path the Marquis has arranged for you.”

Hearing this, not only Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian also wrinkled their foreheads.

But Tao Er did not care and continued to say slowly: “The reason I came out this time is, one, to investigate the matter of Huang San’s disappearance, and two, to find Young Master Yi.”

Zhu Yi said calmly: “Huang San and the other died by the hand of

the Mt. Shu Sword Sect's aurous core stage cultivator, Liu Yang. I witnessed it myself."

"The Mt. Shu Sword Sect." Tao Er nodded his head and continued asking: "Then how did Young Master Yi you escape from danger, and what about those rebels of the Society of the Strong Gale?"

Zhu Yi answered saying: "The people of the Society of the Strong Gale escaped through a transportation formation. My Master saved me and afterwards I have been following Master and learning cultivation."

Tao Er nodded his head: "If that's so than we can only leave things like that for now. Young Master Yi, come home with me right now. You have been away from home for many days and the Marquis and the Lady all miss you very much."

Zhu Yi said calmly: "I want to follow Master to learn cultivation. When I have achieved success in the future I will naturally return."

Tao Er laughed: "Young Master Yi, you jest. You may not be the legitimate son of the Marquis and cannot learn the Marquis' cultivation path and skills, but the Marquis naturally will also arrange a suitable master for you. There is no need for you to find your own master."

"So, come back with me to Tianjing right now Young Master Yi." Tao Er said as a matter of factly: "If you are worried that Master of

yours will not let go of you, I will go speak to him for you. If he really is an enlightened master, he will naturally understand reason. How could he bear for his disciple and parents to be separated?”

Xiao Yan's and Xiao Budian's expressions both slightly changed, their bodies were just about to move but they were stopped by Zhu Yi. Zhu Yi lifted his eyes looking at Tao Er, he said calmly: “Master has saved my life and taught me. One day my master, always my master. I appreciate your kindness but I cannot accept it. Please return and report to Father that one day, I will definitely return to Tianjing, but it is not now.”

Tao Er stared straight at Zhu Yi and sighed saying: “Young Master Yi has always been the most filial, yet now you have been guided onto the path of evil by someone. It is clear that Master of yours must be a treacherous man. Young Master Yi, please tell me where he is right now? I will go exterminate this demon right now.”

“Such a demon should have his cultivation level destroyed, be immersed in feces and paraded through the streets to warn to world.”

Not only did Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian show expressions of anger, even Zhu Yi's face also darkened. But they heard Tao Er continue to say: “In addition, before coming out, the Marquis instructed me that if I find Young Master Yi, I must be sure to bring back Young Master Yi safely.”

“The Marquis' order must be completed.”

While speaking, the cultivators of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji behind him had already spread out, surrounding Zhu Yi and his apprentice-brothers in the center.

For a moment, the three people's hearts all sank to the bottom.

In the Netherworld Bead at the heart of the river, Wang Lin had still yet to awaken within the sphere of light. Lin Feng sat quietly above the light sphere, his mind was still seriously studying the Netherworld Nirvana Manual from the black stone pillar.

The True Netherworld Water in the distance suddenly started to crash and gurgle. Surging True Netherworld Water supported a human figure who was rapidly approaching.

The human figure is precisely Sikong Nan. He saw Lin Feng and instantly laughed out loud: "Kid, the humiliation that you gave to me before, right now I will return it to you 100 fold!"

Chapter 71: Head Supporting The Heavens, Feet Trampling The Netherworld

Sikong Nan waved his hands. Surging True Netherworld Water instantly roared towards Lin Feng, turning into a tidal wave and crashing down upon Lin Feng.

Right now Lin Feng has reached a critical moment in studying the Netherworld Nirvana Manual. Sikong Nan suddenly coming to interrupt made Lin Feng very irritated in his heart.

The 24 sariras floated above Lin Feng's head. Rolling buddhist light turned into a golden prosperous cloud, holding back the True Netherworld Water that fell from the sky.

The mana cultivated by buddhist dao techniques is the most heavy and condensed. Even the True Netherworld Water cannot get rid of it right away.

But the golden prosperous cloud is still rapidly eroding at a visible rate and will not last for much longer.

Sikong Nan laughed coldly while staring at Lin Feng: "Let me see how long you can last." While speaking, he constantly urged the True Netherworld Water to attack Lin Feng.

Lin Feng wrinkled his forehead and his mind communicated with the taotie cub in the ring, Tun Tun.

“I don’t want to!”

Tun Tun shrieked, her little head shaking like a rattle-drum. She shouted in exasperation: “You’re such a bad person. You actually want me to drink True Netherworld Water?”

Lin Feng laughed saying: “It’s okay if you refuse, but I need to make it clear to you first that besides this thing, there isn’t anything else for you to eat for some time. If you don’t want to than just go starve.”

Tun Tun was a bit hesitant. Seeing her expression, a thought appeared in Lin Feng’s heart: “You’ve drank True Netherworld Water before?”

“Yeah, the taste is so good.” Tun Tun hesitated for a moment and still said: “But after drinking it my head was all dizzy and I can’t remember a lot of things from the past.”

Lin Feng’s jaw dropped. The taotie is truly one of the four great ancient savage beasts, swallowing the heavens and devouring the earth. It isn’t even afraid of the domineering True Netherworld Water and just loses some memories. Its mana isn’t actually purified at all.

“What’s there to be afraid of. If it tastes good then everything’s okay, deliciousness is the most important thing.” Lin Feng tempted her incessantly.

The expression on Tun Tun's face become more and more struggled. She knows that Lin Feng does not have good intentions, but she cannot restrain her gluttonous nature. For a taotie, eating is a natural instinct on the same level as survival.

“Screw it, eat first think later. This past half a year was about to starve me to death!” Finally, the little loli yelled out in frustration. In her yelling, her body reverted back to her original taotie form.

Lin Feng tossed up the ring and removed the Heaven Cage Sigil within. A massive suction force instantly came from the ring, swallowing the True Netherworld Water like a black hole.

Taking advantage of the buddhist light and the ring blocking the river water, Lin Feng started to seize the time to study the Netherworld Nirvana Manual. While he was studying the dao technique, his mind was also attempting to communicate with the True Netherworld Water.

The same as the Art of Acala cultivating Fury Acala Flames, the ability cultivated by the Netherworld Nirvana Manual is True Netherworld Water.

Comparing the two and combining theory with practise, the many problems in Lin Feng's heart before all suddenly became clear.

In his mind, there seemed to be a river rushing by. The river water flowed unceasingly, like time, eternal and unstopping.

Lin Feng silently stared at his own reflection in the river. The reflection is not his fixed appearance and is instead constantly changing into a myriad of appearances.

A charming newly-wed girl, an old and dying elder, a meditating monk chanting scriptures, a dangerous bandit killing and robbing, a suave young man... One after another broken fragments, thousands of lives of reincarnation.

A light of understanding surfaced in Lin Feng's heart: "This is my last life, my last last life, my past lives of countless reincarnations..."

"Reincarnation through the Netherworld, death and rebirth. All life moves towards decay and oblivion here, and then new life!"

Daos of life, death, reincarnation and nirvana resounded in Lin Feng's mind. In the end they blended together as one and even connected together as a line with the mana in his body, like a Netherworld River quietly flowing in the Netherworld.

Lin Feng opened his eyes. Looking at the surging True Netherworld Water before him he smiled faintly.

Seeing his smile, Sikong Nan's heart trembled for no reason, as if he was about to be struck by disaster.

Lin Feng who was sitting down cross-legged suddenly stood up. He took back the ring Tun Tun is inhabiting and the golden

buddhist light above his head also rose up into the air. No longer blocking the True Netherworld Water and allowing the endless river water to fall on his body.

Sikong Nan's eyes popped. He discovered in shock that the True Netherworld Water poured straight on Lin Feng's body, but Lin Feng was completely unharmed. There wasn't even a single drop of that True Netherworld Water that touched his body, instead it landed meekly under Lin Feng's feet and supported him up.

The True Netherworld Water that purifies and wipes out everything in the world is right now just like a docile servant. Obediently bowing down under Lin Feng's feet and holding up Lin Feng like protecting a king.

Head supporting the heavens, feet trampling the Netherworld!

Sikong Nan stared blankly at this scene: "How can this be?"

Lin Feng laughed: "Why not?" He glanced at Sikong Nan and smiled saying: "Get down."

With his command, the True Netherworld Water holding up Sikong Nan's body suddenly dropped. Caught off guard, Sikong Nan's body that was hanging in the air directly fell into the surging Netherworld River.

Sikong Nan was alarmed. Sikong Nan who has already been completely refined by the Netherworld Bead, all of his mana has

merged with the True Netherworld Water. He can no longer use any of the dao techniques and skills that he knew before. If he is unable to control the True Netherworld Water, he'll essentially become a sheep at the mercy of the shepherd.

Unfortunately, right now no matter how he ordered it, the True Netherworld Water did not have any reaction.

Lin Feng was also not in a rush to attack. He only stared at Sikong Nan with a faint smile on his face. Right now Sikong Nan was as if he had a bucket of cold water dumped on him. He felt shivers from the top of his head to the soles of his feet, a deep despair surfaced in his heart.

He roared as if a trapped beast: "Even like so, you can't do anything about me either. I have already become one with the Netherworld Bead. Unless you destroy the Netherworld Bead, you can't kill me."

"With your cultivation level you simply cannot destroy the Netherworld Bead."

"Who said I want to destroy the Netherworld Bead? Rashly destroying such a treasure, isn't that a crime against nature?" Lin Feng chuckled and shook his head saying: "Not to mention, who told you that I can only kill you by destroying the Netherworld Bead?"

Sikong Nan blanked, an ominous feeling surfaced in his heart. The next instant, he suddenly felt that the True Netherworld

Water around his body became increasingly heavier, crushing the breath out of him. Right now, the originally pale yellow river water actually gradually turned black.

The black True Netherworld Water constantly penetrated Sikong Nan's soul. Sikong Nan felt a feeling of suffocation like he was drowning.

Lin Feng said slowly: "I bet you don't know, there is a spell derived from the Netherworld Nirvana Manual called Netherworld Puppeteer. It can use True Netherworld Water to turn people into puppets."

"This puppet is different from your Hunder Demon Night Parade technique. You turn people into wraiths and they only keep their mana and cultivation level before death. But their memories and intelligence are all erased, all that's left is resentment and murderous intent. But it is ultimately an inferior result."

Lin Feng laughed softly and said: "This Netherworld Puppeteer spell of mine turns people into puppets, but not only can they retain their memories before death, they will even still retain their own consciousness."

Retaining its memories in life means that the puppet not only possesses its mana and cultivation level before death, even its abilities and spells will also be retained. Moreover it will possess the cultivator's rich combat experience during its life.

Retaining its consciousness means that it possesses intelligence.

It can think and can react flexibly.

Sikong Nan's heart became colder and colder. Lin Feng looked at him and smiled saying: "Simply speaking, you'll be the same as before you were turned into a puppet, besides one thing."

"That is, you will unconditionally obey my every command."

Sikong Nan roared in despair. His originally pale yellow, nearly transparent soul had already been completely dyed black by the True Netherworld Water. Afterwards he was swallowed by the surging river water and sealed at the bottom of the river.

Only after repressing Sikong Nan did Lin Feng's mind relax. He slightly sensed something and he lowered his head looking at the light sphere beneath his feet.

Wang Lin's soul in the light sphere moved and he finally woke up. He opened his eyes with a dazed expression.

Chapter 72: First Main Quest, Complete!

In the light sphere, Wang Lin finally woke up. He turned his head looking around. He just so happened to see the scene of Sikong Nan's roaring in despair and getting swallowed by the True Netherworld Water.

Thinking of Sikong Nan wanting to kill him before with monstrous ferocity, Wang Lin was slightly startled. Afterwards he lifted his head and saw a young daoist in a wide-sleeved white robe wearing daoist clothes looking at him with a smile.

Above that white-robed young daoist's head, a golden cloud of buddhist light shone brightly and the Netherworld River below his feet flowed endlessly. His sagely appearance made Wang Lin feel incredibly small.

At this time Wang Lin started to gradually remember that the last scene he saw before he fainted was this white-robed daoist descending from the sky, pushing back Sikong Nan and saving him.

Now it looks like Sikong Nan has already been executed and he has been saved.

Wang Lin hurriedly said: "I was rude before and betrayed your kindness. Now I have also been rescued by you, I am truly ashamed."

Lin Feng thought: "Damn straight." But only the surface he only

smiled faintly: “As long as you are safe child. Such a small matter is nothing but the lift of a finger for me.”

Wang Lin paused for a moment, his face revealing an awkward and struggling expression. He wanted to say something but he is too embarrassed to open his mouth.

Lin Feng knew his thoughts. He smiled saying: “Are you willing to take me as your master now?”

Wang Lin’s mind was clear and he bowed down to the ground: “Before I did not know the immensity of heaven and earth and treated you without proper respect. Thank you for not abandoning me and saving my life. I am willing to follow under your teaching and be at your disposal. Please accept me!”

Lin Feng sighed towards the sky. In his heart he is actually more excited than Wang Lin: “Finally... Finally...”

At this moment, Lin Feng even had the impulse to cry. From the one year quest time limit there are actually only five days left. If things dragged on for another five days and he didn’t completely the quest, with this bullshit system’s bullshit nature, it definitely wouldn’t be polite with him.

It would definitely kill him on the spot.

System notifications sounded constantly beside his ear. It was like a divine melody, unprecedentedly beautiful.

“Congratulations to host taking in your fourth direct disciple Wang Lin.”

“Host has obtained reward of one lottery chance and 500 trading points.”

“Main quest special reward issued!”

Lin Feng really wants to first look at his quest reward, but Wang Lin is still eagerly staring at him. Lin Feng could only force back his excited heart and say with an indifferent face: “This Netherworld Bead is a surprising treasure. Put it away and be sure to study the profundities within.”

Wang Lin’s lips moved but did not make any sounds. Seeing this Lin Feng knew the thoughts in his mind. He smile saying: “This treasure may be good, but it is nothing to me. This is your own fortuitous opportunity, cherish it well.”

“You also have three apprentice-brothers, you’ll understand when you see them. It is true that I will teach you guys everything that I know, but how far you guys can walk on this path of cultivation still depends on your own hard work.”

Wang Lin thought, “That Sikong Nan was so fierce but Master could still easily exterminate him. Master also does not care about the treasure that I value with my life. Even though I don’t know what Master’s cultivation level is, it is definitely extremely high.”

“Me training with Master is ultimately better than being a servant over at that Mount Heng School.” Thinking here, Wang Lin’s heart was fervent: “Father, Mother, I will definitely work hard. I can definitely become an immortal.”

Right now Lin Feng was checking the data in the system related to Wang Lin.

Name: Wang Lin

Age: 15 years 6 months

Current Level: Qi Channeling, about to enter Qi Disciple Level 1

Potential Attributes: Bone Root → 5; Comprehension → 10; Will → 10; Luck → 8

Recommended Teaching Plan: “Recommended to practice water class dao techniques or dark sect dao techniques, in terms of abilities the recommended direction of development is a focus on spells.

Note: His bone root is relative poor so his initial cultivation difficulty will be greater, but he will seldom encounter bottlenecks when increasing his level. His cultivation progress is first slow then fast.

Right now Lin Feng has two water class dao techniques on his hand. One is the Blue Oceanic River Technique, one is the Netherworld Nirvana Manual. The latter is a lot stronger than the former and should originally belong to Wang Lin. With the assistance of the Netherworld Bead it can help Wang Lin quickly bridge the initial stage of difficulty.

After teaching Wang Lin the Netherworld Nirvana Manual, Wang Lin completely refined the Netherworld Bead this treasure. Right now inside of the Netherworld Bead, he is the absolute ruler, even Lin Feng can only simply protect himself.

But Wang Lin did not have any signs of smugness. He understands that this is entirely the arrangement made by Lin Feng to nurture him.

Wang Lin may look silent, but he is a very emotional person in his heart. Lin Feng saved his life today, accepted him as his disciple and gave him a great gift. This debt of gratitude will remain firmly in his heart.

Wang Lin refined the Netherworld Bead and then under Lin Feng's guidance, his soul left the Netherworld Bead and returned back to his body.

At this time Lin Feng's mind had also completely retracted from within the Netherworld Bead. Looking at Wang Lin he nodded his head in satisfaction.

This has been a fruitful trip. He took in Wang Lin this chosen one as his disciple and moreover cultivated the Netherworld Nirvana Manual this kind of top-tier dao technique, grasped the spell Netherworld Puppeteer and turned an evil spirit into his puppet.

It's just that the Netherworld Puppeteer may be good, but it also has its flaws.

Such as he can only refine the person under the state where their body is destroyed and only the soul remains.

Moreover, after practicing the Netherworld Puppeteer, the puppet is actually the same as a dead person. Their cultivation level before death is fixed and cannot be further increased.

In addition, under the circumstance where the difference between the caster and the target's cultivation level is too great, he also cannot refine it and could suffer backlash.

But what made Lin Feng the happiest is still the system reward after completing the quest. Besides taking in Wang Lin as his disciple and obtaining the standard lottery chance and 500 trading point, there is another special big prize obtained from completing the main quest.

The special big prize is directly a mystery chest with a question mark.

But Lin Feng noticed that there is still a difference between this chest and the mystery chest in his lottery system. The mystery chest in the lottery system that exists as the big prize is black, but this main quest reward chest in front of him is silver in color.

It looks a lot more high-grade.

Lin Feng opened the chest without any hesitation. After taking a glance his eyes became fixed, staring into the chest unable to pull

away.

“This... This thing... Oh my God!”

Only after a long while did Lin Feng recover his wits and gasp. He felt a bit like his brain couldn't keep up.

“Master, Master!”

Seeing that his Master seemed to be pondering about something, Wang Lin originally did not want to disturb him, but he was also afraid of delaying his Master's business.

Lin Feng returned to his senses and turned his head looking at Wang Lin: “What's wrong?”

Wang Lin held a glowing crystal in his hand: “This crystal has been flashing non-stop.”

Lin Feng focused his eyes. That is the voice transmission crystal, is there something happening with Xiao Budian and the other two?

Crushing the crystal, Zhu Yi voice traveled out from it: “Master, we've encountered people from the Yu clan. They might have recognized Junior Apprentice-Brother. We're doing our best to lose them. Eldest Apprentice-Brother was afraid of disturbing Master's closed-door training so he did not notify you. But I was afraid of an accident so I wanted to let Master know.”

Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath. He lifted his hand taking back the Black Cloud Flag enveloping the valley and then lightly shook it. With the flowing of the black light, it wrapped up him and Wang Lin.

“Let’s go!”

Chapter 73: Master Isn't Home: Surrounded By Enemies

Tao Er stood on the spot unmoving while the group of cultivators of the house of the Marquis behind him surrounded them.

Zhu Yi and his two apprentice-brothers stood side-by-side. Zhu Yi laughed a bit helplessly: “Looks like now it’s me who’s dragged you guys down first.”

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian both laughed without care.

Tao Er who was originally standing still on the spot suddenly lifted his eyelids. A strong light suddenly surged in his originally muddy old eyes: “A remnant of the Buddhist sect?”

Tao Er’s eyes were like lightning, looking towards the depths of the mountain.

In the mountain, a grey-clothed person wearing a straw hat on his head slowly walked out. Taking off the straw hat, he revealed a shiny bald head. Seeing this, Xiao Yan and co. were all dazed. The person is precisely the grey-clothed monk who stopped them in the city square of Chuzhou.

The three apprentice-brothers exchanged gazes and all felt ashamed in their hearts. No matter how foolish they are, they know now that this monk has probably been following behind them the entire time.

The grey-clothed monk brought his hands together: “I am Hui Kong of the Great Thunder Monastery, greetings Mister Tao Er.”

Tao Er started to laugh: “You were fully aware that I was here and you still dared to show yourself?”

The grey-clothed monk, Hui Kong, calmly said: “I want to chase back the sariras of my sect elders. Even if it is a mountain of swords and a sea of flames or infernal hell in front of me, I will still plough forward without fear.”

Tao Er retracted his smile and nodded his head: “If that’s so then enter early into the cycle of reincarnation and go follow your sect elders.”

Finishing speaking, he rose up his fists and the mana in his entire body surged. It actually manifested a might vajra apparition in the air, staring at Hui Kong with a fierce visage. A powerful mental pressure spread throughout the entire area.

Zhu Yi and the other two are not his target objectives, but facing Tao Er right now they all had a feeling like their bodies couldn’t move.

The domineering strength of this skinny old man before them was completely displayed in this one move. Infinite power exploded out from his skinny and small body.

Zhu Yi thought: “No wonder Huang San is so polite in front of him. He is not respecting the elderly, he is afraid, afraid of Tao Er’s strength that is above his!”

“Dragon Elephant Vajra Fist!”

Hui Kong’s eyes suddenly opened wide, anger appeared in his eyes for the first time.

Because this martial skill that Tao Er is using right now is precisely the Great Thunder Monastery’s secret Buddhist guardian skill that once shook the heavens.

Tao Er laughed leisurely: “That’s right, this is precisely Dragon Elephant Vajra Fist.”

“When the Marquis lead his army and exterminated the Great Thunder Monastery, he collected your dao techniques and skills as spoils of war and rewarded them to all of the soldiers who participated in the battle. This humble one only obtained the fist manual for this Dragon Elephant Vajra Fist. But after dozens of years of hard training I’ve finally obtained some mastery.”

“You seem to be very discontent? The monks of the Great Thunder Monastery befogged the minds of the people, endangering the country and were rightly exterminated. But your dao techniques and skills should not have been buried along with it. They should be learned and used by more suitable people.” Tao Er spoke with fervor and assurance: “The monks who practised the dao techniques and skills committed evil, but the dao techniques

and skills themselves do not have any fault.”

Hui Kong stared straight at Tao Er and then inhaled a deep breath: “Today I will exterminate you first, in the future I will definitely find Zhu Hongwu that evil dog to settle things!”

Finishing speaking, he brought his palms together. Boundless golden buddhist light illuminated the surrounding dozens of kilometers of forest.

In the golden light, a ferocious and dignified aura burst forth from within. The light figure of a garuda flashed faintly within. It spread open its two wings, bringing up a strong gale and blowing everybody off balance. Numerous ancient, towering trees were blown down by the strong wind.

“Garuda Blade!” Hui Kong chanted a buddhist prayer in a low voice. The garuda in the buddhist light shook its wings. Ten of thousands of blades of light shot towards Tao Er like a storm. It was like a heavy, golden rain had covered the entire mountain!

Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian exchanged gazes and whispered: “He’s even stronger than that big monk using the sariras from before.”

Xiao Budian nodded his head: “He’s the same as that old geezer of the Blaze Sword Sect, they’re both auras core stage cultivators!”

Facing the torrential golden light storm, Tao Er leisurely threw a punch at the light storm. He used the might of the vajra incarnate

repressing evil to face it head on. The indomitable punch of extreme strength was as if it wanted to shatter the space that Hui Kong occupied.

The light storm rained on Tao Er's body and constantly exploded. But Tao Er was as if he had become the incarnation of a vajra, crossing the sea of suffering and as steady as a mountain. Powering forward and punching towards Hui Kong.

In everyone's eyes, Hui Kong seemed to have become a demonic clown about to have his body obliterated by this punch and sent into the cycle of reincarnation.

Hui Kong's expression slightly paled, he knows that he is no match for Tao Er.

As an aurous core stage cultivator, this Tao Er has completely abandoned spells and instead trained his body and martial skills to the limits of his current cultivation level.

Spells and martial skills are all abilities. Martial skills are not as rich and varied as spells, but once cultivated to a certain degree, they also possess great power that can move the mountains and seas.

They are even more powerful in close-quarters combat.

Hui Kong inhaled a deep breath. The garuda apparition in the golden light fused as one with his body and then he turned into a

beam of light, fleeing hundreds of kilometers away in an instant and escaping Tao Er's attack range.

Tao Er sighed: "The Garuda Windsurfing Technique? Looks like I can't kill you today." Hui Kong left without any delay, he did not drag his feet at all. His Garuda Windsurfing Technique is the Great Thunder Monastery's strongest escape technique, travelling hundreds of kilometers in an instant. Tao Er's cultivation level may be higher than his, but he cannot catch up to him.

But like this, them three apprentice-brothers are now in trouble.

After driving away Hui Kong, Tao Er turned his head and smiled saying: "Okay then, take me to go find that demon who deluded you Young Master Yi. After killing him I can take you back to Tianjing to report to the Marquis."

Xiao Yan and co's expression slightly paled. If possible, they would immediately take Tao Er to go see their Master and then let their Master beat the crap out of Tao Er. But right now their Master is in closed-door training. If they bring Tao Er over and disturb their Master, that would be bad.

The three people had the same thoughts, they all bit their teeth not speaking.

Tao Er just wanted to say something when he suddenly furrowed his brows: "Why are there so many outsiders today?"

“Mister Tao Er’s words are not right. If you really want to say, this place is our Great Qin Dynasty’s territory. You all come from far away, you guys are the true guests.” A group of people walked out from the forest, the leader is precisely the member of the main branch of the Yu clan, Yu Tian.

Sensing the mana fluctuations from the confrontation between Hui Kong and Tao Er and having a target, the people of the Yu clan instantly rushed over.

Tao Er did not pay any heed to Yu Tian. His gaze fell upon the body of the plain faced Elder Yue being carried at the very back of the group: “Is it Daoist Master Shan Yue?”

At this time Elder Yue did not rest with his eyes close. He stood up staring at Tao Er and slightly nodded his head: “Mister Tao Er of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji? Greetings.”

Tao Er said: “I am unworthy.” Only now did he turn his gaze towards Yu Tian: “What is Young Master Yu here for?”

Yu Tian’s gaze fell upon Xiao Budian. He asked the elder beside him: “Are you certain it’s this little brat?” The elder nodded his head very certainly.

“I am here today from this little brat.” Yu Tian said: “What about you, Mister Tao Er?”

Tao Er looked at Zhu Yi and said directly: “I am here to find our

family's Young Master Yi. I don't need anyone else, you can take them all away. But I need to first find out the whereabouts of their Master and go get rid of that person."

Yu Tian stared at Xiao Budian, a trace of cruelty flashed by in his eyes: "Oh, you even found a master? Then there is indeed a need to get rid of him. Does Mister Two know where that person is?"

Tao Er shook his head. This time he placed his sights on Xiao Yan who hasn't been focused on much this whole time: "Naturally it is difficult for me to force Young Master Yi. That kid is yours so I won't care about him either."

"This black-clothed kid doesn't have any use. I'll pry open his mouth and get the answers from him."

Chapter 74: Master Isn't Home: Won't Submit!

Tao Er looked at Xiao Yan and said indifferently: “This black-clothed kid is of no use. Let’s pry open his mouth and get the answer from him.”

Hearing this, Yu Tian also looked towards Xiao Yan and started to laugh sinisterly: “Pretty good, just what I was thinking.” While speaking he waved his hand and a couple of Yu clan cultivators circled over wanting to capture Xiao Yan.

Xiao Yan stared coldly at this scene. At this time he suddenly opened his mouth asking: “I say, have you guys planned things out a bit too optimistically?” His hands let go of the black metal greatsword and the greatsword crashed on the ground kicking up dirt.

His two hands extended outward and mana gathered in his palms, condensing into two clusters of corporeal flames. The flames burned brightly and started to constantly compress. Compressing and compressing until they turned into two dark-red spheres of light.

Seeing these spheres of light, Tao Er’s and Yu Tian’s expressions both slightly changed: “Red Lotus Burst, the Void Temple?”

Xiao Yan’s expression was ice-cold. His two hands push forward and the two spheres of light flew towards the the Yu clan cultivators who pounced over.

“Boom! Boom!”

The two massive clumps of fire instantly exploded open. The two Yu clan cultivators didn't even have the time to react and their bodies were already blown into mists of blood!

The roaring flames instantly swallowed the flesh and blood, directly turning them into ashes. Not even crumb was left.

Two massive pits were blown open on the ground. Jagged cracks spread out like spiderwebs and the entire cliff was about to be torn apart.

Everyone else stared dumbstruck at this disastrous scene. They may all be mass murderers with their hands stained in blood, but seeing their companions being blown to smithereens by Xiao Yan's Red Lotus Burst, everybody felt chills run through their entire body.

Tao Er's eyes flashed: “Take them down, I want them alive. Find out their background.”

Along with Xiao Yan's attack, Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian also rushed forward together. Under the cover of the firelight from Red Lotus Burst, they instantly charged into the enemy line.

Crackling lightning poured out from their bodies. For a moment lightning flashed, dying everybody's vision blue and purple.

The next moment, two massive lightning blades roared into existence, crossing together and forming a cross. Arcing through the air like a mowing sickle.

Wild Lightning Blade!

Xiao Budian and Zhu Yi who both practise the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique together used the Wild Lightning Blade that Lin Feng taught them. The violent lightning blade cut all obstacles in front of it directly into pieces, wildly reaping human lives.

“Capture the ringleader first in order to capture all his followers.” Zhu Yi shouted in a low voice. He unsheathed the sword at his waist, Xiao Yan and Xiao Budian also did the same action.

The sword technique of the Wayward Flying Sword and the escape technique of the Cloud Dragon Escape were fully displayed by the three apprentice-brothers. They turned into three arcs of light and shot towards the sky.

Bully the weak, them three brothers aren't so stupid as to go fight Tao Er who is considered a strong person even in the aurous core stage.

Yu Tian also didn't think that these three kids all look like they're just qi disciple stage, but they are actually so fierce. They're mana is vigorous and their skills are astonishing. For a moment they were actually completely wrecking havoc amongst

his men.

Seeing them all charge towards him, Yu Tian laughed in anger: “Perfect.” His hands formed a spell sign and a crystal bottle flew out from his sleeve. At first it was only the size of a thumb, but it grew in the air and instantly turned into a dozen meters tall, the diameter of the bottleneck was a whole ten feet.

A massive force of suction came from the mouth of the crystal bottle, wanting to directly suck in Xiao Yan and co..

Xiao Yan yelled: “Duo!” and also brought out the Buddhist Thunder Staff. For a moment, buddhist light exploded and directly withstood the suction of the crystal bottle.

But with this delay, Xiao Yan and co’s assault was also dissolved. Yu Tian sneered, the lineal dao technique of the Yu clan, the Art of the Water God started circulating. A mana aura as vast as the ocean instantly weighed down on Xiao Yan and co. making it hard for them to breath.

Seeing this, Tao Er praised him saying: “Young Master Yu is truly a child of the Yu main branch and a main target of nurture. Already establishing your dao root at such a young age.”

Yu Tian’s cultivation level is far superior to Xiao Budian’s and the other two’s. Even with three against one, he is still at ease. The endless cold air had virtually turned into a cover, enveloping the three people. In the area of the cold air, Xiao Yan and co. all sensed that not only had their mana circulation become sluggish, even

their bodies were about to become frozen.

Xiao Yan bit his teeth: “Screw it.” He threw away the sword in his hand not using it and suddenly lowered his body, picking up that heavy, burdensome black metal greatsword.

“If you and me really are fated today, then help me get over the hurdle in front.” Xiao Yan clenched his teeth, his mind completely assimilated into the black metal greatsword.

“Rumble!”

After just entering, Xiao Yan instantly knew that he’d poked the hornet’s’ nest.

Like an unparalleled tyrant who had been in deep slumber being suddenly awoken and releasing the most terrifying roar!

In Xiao Yan’s mind, there was only fire, purple fire, boundless and endless fire! The fire that was like a mighty ocean dyed the entire space in a terrifying, sinister purple!

“Hm!” Tao Er suddenly opened his eyes wide. Elder Yue who originally had a half-dead look also also had a more serious expression.

In the dense fog of cold air, Xiao Yan’s pained and frenzied howl travelled out from within. The next moment, a dark purple greatsword nearly 10 meters long and as wide as a door rose up into

the air and pierced through the cold mist!

Xiao Yan released a furious roar, his hands holding onto a greatsword of fire and lifting it high above his head, pointing straight at the heavens. He had an imposing manner as fierce as a god of fire descending upon the human world and cleansing all evil. All enemies will be burned to nothingness.

Yu Tian was dumbstruck. He watched as Xiao Yan ripped apart the cold mist with his sword and chopped towards him!

Soaring flames arced through the air, virtually tearing apart the air and leaving behind a dark purple trail in the air that lingered on.

This attack kills all enemies below the aurous core stage!

At this time Elder Yue could not longer sit by idly and he released a cold snort.

Light flickered in front of Yu Tian and a divine blackstone mountain suddenly surfaced. It was ancient, heavy, majestic and indestructible.

Xiao Yan's cultivation level is far inferior to his and the fire greatsword was blocked the the divine blackstone mountain. Even though it struck the divine blackstone mountain and caused it to constantly shake, it was unable to break through Elder Yue's defense spell.

The fire greatsword exploded with a bang. The flames that burst out turned into a flurry of scattered flames, hitting the surrounding qi disciple and foundation establishment cultivators and causing them to flee in a panic.

Elder Yue exhaled a long breath: “Not bad boy!” But he did not show any mercy. He formed a spell sign and the divine blackstone mountain flew up into the air and pressed down towards Xiao Yan.

Xiao Yan looked at this scene unresigned, but he no longer had the strength to attack again. The black metal greatsword fell heavily to the ground. All of his mana was exhausted and he couldn't even move a pinky finger.

“This sword of yours, give it to me too.” He heard Elder Yue's voice beside his ears. Xiao Yan wanted to resist, but the divine blackstone mountain directly pressed him down on the ground, the black metal greatsword was also already snatched off the ground.

Elder Yue swung around the black metal greatsword: “It is indeed extraordinary, but you are unworthy of it.” While speaking, he increased his mana and the divine blackstone mountain shrank to the size of a millstone, but its weight increased instead, crushing Xiao Yan making him lie on the ground unable to move.

“Speak, where is that Master of yours?”

Xiao Yan lay on the ground, he clenched his teeth not speaking.

His entire skeleton were creaking and all of the bones in his body were about to be crushed by Elder Yue's spell!

Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian exclaimed: "Eldest Apprentice-Brother!"

"Quiet!" Xiao Yan roared in a low voice. Blood faintly exuded from his face. He strained himself and turned his head looking towards Elder Yue: "Take it easy old geezer. One day my master will find you guys to settle things and cut down your dog heads!"

Tao Er at the side walked over, his face was expressionless: "There won't be that day. The result will only be me killing him. Unfortunately you are destined to be unable to see that wonderful scene."

Only at this time did Yu Tian who was still in shock collect his wits. He stared at Xiao Yan with a dark expression. He never imagined that he would almost be killed by a qi disciple level 9 kid. Right now he is a bit furious from embarrassment: "Elder Yue, break all of the bones in this little bastard's body."

He stared at Xiao Yan and said with a cruel smile: "You are very loyal to your master, but is there any use? What need is there for a master who can't even protect his own disciple. He's nothing but a worthless wretch."

Xiao Yan growled: "Bullshit!"

Elder Yue constantly increased his power. Xiao Yan's body was

already releasing the sound of bones breaking, putting him in a cold sweat from the pain. Elder Yue said coldly: “I’ll give you another chance. Tell me where your master is and I’ll end your suffering.”

“In, your, dreams!” Xiao Yan said one word at a time, using all of the strength in his body.

Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian wanted to charge over, but they were respectively surrounded by the cultivators of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji and the Yu clan. They are hopelessly outnumbered and are also about to be captured.

Tao Er looked at Zhu Yi and said slowly: “Young Master Yi, do you see? Maybe that demon is right around here, watching his own disciple suffer but not daring to come out to save him. You tell me, what use is there is having such a waste as your master?”

With a quiet and pale face, Zhu Yi did not say anything.

Yu Tian on the other hand, walked over beside Xiao Yan and kicked Xiao Yan’s back. He laughed saying: “You are wrong Mister Tao Er. Looking at this black-clothed kid, you know that a piece of trash taking a piece of trash as his master is just perfect.”

Xiao Yan’s eyes were bloodshot: “Don’t call me trash!” The feeling of powerlessness today made him think of those dark three years of time again.

Yu Tian laughed saying: “I called you that, what can you do about it?”

“Not much, you just need to leave your life behind.”

A cold and indifferent voice suddenly sounded in the air.

Yu Tian’s smile froze on his face. Everybody’s expression slightly changed.

Tao Er and Old Geezer Yue turned their gazes towards the distance. There, two people appeared.

One of them is a thin and small youth, closely following behind another person.

That is a young daoist in a wide-sleeved robe wearing daoist clothes, staring at them without any expression on his face.

Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian called out simultaneously: “Master!”

On the ground, Xiao Yan had already fallen into a semi-unconscious state. After seeing who came, his eyes beamed with a weak radiance and he started to laugh.

Lin Feng looked at the black-clothed youth whose face was covered in blood. After being silent for a moment, he nodded his head not saying anything, but Xiao Yan understood his meaning.

Turning around and facing Yu Tian and co., Lin Feng only said one line.

“Come die!”

Chapter 75: Beat Everyone Down!

“Come die.”

Lin Feng opened his mouth saying. His voice was calm and indifferent.

Not mentioning Yu Tian turning red in the face, even Tao Er and Elder Yue wrinkled their foreheads.

They cannot see through Lin Feng’s cultivation level, but having their noses pointed at and being cursed by Lin Feng, they both boiled with anger.

Elder Yue snorted coldly: Petty tricks, let me see what you’ve got.”

Finishing speaking, he waved his right hand and the divine blackstone mountain crushing Xiao Yan flew up into the air. It turned into a massive mountain that blocked out the sky and pressed down towards Lin Feng.

The light in the sky above Lin Feng’s head instantly darkened.

“You are not worthy to fight with me.” Lin Feng didn’t even look at the mountain above his head. He said coldly: “Let me find you an opponent on the same level.”

Before his voice had died away, a tall black figure suddenly appeared in front of Lin Feng.

Elder Yue was dazed for a moment before seeing that the black figure looks to have a human form, but its entire body is covered by heavy armor. In the slits of the armor, red light flashed faintly.

A terrifying aura of frenzied brutality swept the entire area. The violent mana fluctuation like a natural disaster made Elder Yue's and Tao Er's faces change colour.

Elder Yue blurted out: "What is that thing?"

Lin Feng didn't pay him any attention, he only lightly said to the armored giant: "Kill this old bastard."

The position of the two eyes on the giant's helmet visor was originally pitchblack. At this time two red dots of light suddenly lit up and it released a loud roar.

"Roar!!!"

A deafening roar as if it came from an ancient, prehistoric time resounded in the entire mountain, as if a slumbering giant suddenly woke up at this moment.

In the roaring sound is a ruthlessness and tyranny that makes people's hearts pound. It was like it was filled with an endless desire for destruction and slaughter. The source of the roar

represents the most terrifying calamity in the world.

Destroy, slaughter, rage, ruin!

The most violent and domineering beast in the world escaped from the cage imprisoning it and reappeared in the world!

Not waiting for anybody to react, the armored giant's feet stepped on the ground. Violent power caused the mountain to be torn asunder and the dirt to fly in the air.

Using the power of the reverberation, the armored giant's body flickered and had already vanished from the spot. The next time it appeared again in everyone's sights, it was already beneath the divine blackstone mountain. And right now the divine blackstone mountain has just floated to above Lin Feng's head and has yet to come down upon him.

Elder Yue's heart tightened. He saw that armored giant raise its fists upward, striking a pose of Atlas carrying the world and smashing the bottom of the divine blackstone mountain.

The armored giant was as if it wanted to fell the pillar supporting the heavens in one punch and shatter the earth!

Right now the divine blackstone mountain is nearly 100 meters tall with a radius of hundreds of meters. The armored giant's body may be of heavy stature, but its height is only 2-3 meters. The size of the two parties is completely disproportional.

But in the violent crashing noise, it was the massive divine blackstone mountain that was directly smashed away!

The incredibly massive mountain was directly smashed away with one punch!

The crowd of people were all dumbfounded. His soul-bound magic item that is attached to his life being damaged, Elder Yu in particular coughed out a mouthful of blood.

Everybody stared in terror at the armored giant in the air.

War God Golem!

This is the system reward Lin Feng obtained after completing the main quest.

As long as there is enough energy provided for consumption, this War God Golem that is not afraid of death can explode with absolutely terrifying combat strength.

Originally with Lin Feng's current cultivation level, he is entirely unable to control it, but he just so happens to have a nice material on his hands.

Before this, he threw Sikong Nan's soul that he had controlled using Netherworld Puppeteer into the War God Golem. Even

though Sikong Nan's cultivation level has dropped due to heavy injury, his strength in the past was extremely powerful. Even nascent soul stage cultivators are looked down upon by him, so the quality of his soul is very high.

And right now, Lin Feng is using the means of sacrificing him and forcing Sikong Nan to burn his soul to provide power for the War God Golem.

No matter how he struggles, Sikong Nan who has already fallen under Lin Feng's control can only obediently sacrifice his soul. The anger and depression in his heart intensified the War God Golem's ferocity and bloodlust even more.

After smashing away the divine blackstone mountain, the War God Golem landed on the ground from the air and smashed a deep pit in the ground. Countless pieces of broken stone rolled down virtually burying it alive, but the next instant the pile of broken stones exploded and countless stones shot in all directions.

A massive black shadow charged up from the stone pile and pounced straight at Old Geezer Yue!

Old Geezer Yue's was blue in the face. He called back the divine blackstone mountain to block in front of him. Right now the massive mountain has shrunk down to the size of only a human fist, the mana is condensed to the extreme and the defense has also been elevated to the extreme.

Old Geezer Yue spit out a mouthful of vital blood onto the divine

mountain. The divine mountain flared with an amazing brilliance, black light flowed and condensed into a hand-held shield. On the face of the shield is relief of a Mighty Miracle God, emitting a powerful, indestructible aura.

Divine Mighty Miracle Shield, the strongest defense!

But, it's useless!

The War God Golem destroyed the Mighty Miracle Shield with one punch, smashing the divine blackstone mountain away again. This time it directly turned into a small dot and flew towards the horizon, no longer able to be seen again.

Elder Yue was dumbstruck. The War God Golem had already charged to his front and sent him flying with a slap.

The old geezer coughed out mouthfuls of blood and was flung into the air. The bones on one side of his body crackled, breaking out of shape in his body. He looks floppy and mushy.

It wasn't over yet. The War God Golem's body flickered and it had already caught up beside him.

Lin Feng sneered saying: "You wanted to crush all of the bones in my disciple's body just now?"

The War God Golem lifted its big feet and heavily stomped on Elder Yue's body. The old geezer released a blood-curdling scream.

With this, the bones in the other half of his body that were still relatively okay were also completely crushed. His entire body had turned entirely into a pool of sludge and he collapsed to the ground.

The cultivators of the Yu clan all had blank expressions. They were originally in the middle of capturing Xiao Budian. Seeing this scene, some guy reacted over first. He hurriedly retreated, afraid of himself becoming the War God Golem's target.

With one person taking the lead, the other people all reacted over. They all stepped backwards and a large empty space instantly appeared around Xiao Budian.

Yu Tian's eyeballs were already about to fall to the ground. Even in their Yu clan, an aurous core stage guest elder is still a core member. But he was actually kicked over on the ground by someone in one move.

What made him even more scared is that Lin Feng's gaze had already fallen upon him. He opened his mouth coldly: "Just now, you said my disciple is a piece of trash?"

Yu Tian's entire body trembled. He shrank backwards wanting to hide into the crowd. Before he was afraid that he didn't stand out enough, but now he is scared of Lin Feng seeing him.

Unfortunately, he is just deluding himself.

The War God Golem charged into the crowd like lightning, knocking everyone off their feet and then grabbing towards Yu Tian.

Yu Tian shouted angrily: “You’ve gone too far!” The crystal bottle flew out from his sleeve, growing in the air and turning a dozen meters tall. The 10 foot bottle mouth was aimed at the War God Golem, wanting to suck in the golem.

At the same time, the mana of the Art of the War God was circulated by Yu Tian to the extreme. A dense ice fog spread out wanting to freeze the enemy.

Unfortunately, it’s all useless!

The War God Golem completely ignored the besieging ice fog and directly smashed apart the crystal bottle with one punch. It then picked up Yu Tian like a little chick and dragged him out of the ice fog.

Yu Tian released a panicked yell: “What do you want to do?”

Lin Feng stared coldly at Yu Tian: “Just now, it was this leg that stepped on my disciple’s body?” While speaking, a thought arose in his mind and the War God Golem grabbed Yu Tian’s right leg.

“No! You dare...”

Not waiting for Yu Tian to finish speaking, the War God Golem

had already ripped his leg straight off from his body!

Yu Tian screamed. Not waiting for him to faint, in the sound of the War God Golem's bellowing, his entire body had already been completely ripped apart!

In the blood rain that rained down from the sky, the War God Golem that howled towards the sky was like a god of slaughter descended upon the world. Frenzied, savage and all-powerful!

At this time, Tao Er who was silent at the side the whole time suddenly took a step forward. His skinny body was as fast as lightning, charging towards Xiao Ya who was on the ground!

Lin Feng's expression turned cold: "You court death!" The War God Golem roared, throwing down Yu Tian who was like a broken bag and rushing out like lightning. It arrived first even though it moved later and had already blocked in front of Tao Er.

"Such speed." Tao Er's face was calm. He originally wanted to use Xiao Yan as a hostage, but now that he has been intercepted by the War God Golem, he simply changed his offensive, wanting to catch the War God Golem off guard.

The old geezer inhaled a deep breath, the skin on his body like withered tree bark started to roll violently.

The scenery in front of everybody's eyes blurred. They saw Tao Er's skinny and shrivelled body blow up like a balloon. His old and

wrinkled skin also became smooth and rich at this instant, flashing with a bright, rosy lustre.

In a moment, feeble old Tao Er was actually as if he'd become rejuvenated, turning into ten foot tall buff man in an instant!

The muscles under the surface of his body were like they were cast from iron, filled with an explosive strength. His plump, round face was solemn and dignified. His eyes stared at Lin Feng like the glare of a vajra.

Only now at this moment did Tao Er show his true strength. It is also only under this state that he can unleash the full power of Dragon Elephant Vajra Fist.

Tao Er breathed out loud and shouted: "Sky dragon and sky elephant, suppressing all demons!"

With this shout, Tao Er's mana vibrated strongly. He formed a 30 foot tall vajra apparition above his head, at the same time also manifesting a dragon and an elephant that simultaneously circled around the vajra apparition.

The dragon and elephant together released a long, deafening cry. The scales on the dragon's body shook, emitting the supreme authority of the dragon as the ruler of the nine heavens, repressing all life in the greater realm.

All of the muscles in the elephant's body stirred. Its four feet

trampled around wildly, virtually causing an earthquake.

With this dragon and elephant appearing together, Tao Er has used his ultimate move, the ace up his sleeves. The power of Dragon Elephant Vajra Fist's killing move, "Dragon Elephant Demon Vanquishing" has been exerted to the extreme, fiercely attacking towards the War God Golem.

But, it is still useless!

The War God Golem didn't even look at Tao Er's attack and it didn't block either. Its fists rose upwards, like the quaking of the earth, the lava that erupts from the volcano, the flooding rivers and lakes, the ancient dragon that rises up from being startled, all erupting together.

Just exerting force like this, it had already directly scattered Tao Er's dragon elephant apparition. The War God Golem's fists transitioned to open palms, its hands flipping over together and smashing down towards Tao Er head!

With this flip and press, Tao Er instantly felt like the world had flipped around. The entire space collapsed down and a conception of great destruction as if the entire universe was about to be destroyed completely enveloped him!

Awe-inspiring might like Heaven and earth had been overturned!

This is the thought in Tao Er's heart when he was facing this

move of the War God Golem's. This kind of awe-inspiring might virtually wore down all of his courage.

But he has after all cultivated for many years. One aurous core swallowed into the stomach, through the gates of life and death. With the strong will in his heart, he instantly returned to his senses.

With a fierce roar, his hands turned upward and with the position of supporting upwards, he withstood the War God Golem's palms that pressed downward!

"Boom!" When his two arms and the War God Golem's pressing down palms just came in contact, Tao Er instantly felt his entire skeleton wildly creaking, like it could burst apart at any moment!

Tao Er's vision blurred. All of the blood in his body was virtually about to explode everywhere from the agitation. His mind slacked and his knees became weak. He directly fell to the ground on one knee!

One knee heavily kneeled on the ground like a giant hammer smashing the ground. Like a meteor falling to the earth, the solid ground around him caved in forming a massive crater, The surrounding dust and dirt was stirred up like a sandstorm!

The War God Golem's attack directly beat a great aurous core stage cultivator onto his knee on the ground!

With this kneel, Tao Er's kneecap was completely crushed!

His leg was completely scrapped!

But if not for this kneel, if he stood straight and took the War God Golem's attack head on, all of the bones in Tao Er's body would have probably been crushed to pieces on the spot. Even his spine would be injured.

At this time, Tao Er who was always very composed finally became panicked. His eyes were bloodshot and he released a wild and desperate roar, all of his mana was circulated to the extreme. The vajra apparition formed again, wanting to shake off the War God Golem.

Lin Feng stared coldly at Tao Er not speaking, he only gave a command in his heart to Sikong Nan's soul that was injected into the War God Golem.

“Burn completely, explode with everything you've got.”

The red light in the War God Golem's eyes flashed wildly. It released a loud roar and its body suddenly straightened. The armor over its entire body opened up and dazzling red light shot out from all of the slits as if there was something exploding within.

The War God Golem's feet exerted force while standing still on the spot. The ground instant shook like there was an earthquake.

Its palms that had originally exhausted all of their energy instantly erupted again with a world crushing power, suddenly pressing down towards Tao Er!

Crack! Crack! Crack! Crack!

“Ahhhhhhhhhhh!!!” Wild screams, Tao Er’s entire skeleton became twisted,

Following after Old Geezer Yue, the second steward of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, auras core stage cultivator Tao Er also followed his footsteps. His entire skeleton was shattered by the War God Golem.

Everybody stared in terror at this scene before them, for a long time they could not speak a word.

In the sound of the War God Golem’s violent roar, Lin Feng’s voice was calm and cold, as if it came from the very depths of hell.

“Who else is there!”

Chapter 76: Nobody's Leaving!

“Who else is there?” Lin Feng calmly asked.

The cultivators of the Yu clan and the House of the Marquis of Xuanji all stared at the War God Golem in terror. They subconsciously shook their heads and stepped backwards, afraid of themselves becoming the next target.

Lin Feng slightly knit his brows. With a thought the War God Golem roared at the sky. Its roar harbored endless mana and formed invisible ripples that spread out everywhere, knocking its opponents down like bowling pins.

The sound waves spread to the distant skyline. The air in the sky shook, revealing Monk Hui Kong's shocked face.

Lin Feng laughed coldly saying: “Want to hide at the side to seize an opportunity?”

“Those who had their eyes on my disciples, don't think of leaving today.”

The War God Golem growled, its legs exerted force again and created a deep pit in the ground while its body shot straight like a cannon towards Hui Kong who was hiding in the air.

Hui Kong's face paled and he wanted to use the escape technique of the Garuda Windsurfing Technique to escape.

If he is allowed to use the escape technique, he will instantly skyrocket away and flee hundreds of kilometers away. Even the War God Golem can't catch up to him.

But the War God Golem's explosive power is too strong. Its short distance dashing speed is shockingly fast, virtually passing through over a thousand meters of space in a flash. It charged in front of Hui Kong like instantaneous teleportation.

And at this time, Hui Kong had yet to use his escape technique.

Too fast, the War God Golem's speed is honestly too fast. Hui Kong's escaped technique can be used with a single thought, but he still didn't have enough time!

Hui Kong shouted with open eyes: "Buddha is merciful."

If he can't dodge it than he won't . While buddhist light flashed, the garuda spread its wings releasing a deafening cry, setting off a powerful storm that seemed to want to tear asunder the sky.

With the spreading of the garuda's wings, countless blades of light shot towards the War God Golem.

Unfortunately, it's all useless!

The armor over the War God Golem's body was already dyed in a

red light. Its final bit of strength burst forth, forcing its way through the light storm attack. Its arms spread open and directly embraced Hui Kong whose eyes seemed to be about to pop from anger.

Being tightly constricted by the War God Golem's iron cast arms, Hui Kong was unable to move. He couldn't even circulate his mana and he was directly captured alive.

The three aurous core stage cultivators on scene today who wanted to do harm to Lin Feng and his disciples, two of them died and one of them was captured. Nobody escaped.

Lin Feng shook the Black Cloud Flag and put away the War God Golem and Hui Kong.

Taking back the Black Cloud Flag, Lin Feng did not say anything. He stood with his hands behind his back, looking at the sky in the other direction.

A wave of laughter travelled over from the sky: "Nice skills fellow daoist, you let me see a good show!"

The clouds spread apart, revealing Master Pubei's figure. Behind him was also following a couple of people. They are clearly the executive level of the Eternal Dao Sect.

Lin Feng said coolly: "You've watched enough fellow daoist, what do you have to say showing yourself now?"

Mount Heng has already become the Eternal Dao Sect's territory, the battle nearby naturally startled Master Pubei. He rushed over here a long time ago and silently observed at the side.

He didn't have any interest in Tao Er, all of his attention was on Lin Feng.

Unfortunately Lin Feng himself did not do anything, he just sent out a golem that destroyed everyone.

"That golem may be powerful, but it can only bluster around in front of auras core stage cultivators. It is nothing to me." Master Pubei thought: "But this daoist is truly a bit enigmatic. I have nothing against him and even owe him a small favor."

"This person is not to be made an enemy of."

The group of Eternal Dao Sect cultivators behind him all looked at Lin Feng with wary expressions. The two auras core stage cultivators among them felt unsettled in their hearts: "What a domineering golem. If I were to face it I would probably also suffer the fate of death. With such a golem, isn't the master even stronger?"

"How come I have never heard of such a person before?"

The couple of foundation establishment stage cultivators looked at Lin Feng and the War God Golem, they showed faint expressions

of fear.

Master Pubei still hadn't made up his mind on whether or not to make an enemy of Lin Feng. He restrained his arrogant behaviour a lot and smiled peacefully saying: "The chief culprit has already been exterminated by fellow daoist, allow me to take care of these remaining small fries. They are causing trouble on my Eternal Dao Sect's territory, I have unshirkable responsibility." (TL: Yes, I know it's contradictory.)

Lin Feng sneered in his heart. His words sound good and he appears to be helping Lin Feng, but isn't he actually just doing it for himself?

The Eternal Dao Sect is located at the southern border of the Great Qin Dynasty. In the first place they aren't afraid of the Great Zhou Dynasty's House of the Marquis of Xuanji. If the Marquis of Xuanji dares to come to the Qin Dynasty, there will naturally be bit shots of the Qin Dynasty coming forward.

As for the Yu clan, that's even less of a problem. For the Eternal Dao Sect, displeasing the Yu clan not only isn't a bad thing, they could instead even benefit from it.

The southern border is the sphere of influence of the Huo clan, one of the four great clans of the Great Qin Dynasty. The Huo clan has always been on bad terms with the Yu clan, their relationship is that of nearly mortal enemies.

If the Eternal Dao Sect hands over these members of the Yu clan,

it is instantly a great merit and they will obtain the regard of the big boss of the area. This is greatly advantageous to the Eternal Dao Sect's further development.

Master Pubei this old monster has some fine calculations.

But Lin Feng doesn't plan on stopping him and instead made use of the opportunity to agree. An extra person to help himself split the attention of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji and the Yu clan, what is there to be against?

Seeing Lin Feng agree, Master Pubei laughed out loud. He ordered the experts of the Eternal Dao Sect behind him: "Go capture them all."

Lin Feng arrived beside Xiao Yan and lifted up the feeble black-clothed youth.

Xiao Yan grinned: "Master, I saw it all, great fight!"

Lin Feng touched his bones. There were many places that were broken and Xiao Yan trembled in pain.

"Little Yan, you're good, very good." Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath: "No need to worry, Master will definitely heal you. It will not hold up the fight between you and Murong Yanran."

Xiao Yan grinned with pain: "You have to keep your word Master, or else when the time comes I won't only be shaming

myself, but also you Master.”

At this time Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian also walked over. The two people had heavy expressions and Xiao Budian’s eyes were even a little red: “Eldest Apprentice-Brother...”

Strictly speaking, the enemies who came forward today were here for him and Zhu Yi. This all had nothing to do with Xiao Yan, but in the end it was Xiao Yan who suffered.

Xiao Yan gave a crooked smile: “Since you guys call me Eldest Apprentice-Brother, I have to do my utter best to protect your guys.”

“Just like Master said, in regular families the older brother must protect his younger siblings, not to mention us?”

Xiao Yan turned his gaze to Lin Feng’s back, looking at Wang Lin who was a bit at a loss. He said with a smile: “Yo, you are Master’s newest disciple?”

Witnessing everything that happened before, Wang Lin was feeling an upsurge of emotions right now and he still hadn’t completely calmed down.

Lin Feng himself didn’t do anything. Just sending out a golem he beat the crap out of three great aurous core stage cultivators.

In front of Lin Feng, Master Pubei who moved a mountain to

destroy the protective formation and nearly single-handedly exterminated the Mount Heng School also didn't have his previous domineering arrogance.

Seeing Lin Feng go on a killing spree for his disciple and seeing Xiao Yan who ended up gravely injured for his two junior apprentice-brothers, Wang Lin suddenly felt a warm feeling surge in his heart.

He bowed respectfully to Xiao Yan. This bow was more sincere than all of the bows that he did before in the Mount Heng School.

“Greetings Senior Apprentice-Brother!”

The four apprentice-brothers all greeted each other while Lin Feng pondered in his heart: “Xiao Yan's injury is too severe. If he isn't properly taken care of his body will become crippled.”

He suddenly thought of the pill recipe for the Great Thunder Revival Pill that he obtained half a year ago after killing Hui Ku that big monk.

The Great Thunder Revival Pill, The Great Thunder Monastery's world famous healing panacea. It has a miraculous effect in healing the damaged body. It can revive the dead and regrow limbs.

Lin Feng sighed and thought: “Looks like it's time to learn alchemy.” Spreading the Black Cloud Flag, he wrapped up his four disciple and flew into the air.

In the meantime, the thought lingering in the minds of the other Eternal Dao Sect cultivators was: “If only I had a master like that too.”

Chapter 77: New Main Quest Issued!

Controlling the Black Cloud Flag to fly in the air, Lin Feng thought about the matter of the Great Thunder Revival Pill while entering into the system with slight jitters.

It appears that this bullshit system has issued a new quest again.

Gathering up four disciples, Lin Feng had completely the first main quest. The new quest issued this time shouldn't be a side quest but the new main quest.

Main Quest 1.1 — Create the fundamental dao technique of the sect.

Quest Description: A sect assimilating and mastering the dao techniques and skills of other legacies is no doubt good, but you must build upon past achievement and scale new heights on the existing foundation. Only by having your own unique dao techniques and skills can you lead the world and pass down your legacy for time eternal, establishing your position as the number one sect.

Quest Time Limit: One year, if not completed before time limit, directly eliminate host

Looking at the quest description, Lin Feng also nodded his head in approval.

He is going to create his own sect, of course he has to have a fundamental dao technique unique to his sect. If he's always using other people's dao techniques and skills and he gets recognized,

awkwardness is only the least of it.

No matter how amazing another person's dao technique it is, it is the legacy of a different person, how can it be the foundation of his own sect?

To create his own sect, he needs to create his own, original dao technique. Moreover, his original, self-realized dao technique and skills have to be superior to all that already exist in this world. Only like this can it be considered the legacy orthodoxy of the number one sect.

But despite the rhetoric, after seeing the quest time limit, Lin Feng's face instantly turned black.

Once again there's only one year's time, but creating one's own dao technique and skill isn't an easy thing to do at all.

Lin Feng laughed helplessly and sighed. His beautiful dream of him entering closed door training first for 100 years and then directly coming out to kick ass was once again shattered.

"At the very least let me reach foundation establishment first." Lin Feng is already at the great circle of perfection of qi disciple. The next step is to establish his qi ocean and form his dao root. From qi disciple stage to foundation establishment stage is a great leap forward than can greatly boost Lin Feng's strength.

Even though he just swept away three aurous core stage

cultivators, Lin Feng is self-aware that that is just the War God Golem's strength, it is not his own.

The War God Golem's combat strength is completely proportional to the strength of the power source supplied to it.

In the short term it's very difficult to have the strength today again when sacrificing Sikong Nan. A lucky event like Sikong Non this big shot old demon just happening to be in trouble and then landing in his hands is pure chance.

Currently, Lin Feng doesn't even have the resources to prompt the War God Golem to move, let alone have today's combat strength.

Unless he provides the sariras as a power source for the War God Golem.

But the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation is currently Lin Feng's strongest weapon besides the War God Golem. With one missing sarira he is unable to set up the formation. Unless absolutely necessary, Lin Feng does not want to take that step.

Which is why Lin Feng wants to advance to foundation establishment stage first. After reaching foundation establishment, Lin Feng can refine the sariras again. At that time he can reduce the number of sariras to set up the formation and change the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation into the 18 Arhat, 16 Arhat or something.

The arhat formation's power may drop a bit, but it can create a surplus of power sources to provide to the War God Golem. Clearly it is a good deal.

But after just having this thought, a notification prompt popped out from the system closely afterward.

After getting a clear look of it, Lin Feng nearly fainted over.

“Forming your dao root, the first step in thousands of years of cultivation and longevity, and also the most important foundation. Host must reach foundation establishment using the sect's original fundamental dao technique.”

Lin Feng felt his chest tighten. At this moment, besides swearing he honestly didn't have anything else he wanted to say.

He should have already known that with this unlucky system, there isn't the most bullshit, only more bullshit.

“Initiating Fundamental Dao Technique Creation System, enter now?”

Lin Feng grunted and then clicked in. System notifications continued to ring beside his ears: “Meditate on an image and the system will automatically create a dao technique based on the image.”

“Would it be that simple?” At this moment Lin Feng calmed down

and pondered in his heart. It sounds easy, all he has to do is think of an image in his mind.

But what should he use? Should he screw around a bit or be more serious?

After carefully thinking for a moment, Lin Feng restrained his impulse to screw around.

A thousand story building rises from the ground. If he covets a moment of pleasure, causing his foundation to be unstable and influencing the completion of the quest later, this system presumably won't mind giving him a quick one.

Dao technique foundation.... Dao technique foundation... Lin Feng thought for a moment, a black and white blending image surfaced in his mind.

Taiji. (TL: Or Tai chi. I'm gonna use taiji.)

This world doesn't seem to have the taiji diagram. The mark of the daoist holy land, the Void Temple is also just a white prosperous cloud.

“Confirmed host's thought, starting to create...”

Hearing the completely emotionless mechanical voice beside his ears, Lin Feng sighed. Heavens take pity, he actually wanted to try transformers or pikachu.

“《Heavenly Scripture of the Dao》successfully created...”

A scene of nothingness appeared in Lin Feng's mind. The nothingness gave birth to a taiji diagram of a yin and yang fish.

The taiji diagram started to spin, turning into the two colours white and black and filling the entire void.

Closely afterwards, from the black and white polar opposites was born the four phenomena, earth, water, fire and air.

The chaotic earth, water, fire and air stabilized in the void, further developing into the eight scenes of Heaven, Earth, wind, thunder, water, fire, mountain and lake.

Seeing this scene Lin Feng understood in his heart: “This is taiji produces the two modes, the two modes produce the four phenomena, the four phenomena produce the eight trigrams...”

The eight images split into eight directions. After settling in the void and turning into eight black hole-like objects, they stopped changing. The system notification rose up once more: “Please choose basic reference dao techniques to create the first chapter of the《Heavenly Scripture of the Dao》, the《Eight Trigrams Chapter》.

A thought surfaced in Lin Feng's mind. Looking closely at the eight images that represent the eight trigrams and linking them with the system notification, he had a guess in his mind: “It wants

me to get eight types of dao techniques that already exist in this world and then merge them together to obtain a completely new dao technique as my original dao technique?”

Thinking here, Lin Feng decided to give it a test: “The eight images that represent the eight trigrams shouldn’t be for show either. There must be a certain requirement, maybe it is the original attribute of the dao technique.”

Lin Feng thought of the Nine Heavens Thunder Technique in his mind, and then he saw the black hole in the void representing “Thunder” of the eight trigram images suddenly light up and become a mass of white light.

Afterwards Lin Feng thought of the Netherworld Nirvana Manual. Sure enough, the black hole representing “Water” also turned into a mass of white light.

To continue verifying his guess, Lin Feng thought of his other water class dao technique, the Blue Oceanic River Technique. This time the remaining six black holes did not react at all.

“Looks like that’s how it is.” Lin Feng exhaled a long breath. Next up is the Art of Acala and the Kṣitigarbha Sutra. Sure enough, the black holes representing “Fire” and “Earth” also lit up in succession with white light.

Looking at the four remaining black holes, Lin Feng slightly frowned: “Heaven, wind, mountain and lake? Heaven, wind, mountain, lake... Hold on!”

With a thought, a small black mountain the size of a human fist shakingly landed on his palm. It was precisely the soulbound magic of Old Geezer Yue from before. After getting smashed away by the War God Golem, Lin Feng secretly used the Black Cloud Flag to take it.

This mini black mountain that can change sizes was repeatedly damaged by the War God Golem. Right now it has already lost the majority of its spirituality and must be repaired and refined again.

Lin Feng doesn't care about the magic item itself, but instead about the writing faintly carved on the small mountain.

"Supreme Mountain Script... Haha, just as I suspected, God is truly on my side!"

Lin Feng laughed happily. Maybe to increase its power, this magic item of Elder Yue's actually had a portion of the dao technique of his sect, the Supreme Mountain Script carved onto it.

Thinking of the dao technique of the Supreme Mountain Script, the black hole in the void representing "Mountain" also lit up with white light.

More than half of his original dao technique has already been completed, Lin Feng was instantly in high spirits: "There still remains Heaven, wind and lake. Hm, I've already saved up a lot of trading points and I was also rewarded a lottery chance from taking in Wang Lin as my disciple."

Thinking here, Lin Feng immediately entered into the trading system.

Chapter 78: Flowing Wind Sigil, Wind & Thunder Genesis Sigil Formation

Lin Feng first entered into the trading system.

This time he has a clear goal, that is to try and find three suitable dao techniques. Trying his luck in the lottery system is naturally placed at the back, first he's going to find ones to his liking in the trading system.

Lin Feng saved up not using the 500 trading points rewarded from the Black Cloud Underground Palace side quest before and the 500 trading points rewarded from taking in Zhu Yi as his disciple. Now adding the 500 trading points rewarded from taking in Wang Lin as his disciple, Lin Feng has currently saved up a total of 1500 points.

Compared to when the system was first initiated and the mere 300 points provided by the novice gift, Lin Feng could be considered relatively rich.

But dao techniques are all expensive items, he still needs to plan carefully when trading them.

“Art of the Scattered Stars, secret dao technique of the Way of the Stars, comprehending the rotation and movement of the stars in the heavens... This should be able to meet the requirement for “Heaven”, right?” Lin Feng scanned the price: “800 trading points?”

Lin Feng slightly knit his brow and then carefully searched in the trading system for a moment, but there was only the Art of the Scattered Stars this one dao technique related to “Heaven”.

“Look at the other ones first.” Lin Feng changed target and continued searching.

“Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture, secret dao technique of the Heavenly Wind Temple, comprehending the profound mysteries of the circulation of wind and cloud. Can obtain the Heaven Twister Gale skill from cultivation.”

“Art of the Turbid Waves, secret dao technique of the Turbid Waves School, a technique for simultaneous mastery of both water and earth spiritual energy... Water and earth coincide perfectly, sediment in lakes. Hm, sounds good.”

Sounding good is one thing, but the price made Lin Feng a bit worried.

These two dao technique are the same price as the Art of the Scattered Stars. They all cost 800 trading points.

The three added together are a whole 2400 trading points. Lin Feng laughed helplessly. Just now he felt like he could be considered a rich man, looking at it now he’s still a poor guy.

“Let’s buy one first and then see if I can get lucky in the lottery. If

all else fails, I have to do everything possible to get a side quest and earn some more trading points.” Lin Feng pondered, at any rate the system still left one year for him.

The main quest this time is a one shot deal. As long as he gathers 8 suitable dao techniques, he can merge and create his own, original fundamental dao technique for his sect. Not like the last main quest where he had to find his four disciples one by one.

Thinking of the reward of the main quest, Lin Feng felt his heart blaze.

Even though power sources are not easy to find, the War God Golem’s might gave Lin Feng a deep impression. When he completes the main quest again this time, the reward presumably won’t be stingy either?

Lin Feng first payed 800 trading points and exchanged for the Art of the Scattered Stars.

Comprehending the Art of the Scattered Stars, a magnificent scene appeared in Lin Feng’s mind.

Like a completely clear night sky, the vast starry sky could be seen at a glance. The stars in the heavens flowed endlessly, thousands of millions of stars wandered and spun in front of Lin Feng one after another, rendering the most mysterious and magnificent scenes one by one.

Absentmindedly, Lin Feng felt like he was in a space of nothingness. Space did not have a boundary, time did not have an end, he just stood there silently flying and wandering with the stars beside him.

The disappearance and movement of every star seemed to harbor a principle of the universe.

But when Lin Feng wanted to probe the secrets within, they brushed past him and it was difficult to see the truth.

“The conception of this dao technique is excellent. Millions of stars, each harboring a powerful and profound principal. But in the end, the person who created the dao technique hadn’t reached that level, he could only scratch the surface. In the end he only had a hazy understanding and shook around a half bottle of vinegar, flaunting his half-assed knowledge.”

Lin Feng shook his head in regret but didn’t take it to heart, because right now the black hole representing “Heaven” of the eight trigrams had already lit up with white light.

Before Lin Feng after all only had a guess that this dao technique that comprehends the secrets of the stars could meet the requirement. But if he guessed wrong, those 800 big bucks would have gone completely down the drain.

But reality shows that the Art of the Scattered Stars meets the system’s requirement and Lin Feng relaxed his mind.

Eight types of dao techniques, now he has already gathered six. Just two more and he can merge them together.

Coming out from the trading system, Lin Feng entered into the lottery system and prayed in his heart: “It would be the best if I could directly get one, then things would be very easy.”

First he looked at the wheel system, the three dao techniques in it all do not meet the requirements.

Entering into the dice system, Lin Feng looked at the selected items. The first thing that entered his eyes was a Great Thunder Revival Skill.

“Holy cow.” Lin Feng breathed in and continued looking down. He saw the Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture quietly placed in the number 12 grid.

Lin Feng was a bit divided. One cannot have both the fish and the bear paw. This kind of decision always makes people’s balls hurt.

But very soon, Lin Feng noticed an even more ball aching matter.

The Great Thunder Revival Pill’s number is 1, that is to say the dice has to roll a one to be able to get the pill.

... But the problem is, how can three dice roll a one? The smallest is a three.

Before he's never encountered the situation where what he wanted was in 1 or 2, so Lin Feng didn't really care and he only reacted over now. You actually can't get one or two in this dice system, adding the two empty grids, there are actually four grids in the dice system where he can't obtain the item within.

Lin Feng didn't know whether to laugh or cry: "You stingy system, taking advantage of me even on this kind of small thing?"

But Lin Feng could accept it this time. The system essentially made his choice for him, just go straight for the Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture in number 12.

"12... 12... 12! Go!"

Under the control of Lin Feng's thought, the system threw the dice. The three dice started to rapidly spin on the light disk.

The first die stopped very soon. Lin Feng looked over and his heart sank half way down.

One?!

Lin Feng's heart instantly tightened. The remaining two dice have to be a six and a five for him to be able to get the Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture.

Very soon the second die stopped.

Six!

“Nice!” Lin Feng clapped his hands, his eyes staring straight at the last die and repeatedly chanting: “Five, five... Five!

The die stopped.

Still a six...

The first is a one, the second is a six, the third... is also a six!

Lin Feng was silent for a moment and then exploded open: “Fuck you motherfucker! You system, you’re retarded, your entire family’s retarded!” (TL: 13 points is apparently colloquialism for retarded, but just as a joke or in an unharmful way. Like cute retarded...)

“Fuck!” Lin Feng left the system with a depressed face. He couldn’t even be bothered to see what exactly was in the number 13 grid.

At this time the system notification suddenly sounded beside his ears.

“Host has triggered random side quest, Wind & Thunder Sigil!”

Lin Feng was dazed for a moment. When he returned to his senses, he first checked what exactly he got.

That is a stone talisman the size of a palm. Sparse line patterns are engraved on top, ancient and grand.

Flowing Wind Sigil, the crown treasure of the Wind & Thunder School of the past. It is a pair with another Thunder Element Sigil. The two sigils combined can set up the Wind & Thunder Genesis Sigil Formation.

The Wind & Thunder Genesis Sigil Formation, wind and thunder rage, helping each other grow hand in hand.

Cultivating inside of the Wind & Thunder Genesis Sigil Formation, the cultivator can enjoy the nourishment of endless wind and thunder spiritual energy. They can get twice the result with half the effort and their cultivation speed far surpasses the average cultivator.

Lin Feng was dazed for a moment and then checked the side quest.

Random side quest, Wind & Thunder Sigil.

Quest Background: The Wind & Thunder Sigil was originally the crown treasure of the Wind & Thunder School. In itself it does not have a lot of power, but the two combined as one can set up the Wind & Thunder Genesis Sigil Formation. This attracted the

covetous eyes of other forces who went to rob it. Ultimately the Wind & Thunder School fell and the two sigils went missing.

Quest Objective: Head towards the great intersecting mountain range, the Wind & Thunder Sea where the Thunder Element Sigil is located. Use the bond between it and the Flowing Wind Sigil to find the Thunder Element Sigil.

Quest Time Limit: Three months, if not completed on time, the quest will be failed.

“Misfortune may be an actual blessing!” Lin Feng remarked with a smile plastered on his face.

This Wind & Thunder Sigil may not have any combat power, but using it to assist in cultivation, it is practically a cheat-like existence.

With this thing as compensation, his depression from not getting the Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture was also swept away.

Not to mention he also triggered a side quest. Completing this side quest and obtaining the reward, he'll be able to directly exchanged a dao technique from the trading system.

Lin Feng put away the Flowing Wind Sigil and calculated in his heart: “Find a way first to get a Great Thunder Revival Pill to heal Xiao Yan’s injury, and then head towards the great intersecting mountain, the Wind & Thunder Sea to find the Thunder Element

Sigil.”

Thinking here, Lin Feng planned on going to check up on Monk Hui Kong who was captured by the War God Golem.

Maybe this monk from the Great Thunder Monastery might have a ready-made Great Thunder Revival Pill on his person?

Chapter 79: Tricking The Hell Out Of People

As an aurous core stage magic item, the Black Cloud Flag may have been tainted by the True Blood River Water and is unable to exert its true power in battle, but Lin Feng still easily uses its ability of carrying people to fly and shifting through space.

As a spatial type magic item, besides being able to engage in short distance spatial travel, the Black Cloud Flag can also open up an isolated space.

Two black masses of light flickered in the space. One of them is wrapping up Xiao Yan and his three apprentice-brothers. Lin Feng went to check up on them, Xiao Yan's injury is relatively stable.

While the other mass of black light is wrapping up the War God Golem. Right now it has already become tranquil, the red light in its eyes has completely extinguished and its frightening aura has also vanished. It is just like a statue.

The War God Golem's arms are still tightly clamped around Hui Kong. Even though the War God Golem has already lost its energy, Hui Kong who was captured by it also had his mana sealed and was unable to move.

Seeing Lin Feng, Hui Kong's lips moved. He wanted to say something, but in the end he still closed his mouth not speaking.

On the surface Lin Feng looked like he didn't care at all, but he was actually secretly observing Hui Kong.

“You are also here for my disciple?”

Lin Feng asked coolly: “I heard my disciples say that you recognized Hui Ku’s Buddhist Thunder Staff and you are looking for Hui Kong?”

Hui Kong raised his head and muttered a buddhist prayer: “Amitabha, I am indeed here for that traitorous junior apprentice-brother Hui Ku. Accurately speaking, I want to chase back the sariras of my sect elders that were desecrated in Hui Ku’s hands.”

“Hui Ku committed great treason and actually refined the sariras of the sect elders into magic items. I absolutely cannot sit by indifferently.”

Even though he landed in Lin Feng’s hands, Hui Kong still had a calm look. It’s not that he’s not afraid, but that he has his faith in his heart and his will is strong enough.

Lin Feng asked: “What is your buddhist name?”

Hui Kong responded: “My buddhist name is Hui Kong.”

Lin Feng looked at him and suddenly asked: “If I tell you Hui Ku’s location, what will you do after you find him?”

Hui Kong’s drooping eyelids suddenly flipped open and a strong

light surged in his eyes: “Cripple his cultivation prowess and take him in front of Buddha to recite scriptures for the rest of his life to atone for his sins.

Lin Feng stared at his eyes, he knows that this big monk is telling the truth.

“Unfortunately little monk, you can’t do that anymore.” Lin Feng said calmly.

Hui Kong’s expression didn’t change: “You mean that you’re going to kill me so I am unable to find Junior Apprentice-Brother Hui Ku to get back the sariras?”

“Or are you saying that Junior Apprentice-Brother Hui Ku has already died by your hand, so I am unable to take him in front of Buddha to recite scriptures and atone?”

Lin Feng glanced at him: “Smart alec.”

Hui Kong responded: “Please enlighten me.”

Lin Feng waved his sleeve: “Hui Ku has indeed already died, but he did not die by my hand. He died together with a cultivator working under Zhu Hongwu.”

Hui Ku’s eyes narrowed slightly, his expression became serious: “The Marquis of Xuanji, Zhu Hongwu?”

In the past when the Great Zhou Dynasty joined together with many forces to exterminate the Great Thunder Monastery, the Marquis of Xuanji was the commander in chief. Hui Kong is also a disciple of the Great Thunder Monastery, even though he's not as extreme like Hui Ku, he also harbours hatred towards the Marquis of Xuanji.

Lin Feng slightly sneered: "If others leave me alone, I'll leave them alone. The second steward under Zhu Hongwu and the guest elder of the Yu clan were all smashed to bits by me. The child of the Yu main branch dared to step on my disciple, so I took his leg."

"Why do you think I left you behind not killing you and only captured you alive?"

Hui Kong lowered his head saying: "I did not actually offend you or your disciples, I just wanted to ascertain the whereabouts of the sariras."

Lin Feng thought: "Of course it's because the War God Golem is out of juice." But towards Hui Kong he naturally won't say it like that. Hearing Hui Kong's response, Lin Feng nodded slightly: "This is just one of the reasons, the other is because of your junior apprentice-brother, Hui Ku."

Hui Kong looked at Lin Feng a bit surprised. Lin Feng said calmly: "Before Hui Ku passed away, I was right in front of him."

"This Buddhist Thunder Staff was passed to me by him before he

died.” Lin Feng explained: “But those 24 sariras were destroyed in the Netherworld Blood River beneath the Black Cloud Underground Palace.”

Hui Kong’s expression paled: “Netherworld Blood River! Do you speak the truth?”

Lin Feng said coolly: “I only ever say things once.”

Hui Kong’s mind was in a mess. If the sariras really were thrown into the Netherworld Blood River, they would definitely be completely contaminated by the tainted blood and lose all of their buddhist nature.

He collected his mind and said in a low voice: “I was rude, please tell me the details within.”

Lin Feng suddenly changed his tone and asked: “Because of the matter of the sariras, you are very discontent with your Junior Apprentice-Brother Hui Ku?”

Hui Kong was slightly surprised, but he still responded very openly saying: “I did indeed commit the sin of anger, but my heart is so, I do not dare to make excuses to hide it.”

Lin Feng nodded his head and continued saying: “Do you know what Hui Ku said the most before he died?” He stared at Hui Kong’s eyes and said slowly: “Hui Ku said, he knows that he has betrayed his sect and will definitely go down to hell. He just hates that he

cannot see the day when the Zhou Dynasty falls and the blood debt of his sect is avenged.”

Hui Kong instantly fell silent.

Fundamentally speaking, Hui Ku and him are the same.

Due to the hatred of his sect being exterminated, Hui Ku went against the prohibition of anger and murder, and even didn't hesitate to refine the sariras of his sect elders into magic items. Just to increase his strength to take revenge against the Zhou Dynasty.

He himself also knows that this is an act of treason, but he was simply unable restrain the rage and hatred in his heart.

This is also Hui Ku's will, no excuses and no need to make excuses.

Lin Feng's sighed with regret saying: “Your Junior Apprentice-Brother Hui Ku may have been extreme, but he fights an eye for an eye. Moreover it's not his own personal vendetta but the blood debt of his sect. Moving forward without being led astray, a tooth for a tooth, I admire people like him.”

“Hui Ku knows that you've always been tracking him. He doesn't ask for you forgiveness, he just asks to be at your mercy after revenge is taken. He will also offer back the sariras.” Lin Feng said coolly: “Hui Ku had an epiphany before he died, his anger and

hatred dispersed and his greatest regret wasn't that he died before he could avenge his sect, but that the sariras were lost in the Netherworld Blood River and he was unable to return them to you."

Hui Kong's expression gradually paled, a trace of agony surfaced in his eyes.

Lin Feng was paying attention to every miniscule change in his expression. Seeing this, he became even more confident in his heart. He hurriedly struck the iron while it was hot: "Hui Ku has always hoped to be able to obtain your forgiveness. The reason he gave that Buddhist Thunder Staff to me is because he hoped that I could return it to you and pass along a message for him. He said that he is destined to enter into the infernal hell to atone, but all of his actions have been for the Great Thunder Monastery. If he had any selfish motives, may the heavens strike him down!"

"The reason I gave the Buddhist Thunder Staff to my disciple before was just temporarily for him to defend himself." Lin Feng said casually: "Since I've encountered you today I'll hand it over to you."

Finishing speaking, Lin Feng handed over the Buddhist Thunder Staff to Hui Kong, but Hui Kong did not accept it. His face was pale and he only muttered to himself: "Junior Apprentice-Brother, you walked the wrong path, you really did walk the wrong path... You were so silly, sigh!"

At this stage, Lin Feng already completely knows that in the past when they were training at the Great Thunder Monastery, Hui

Kong's and Hui Ku's relationship must have been extremely close. It's very possible that they were taught by the same master and were apprentice-brothers who lived and ate together.

After the Great Thunder Monastery fell, the two people escaped together. Hui Ku who had a violent and extreme temper refined the sariras of his sect elders as magic items to increase his strength, and due to this, upright and serious natured Hui Kong split with him.

It was precisely because of their close relationship in the past that Hui Kong was so intolerant of Hui Ku doing this kind blasphemous thing like desecrating the remains of his elders, and why he would be so committed to capturing Hui Ku and getting back the sariras.

Making clear of the relations within, Lin Feng decisively made the final attack: "So, the reason you can escape under my hand with your life today, half of the credit goes to that junior apprentice-brother of yours who's been pursued by you the whole time. Take care of yourself, where you go from now on is up to you."

Hui Kong sighed at the sky. Tears fell like rain and he was silent not speaking.

Lin Feng's expression was calm, he stared at him not speaking.

After a long while, Hong Kong's mood finally calmed down. He inhaled a deep breath, looking at Lin Feng and saying: "Thank you for telling me all of these things and undoing the knot in my heart

for these past 10 years.”

“Junior Apprentice-Brother Hui Ku gave this Buddhist Thunder Staff to you. Since you’ve already passed it on to your disciple, I naturally won’t ask for it. I believe that even Junior Apprentice-Brother Hui Ku will also agree with this decision of mine.”

Lin Feng asked calmly: “What will you do when I release you?”

Hui Kong said: “I wish to head towards the Zhou Dynasty’s Tianjing City and take a trip to that underground palace to pay my respects to Hui Ku. Then I’ll try and enter deep into the underground palace to see if I am lucky enough find a couple of sariras. The odds may be slim, but I will still do my best.”

Lin Feng could tell that this monk is the kind of person who keeps his word, every word he spits out is a nail down in the plank, thus he loosened the War God Golem’s restraint and released Hui Kong.

Hui Kong brought his palms together: “Before I offended you and your disciples. Thank you for your magnanimity, I am eternally grateful. If luck brings us together again in the future, if there is anything I can do, I am at your disposal.”

Lin Feng nodded his head indifferently. Hui Kong chanted a buddhist prayer again and then used the Garuda Windsurfing Technique, disappearing in the distance in an instant.

Watching Hui Kong's distancing figure, Lin Feng exhaled a long breath.

Due to Zhu Yi, he is bound to go against the House of the Marquis of Xuanji and the Great Zhou Dynasty. There is only good and no harm in burying a few more nails for them.

The enemy of an enemy is a friend. If he can make use of him, why wouldn't he?

"Moreover... Hehe!" Lin Feng laughed while taking out a storage bag, this is Hui Kong's storage bag: "The storage bag of an aurous core stage cultivator, there should be some stuff in here."

Chapter 80: Amazing Luck

With Lin Feng's cultivation level, he naturally can't undo the seal left behind on the storage bag by an aurous core stage cultivator.

But it is no match for the True Netherworld Water he has that can purify all mana. He retrieved the Netherworld Bead from Wang Lin. Even though he can't use the Netherworld Bead to fight enemies, it's still very easy for him to draw out some True Netherworld Water to remove the seal Hui Kong left on the storage bag.

Opening the storage bag, he stuck out his head and took a glance. Instantly, Lin Feng twitched his lips.

This Monk Hui Kong seems to walk the path of penance, his storage bag is broke, there really isn't anything good inside.

Besides some miscellaneous items like clothes and money, there are only some medicinal ingredients.

Lin Feng knows absolutely nothing about medicinal ingredients, he could only miserably cross-reference them with the system one by one to determine the species of the medicinal ingredients.

While looking, Lin Feng became ecstatic.

These ingredients are actually all the raw materials for the Great Thunder Revival Pill. With these ingredients and adding the pill

formula obtained from Hui Ku, Lin Feng can make the Great Thunder Revival Pill himself.

“Not bad, not bad. Even though it’s a bit troublesome, it’s not a big deal. Do things yourself to enrich your life.” Lin Feng thought happily and continued to inspect the storage bag.

Suddenly, a bronze mirror attracted Lin Feng’s attention.

The mirror is one foot in diameter. The mirror frame is intact, but there is a giant hole in the center of the mirror. Although Lin Feng can clearly sense that there is still spiritual energy retained in the bronze mirror.

Lin Feng picked up the bronze mirror and the system notification suddenly rose up beside his ears.

“Host has triggered random side quest, repairing the Universal Mirror.”

Lin Feng opened wide his mouth and only closed it after a long while: “Does Lady Fortune smile upon me?”

He still hasn’t completed the side quest from the Wind & Thunder Talisman before and now he’s got another one. Happiness came to suddenly and it truly made Lin Feng a bit surprised.

“You’re called the Universal Mirror? That’s a pretty grand

name.” Lin Feng pulled himself together and started to read the quest description.

Random side quest, repairing the Universal Mirror.

Quest Background: The treasure the Universal Mirror has suffered great damage. Collect enough galaxy sand to repair the Universal Mirror.

Quest Time Limit: Three months, if not completed on time, quest is failed.

Lin Feng scratched his head: “They’re both three months, but the great intersecting mountain range and the Ancient World Marsh are to the east and west, they are far more than hundreds of thousands of kilometers away from each other? Even with the Black Cloud Flag there’s not enough time to reach the two places within three months.

With such distance, he can’t travel to the two places even with the Black Cloud Flag. The Black Cloud Flag’s spatial shifting ability can only travel short distances. If he flies, the speed is also clearly not enough.

This is still just the time spent on travelling, if he adds in the time to complete the quests and find the items, time is even more tight.

The two quests are both to find items. The items are there and

he's not afraid of someone getting there before him and taking them. But if he doesn't complete the quests on time, the side quest rewards issued by the system will definitely be gone.

Yet it just so happens that right now Lin Feng really needs the side quest rewards to accumulate enough trading points to go trade for the dao techniques required to complete his main quest.

Side quests are all randomly issued, if he misses this opportunity he doesn't know when he'll get another chance.

Lin Feng embraces one principle, and that is that one's luck is conserved. Today he had great luck so for a long time in the future he probably won't have such treatment...

"My head hurts." Lin Feng shook his head and once again went through Hui Kong's storage bag. After not having any other gains, he placed his attention back on the pile of ingredients: "Before anything else, find a way to get a pill furnace first and then make a Great Thunder Revival Pill. The longer Xiao Yan's injury drags on, the worse his condition gets."

Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and flew hundreds of kilometers before landing on the ground. After asking the way, he flew back up and arrived at an old city in the southeast area of the Great Qin Dynasty. This place is that same as Chuzhou, there is also a massive cultivation materials trading square.

Lin Feng's goal is to find a pill furnace.

Even though there are furnaces in the trading system and they are also all good stuff, the amount of trading points required is too great. Right now Lin Feng desperately needs trading points to trade for dao techniques. He wishes that he could split one point into two to spend, he is truly reluctant to trade for a pill furnace.

Thus he could only come to the city square himself to find one, although Lin Feng was cautious and he brought along Zhu Yi.

Entering into the city square, he instructed Zhu Yi and then the two people split up. Lin Feng wandered around for half a day but didn't find a suitable core furnace.

The complexity of pill furnaces is the highest of all magic items. The creation process involves alchemy, spell formations and other such things. Its creation difficulty is ranked number one in item crafting.

The Great Thunder Revival Pill also isn't an ordinary medicine. Making this kind of high-level pill, a quality pill furnace can greatly increase the success rate and play a big role.

Lin Feng who didn't have any gains sighed. After determining Zhu Yi's position and walking over, he saw Zhu Yi bartering with a wandering cultivator.

Lin Feng took a close look. Zhu Yi was holding a pill furnace in his hand, it looked pitch-black and very normal, only its style was a bit quaint.

But Lin Feng doesn't dare to look down on this pill furnace at the slightest, because it was found by Zhu Yi.

Who is Zhu Yi? The chosen one, the king of luck!

A max blessing of 10, even Xiao Budian and the others who are also main character level cannot compare with him.

This kid is definitely a weapon of mass destruction for finding treasures.

At this time Zhu Yi also saw Lin Feng walk over. He hurriedly greeted him: "Master." At the same time he also quietly used his mana to transmit his voice to Lin Feng: "Master, this pill furnace may look ordinary, but I feel like there is something strange with it. Please make a decision Master."

Lin Feng thought in his mind, good disciple, as long as you feel like something's strange.

But on the surface, Lin Feng only lightly scanned the pill furnace and then didn't pay it any more attention. Zhu Yi also didn't speak anymore and obediently stood behind Lin Feng.

Seeing that Lin Feng is the true customer, that wandering cultivator selling things hurriedly used his silver tongue to recommend his merchandise to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng randomly picked up a white jade jewel box. It is cool to

the touch but not cold. The cold aura within flowed continuously and it was always uniform without any change.

Seeing this, the seller instantly introduced with high spirits: “You have good eyes Fellow Daoist. This Energy Sealing Casket is of extraordinary quality and is carved from an entire Energy Sealing Stone. If you put valuable medicinal ingredients within, not the slightly bit of their spiritual energy and medicinal properties will be lost. It truly is an exceptional treasure.”

Once they are picked, some spiritual herbs will rapidly lose their spiritual energy and become useless. At this time, with an Energy Sealing Casket, one does not need to fail on the verge of success.

Lin Feng asked indifferently: “How are you selling it?”

“Are you prepared to trade using an item or pills?”

“Do you want Energy Cultivation Pills?” Energy Cultivation Pills are pills Lin Feng obtained from Hui Kong’s storage bag. They are rich with spiritual energy and can solidify one’s foundation. It helps cultivator practise dao techniques.

The wandering cultivator’s eyes instantly lit up. Unless he himself knows alchemy, it is very difficult for a wandering cultivator like him without a sect to obtain pills beneficial to cultivation.

“If it’s Energy Cultivation Pills then there’s no problem.” The

wandering cultivation smiled saying: “30 Energy Cultivation Pills and this Energy Sealing Casket is yours.”

Energy Cultivation Pills are not easy to make, Hui Kong’s storage bag also only has just 50-60. Hearing him actually dare to make an unreasonable demand, Lin Feng didn’t get angry. Looking at him, he lightly spit out two words: “Too expensive.”

The wandering cultivator scratched his head: “Fellow Daoist, this really is a good thing! Think about it, without an Energy Sealing Casket, if you encounter that kind of spiritual herb that rapidly loses its spiritual energy once picked, won’t you cry yourself to sleep?”

Lin Feng said casually: “Since you’re selling the Energy Sealing Casket, you’re not a herb collector or alchemist. You have absolutely no use in keeping the Energy Sealing Casket. Energy Cultivation Pills are what you truly need the most. I am willing to use pills to trade with you so make sure the price you give me is reliable.”

The smile on the wandering cultivator’s face froze and he felt distressed in his heart. Originally he saw that Lin Feng was a new face so he made an unreasonable demand, but he didn’t think that Lin Feng knows that practise. He bit his teeth and said: “25 Energy Cultivation Pills, I really can’t go any lower.”

“5.” Lin Feng grinned, but he almost made the wandering cultivator jump up: “Are you joking? Are you here to mess with me?”

Seeing him become angered, Lin Feng wasn't worried. He said leisurely: "Just now you said this was carved from an entire Energy Sealing Stone?"

The wandering cultivator's heart jumped. He saw Lin Feng point at the Energy Sealing Casket and say: "You tell me, what's with this seam joined together?"

"Messing around? Who's messing around?" Lin Feng's expression abruptly changed and he had a cold face: "Playing tricks in this city square, what do you think the result will be?"

Laughing helplessly, the wandering cultivator said in a low voice: "Fellow Daoist, please forgive me, I also had no choice. How's about this, 20 Energy Cultivation Pills..." Seeing Lin Feng raise his eyebrows again, he hurriedly changed it and said: "15, 15 Energy Cultivation Pills! I really can't go any lower or else I'll make a loss!"

"10! If you agree than we'll trade right now, or else let's go over to the city square administration to have a good talk." Lin Feng laughed coldly saying.

The wandering cultivator pulled a long face and didn't pick up the conversation. His eyes turned around for a long while and he suddenly saw the pill furnace that Zhu Yi had his eyes on before. He hurriedly said: "15 Energy Cultivation Pills and I'll throw in this pill furnace for you. Your protege had his eyes on it just now."

“Nice, I’ve really got amazing luck today.” Lin Feng secretly made a victory sign. On the surface he put on airs and then successfully got the pill furnace.

Heading out of the city square, Zhu Yi looked like he wanted to say something. Lin Feng glanced at him and asked: “Do you feel like my behaviour of bartering with that child for a few mere Energy Cultivation Pills was very strange?”

Zhu Yi pressed his lips together and answered: “I do indeed have uncertainty in my heart, please enlighten me Master.”

Lin Feng smiled leisurely: “In the end it comes down to money, but you must not look down on money.”

Zhu Yi responded saying: “I may have studied the classical scriptures, but I am not a pedantic bookworm who does not speak of profit. But I just feel like haggling over a bit of small profit is a bit difficult to understand.”

Lin Feng looked at him and said seriously: “Money actually harbours a powerful conception of power of invincibility and wards off evil.”

“Think about it, in the entire world, the people who pray for money everyday far surpasses the number of people who pray to gods and buddhas.”

“The word money runs through all of humanity and is current in

the entire greater realm. Basically where there are people there is money.”

“The common will and demand of billions of people gathered together, what a massive force that is. Have you ever thought of all this?” Lin Feng lightly waved his sleeve and said coolly: “There are principles everywhere in the world, big and small, this is not just random talk.”

Zhu Yi was stupefied by Lin Feng’s speech. Only after a long while did he return to his senses. He bowed saying: “As Master teaches, I was shallow before.”

Lin Feng nodded his head in a composed manner and walked forward in satisfaction. Zhu Yi hurriedly followed behind him.

Bringing Zhu Yi back to their temporary accommodation, Lin Feng immediately took out the pill furnace and started to ponder about what exactly this treasure is.

Chapter 81: Test You Guys

Lin Feng closely examined the pill furnace before him. Three feet, a pointed top, completely black and patterns faintly engraved on the body. It's just that right now the pill furnace is covered in dust and dirt, clearly it hasn't been used for a long time.

Lin Feng poured in his mana. The pill furnace didn't have any reaction. He put in some ingredients and there was still no movement.

"It really is weird." Lin Feng scratched his head. No wonder this pill furnace looks so old and has no signs of being used for a long time. It looks entirely like a piece of scrap without any spirituality.

But Lin Feng doesn't plan on second-guessing Zhu Yi's luck. He entered into the system, opening up the inventory list and checking every item one by one.

The strange patterns on the body of the furnace can be used as an important identification mark.

Hard work pays off. Lin Feng found a pill furnace at virtually the bottom of the inventory list, its characteristics are extremely similar to the one in his hands.

Celestial Heart Flame Furnace, made using celestial meteoric iron. It creates heart flames on its own, adding a strong firepower and thus can greatly increase the success rate of alchemy.

Required trading points... 3000!

Lin Feng slapped his forehead and wished that he could immediately go over to the room next door to hug and kiss Zhu Yi.

3000 trading points, even if you sell him he can't scrape together so many trading points.

From the initiation of the system until now, even including the novice gift, the total sum of trading points that Lin Feng has accumulated and obtained is only just 2800 points.

The 700 trading points that Lin Feng currently has on his hands is only enough to buy a leg of this Celestial Heart Flame Furnace.

"Not bad, not bad at all!" Lin Feng beamed with joy, but then had doubt in his heart.

Since this pill furnace is so good, why did no one discover it?

One or two people couldn't discover the secrets of the pill furnace, but everybody who handled it couldn't notice?

Carrying this doubt, Lin Feng closely checked the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace's data. He noticed a caption within: "Only the seven great true flames can exert the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace's use to its limit."

Lin Feng blinked his eyes and he felt slightly bitter in his mouth. He finally understands why other people couldn't discover the worth of this pill furnace.

The seven great true flames, the apex of all fire in this world. Every kind can limitlessly increase its power. They are endlessly powerful with apocalyptic power, how can their embers be that easy to obtain?

Lin Feng massaged his throbbing temples on both sides and told himself to calm down. Word by word he pondered on the information of the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace.

“Exert to the limit... In other words, spiritual flames on a slightly lower level than the seven great true flames can also make this pill furnace work, but they can't exert its effect to the limit.” Lin Feng figured things out a bit: “The higher grade the spiritual flame, the more distinct the effect is. If the spiritual flame's level is too low, it will be unable to drive this pill furnace.”

Thinking here, Lin Feng's heart settled down.

The Fury Flames of Acala is recognized as a high level spiritual flame second only to the seven great true flames.

Lin Feng immediately lay down the 24 Heaven Arhat Formation and then used the same method as before, forming Fury Flames of Acala with the three blazing arhats as the core.

The little milky white ember landed in the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace and a change instantly occurred to the pill furnace.

Just as though a slumbering giant had finally awoken.

Around the milky white Fury Flames of Acala, a circle of crimson red flames lit up around it. It flickered around as if a strongly beating heart.

Following the beating of this “heart”, fiery red markings surfaced on the inner walls of the pill furnace.

At this time, the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace that was originally only the size of a palm rapidly grew bigger. Only until it reached a height of two meters and a diameter of also nearly two meters did it stop and firmly land on the ground. An astounding mana fluctuation radiated from within it.

Lin Feng smiled: “That crimson red flame like a heart should be the so-called heart flame. Hm... It is truly extraordinary. The power of incineration within the flame is not much different even compared to the Fury Flames of Acala.”

With cultivators adept in alchemy, the dao techniques they practise are usually all fire class dao techniques. They need to use their own mana flames and convert it into alchemy flames to make pills.

Lin Feng practises the Art of Acala so he has his mana alchemy flames, but before now he has never made pills before so he is rather nervous in his heart.

Placing the materials for making the Great Thunder Revival Pill in the pill furnace, Lin Feng started to carefully control the alchemy flame.

Sometimes you've got to admit that learning something is indeed very particular about talent.

Lin Feng worked himself to death and fiddled around for half a day. In the end when he opened the furnace to retrieve the pill, what appeared before him was just a pile of char.

“Was the fire too strong? Or were the ingredients not matched right?” Lin Feng grabbed his head in distress. The materials are still very abundant, but he can't practise like this either.

After furrowing his brow and thinking for a moment, a light bulb suddenly lit up in his head.

“You guys all come to my room, carry your eldest apprentice-brother with you guys.” Lin Feng calmly transmitted his voice to Zhu Yi and co. next door. Afterwards he sat cross-legged, quietly awaiting the arrival of his disciples.

Xiao Budian pushed open the door and entered first. He looked at Lin Feng with question marks all over his forehead along with the

Celestial Heart Flame Furnace in Lin Feng's room that was about to poke the ceiling.

Behind him, one at the front and one at the back, Zhu Yi and Wang Lin carried a stretcher and walked into the room. Xiao Yan was lying on the stretcher, his face was pale but his mood was pretty good.

“Greetings Master.” The four people said together. Besides Xiao Yan who was lying down and couldn't move, the other three people all bowed and saluted him.

Lin Feng lightly nodded his head and then said: “You all see this pill furnace here?”

The four people nodded their heads together. Zhu Yi asked: “Master, this is that pill furnace from the city square before?”

Lin Feng smiled slightly: “The name of this furnace is the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace. It's a pity that it was a bright pearl covered in dust before. Now I have reactivated it and let it show its true form.”

Zhu Yi clicked his tongue in wonder: “This really is a wondrous item.”

At the side Xiao Budian asked: “Master, you called us over to look at this pill furnace?”

Lin Feng shook his head and answered: “Not at all, the reason I called you guys over is to test you guys.”

Test us?

The four people all looked at each other. On the stretcher, Xiao Yan said softly: “What test is there, please instruct us Master.”

Lin Feng pointed at the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace and said casually: “To heal Little Yan’s injury, I am currently making a type of pill, but I purposely made mistake in a couple of places. Making it as it is right now, it is doomed to fail.”

“Right now I will test you guys to see if you guys have the spirit or gift for alchemy, and if you guys can pick the the mistakes that I purposely left behind.” Lin Feng said with a poker face and handed the pill formula for the Great Thunder Revival Pill over to them. He also seriously explained the function of the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace.

“Am I too shameless? I think I’m just average...” Thoughts turned in Lin Feng’s mind, but his face still had a sanctimonious appearance. He said lightly: “You guys can discuss between yourselves, I am listening at the side. I know in my heart whoever proposes a correct idea.”

The four people exchanged gazes and then gathered together beside Xiao Yan’s stretcher. They started discussing with their heads touched together.

Lin Feng secretly perked his ears listening to the content of their discussion and then compared it with his own views. He had quite the gain.

He has to say that the system's judgement is very accurate. Among the four people, Xiao Yan was the fastest to get the hang of alchemy and has the deepest understanding. In regards to the mistakes in Lin Feng's original alchemical procedure, Xiao Yan found them the fastest and he also found the most.

As for whether or not they're accurate, that remains to be verified.

In the end, the other three people also chose Xiao Yan to make the summary.

"... The Sky Bone Herb cannot be placed entirely into the pill furnace to be refined, it has to first be ground into powder; the Frost Dew and the Jadenfire Phosphorus Herb need to be mixed together first before being thrown into the pill furnace to be refined, they cannot be thrown in separately." Xiao Yan concluded. At the end, after hesitating for a moment he continued saying: "Also, I think the time for opening the furnace should cut short by one hour, but I am not certain about this point."

Lin Feng's demeanor was quiet and calm. After listening to Xiao Yan finish speaking everything, he lifted his head asking the other three people: "Do you guys still have anything else to add?"

The other three people all shook their heads so Lin Feng smiled

saying: “You’re done speaking, not going to change anything more?”

Xiao Yan bit his teeth: “No.”

Lin Feng stood up and said with a smile: “I won’t make any comments, we’ll let reality speak for itself. I will use you guys’ method to make this batch of pills and see what the result is in the end.” Finishing speaking, he did as Xiao Yan said, treating the ingredients and starting to make the pill.

Lin Feng controlled the furnace flame, the four disciples also closely watched the pill furnace. Xiao Yan was especially nervous and his palms were even starting to sweat a bit.

The four people didn’t know that Lin Feng was actually even more nervous than them. He stared anxiously at the pill furnace: “Ya little kid, you better be right.”

Chapter 82: When The Master Has Something To Do, The Disciple Does The Work

In the Celestial Heart Flame Furnace, the Fury Flames of Acala and the pill furnace heart flames burned together. Lin Feng carefully controlled the power of the fire. When the time arrived he drew his mana and withdrew the Fury Flames of Acala.

With the disappearance of the Fury Flames of Acala, the pill furnace heart flames also instantly extinguished with it.

Opening the pill furnace, the scent of sandalwood immediately greeted the nostrils. Golden buddhist light surged in the furnace and inside of the grey furnace ashes quietly lay a whole eight red pills the size of a dragon eye.

Inside of the room, master and disciple sucked their noses together. Just smelling this medicinal fragrance made their entire bodies feel well.

Xiao Yan inhaled a breath of medicinal fragrance. It was wrapped up by his own mana and spiritual energy and then circulated in his body. Where he was injured there was actually a numb feeling and the injury even seemed to be slowly healing.

“Success!” Lin Feng relaxed his mind: “The Great Thunder Revival Pill, reviving the dead and regenerating limbs. It has a miraculous effect in healing the damaged body, it is true to its

name.”

Xiao Yan swallowed one Great Thunder Revival Pill and diligently circulated his mana to dissolve and guide the medicine to heal his injuries.

Seeing Xiao Yan gradually reach a meditative state and that the pill was already starting to take effect, Lin Feng relaxed his heart.

He turned his head towards Xiao Budian and asked: “Where’s that black metal greatsword your eldest apprentice-brother obtained? Bring it over for me to see.”

Xiao Budian carried over the black metal greatsword. Lin Feng grabbed the sword handle and immediately felt his hand sink down. Lin Feng was secretly surprised: “What material is this made of? It’s actually this heavy.” Even stranger is that once the black metal greatsword was in his hand, Lin Feng’s mana circulation slowed down.

Lin Feng was greatly surprised: “It truly does have something special about it.” Thinking for a moment, he separated a sliver of his consciousness attempting to probe the black metal greatsword.

What entered into his eyes was a pitch-black void, quiet and soundless but making people’s hearts jump.

A silent supreme fear and supreme horror filled Lin Feng’s mind, as if he was in the lowest level of purgatory.

“Boom!”

His vision was completely filled by a purple-blue sea of fire. The purple-blue demon fire that suddenly appeared was like an unparalleled tyrant who was suddenly roused from his sleep, releasing a terrifying roar.

The void was torn into broken fragments. The air seemed to be trembling without stop, releasing crackling sounds of explosions.

The purple fire burned strongly, flickering with an ominous dark blue light. A powerful will was harbored within it, merciless slaughter completely crushed the wills of all surrounding life!

Blue light flickered in the sea of fire, five words of light faintly surfaced and pulsed.

Tyrant Sword of Radiant Evil!

There was an instant where Lin Feng felt that even his mind had completely stopped. The purple demon fire roared and surged towards him, wanting to destroy and devour not only this sliver of consciousness, but also Lin Feng as a whole.

Lin Feng was startled and he hurriedly retracted his mind and mana. Opening his eyes, the black metal greatsword grasped in his hand looked completely ordinary, as if the terrifying scene before was just an illusion.

“Purple-blue fire, Tyrant Sword of Radiant Evil... Purple-blue fire.” Lin Feng searched in the system for a moment and then involuntarily gasped. He twisted his head looking towards Xiao Yan who was still meditating and absorbing the medical effect of the Great Thunder Revival Pill.

This little guy truly is a main character level little beast.

Radiant Evil of Purgatory, ranked as one of the seven great true flames of the world. It originates from the Radiant Evil True Flame in Purgatory and is endlessly powerful.

Besides burning fiercely and endlessly, the seven great true flames also have a myriad of magical effects. But in terms of pure destructive power, the Radiant Evil of Purgatory can be called the king of all flames, even the other six great true flames need to give it a wide berth!

This is an apocalyptic supreme demon fire, even the laws of the universe are wary of it and suppressed it at the lowest level of hell. It can not easily surface in the world.

Lin Feng shook his head and laughed helplessly in his heart: “Man, this is probably Xiao Yan’s fated treasure? That’s why I say I also want to get a marriage annulment...”

When Xiao Yan absorbed all of the medicine and woke up from his meditative state, Lin Feng handed the Tyrant Sword of Radiant Evil over to Xiao Yan and told him the information of the Radiant

Evil of Purgatory along with it.

Xiao Yan was stupefied from listening. Zhu Yi and the other two also had their mouths wide open, blankly staring at the completely unassuming and bulky looking black metal greatsword in Xiao Yan's hand.

“Haha, jackpot!” Xiao Yan who reacted over was overjoyed, the excitement in his heart was written all over his face.

Xiao Budian shouted: “Eldest Apprentice-Brother, me and Second Apprentice-Brother both pitched in for the pills to buy the sword, we've also got a share in the thing!”

Xiao Yan glared at him: “I'll return your pills to you tomorrow.”

Xiao Budian made a ruckus in discontent, Wang Lin had a face of admiration and a radiant light also flickered in Zhu Yi's eyes.

At the side, Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan who was in high spirits at the side, he thought: “Looks like this kid really has a connection with fire. The king of fire, maybe this is his path of fate? If that's so, the other six true flames...”

Thinking here, Lin Feng also drooled in his heart. He hurriedly pulled himself together and said to Xiao Yan: “Little Yan, I've already heard the situation from your junior apprentice-brothers about you triggering the power in the sword before. At the moment it looks like your current cultivation level is not yet

sufficient to control this demon sword.”

Xiao Yan’s face was dejected and he nodded his head. This is the reality, he has to accept it.

Lin Feng continued saying: “This is your destined good fortune, continue to carry this sword with you. Consider it as for self-defense, although unless absolutely necessary do not carelessly use it.” Pausing for a moment, Lin Feng’s expression became serious: “The Radiant Evil of Purgatory is ranked as one of the seven great true flames. Its domineering power knows no bounds and it is very profound, it can even be considered a form of life that possesses self-awareness.”

“Your cultivation level has yet to reach a sufficient level. By blindly controlling the true flame, the final result could very likely be not the person controlling the flame, but the flame controlling the person, turning you into a fire slave who has lost his self conscious. You must beware!”

Xiao Yan straightened his expression and said respectfully: “As Master teaches.”

Lin Feng nodded his head and observed Xiao Yan’s complexion. Even though it was still a bit pale from loss of blood and qi, all of his injuries have amazingly already fully healed. He just has to rest for a few days and he can immediately recover back to normal. The Great Thunder Revival Pill’s healing effect towards bodily injuries truly lives up to its name.

“Xiao Yan’s injury has already recovered, the matter of completing the side quests can also be brought forward. Earning the rewards to exchange for dao techniques and then completing the main quest.” Lin Feng pondered, but how can he complete both of the two side quests within the allotted time?

Does he have to make a choice?

Lin Feng looked at his four disciples who were playing together and hanging around the Tyrant Sword of Radiant Evil. A thought suddenly appeared in his heart.

“I remember that there are still some explanations for the disciple system that I haven’t closely looked at yet.” Lin Feng hurriedly entered into the disciple system.

Reading the couple of explanations for the disciple system one by one, Lin Feng instantly laughed when he saw one of them.

When the master has something to do, the disciple does the work.

The host’s disciples can take the place of the host to complete the side quests issued by the system. The quest time-limit and conditions do not change. When the quest is successfully completed, the host will obtain the quest rewards as normal.

Lin Feng took out the Flowing Wind Sigil and said smilingly towards Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian: “Even though you guys

suffered a bit, you three did well this time. You guys already have the ability to stand on your own, but you guys still require training.”

“I just so happen to have something for you guys to go do, just consider it as training.”

Lin Feng handed the Flowing Wind Sigil over to Zhu Yi: “This Flowing Wind Sigil can let you guys ride on the wind. 5000 kilometers west from here there is a great intersecting mountain range. At the eastern foothill of the mountain range there is a lake called the Wind & Thunder Sea.”

“There is a Thunder Element Sigil that is a pair with this Flowing Wind Sigil. I discovered that the Thunder Element Sigil is right in the Wind & Thunder Sea in the great intersecting mountain range.” Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and Xiao Budian: “You three go together and retrieve that Thunder Element Sigil. Take care of each other on the road and be alert. If you guys can’t find the sigil don’t feel dejected, take care of safety.”

Xiao Yan and the other two looked at each other, a light of excitement was revealed in all of their eyes.

Before Lin Feng wasn’t around and they took the liberty of leaving Mount Heng and going to Chuzhou City. In the end they nearly suffered big time.

But young people are always full of drive. Suffering once is not enough to wear away their courage and daring spirits. Instead the

three people were all filled with strength, determined that this time they will definitely succeed splendidly.

The road may be far and they don't have the Black Cloud Flag, but with the Flowing Wind Sigil as transportation, at the very least the journey won't be a problem.

Lin Feng also respectively handed the storage bags of Hui Kong, Hui Ku and Elder Vulture over to the three of them. With the storage bag that has opened up an independent space, it is easy for Xiao Yan to carry the Tyrant Sword of Radiant Evil again.

When he wants to train himself he can travel while carrying the big sword. When he doesn't want to carry it anymore he can directly throw it into the storage bag. Due to being in an independent space, no weight can be felt at all so he doesn't need to miserably carry it around the whole time anymore.

Sending away Xiao Yan and the other two, Lin Feng turned around looking towards Wang Lin beside him.

Wang Lin was also eagerly staring at his master.

Lin Feng smiled: "Wang Lin, you just entered under my teaching. For this period of time follow beside me and learn dao techniques. Right now I also have a place to go so you also have the opportunity to hone yourself by following me."

Finishing speaking, Lin Feng waved the Black Cloud Flag. He

wrapped up himself and Wang Lin and flew towards the Ancient Word Marsh in the far east.

Chapter 83: Ancient World Marsh

The Ancient World Marsh is in the southeast area of the continent. Originally it was an undeveloped wilderness, the surrounding thousands of kilometers were all marshland. All kinds of monsters and poisonous plants were spread out all across it. Dense clouds darkened the skies of the marsh and not a single ray of sunlight shone upon it all year round. Yet, the traces of various cultivators regularly appeared in this kind of place, collecting herbs for alchemy or capturing monsters to control or refine. For cultivators, the Ancient World Marsh is undoubtedly a god gifted natural treasure house. It truly is endless and inexhaustible, those with good luck might even encounter an unexpected surprise.

Although, the Ancient World Marsh is truly too vast. So many people are like a drop in the ocean, even when there are rare encounters things often remain peaceful.

The inside of the marsh is filled with miasma that lingers all year round. It has already settled in for over 10000 years of time, severely disturbing the spiritual energy flow here. It is a hundred times more complicated than the Black Cloud Underground Palace suppressing the Netherworld Blood River underground.

Don't mention foundation establishment stage and aurous core stage cultivators, even if a nascent soul stage old monster came in it would still be very difficult for him to discover the tracks of others.

It's precisely because of this that Lin Feng dares to swagger on into the marsh.

Afterall, strictly speaking the Ancient World Marsh belongs to the Great Zhou Dynasty's territory.

Lin Feng just took out the House of the Marquis of Xuanji's second steward and then is now barging into their backyard. Without the Ancient World Marsh's special topography, he can just wait to be hunted down.

But this kind of complex topography has undoubtedly also greatly increased Lin Feng's difficulty of finding the galactic sand. Blindly looking for it is no different from from looking for a needle in the sea. (TL: Chinese version of looking for needle in a haystack, the Chinese have it much harder,)

"The system only mentioned that the Ancient World Marsh produces galactic sand, but it didn't have the specific location. How should I look for it?" Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and descended from the sky.

What entered the eyes was all swamp and quagmire. Some pulsed with bubbles while some looked ordinary, but they were actually even more dangerous. Unsuspecting people who set their foot down don't need to think of coming back up anymore.

Lin Feng carefully distinguished the area and landed on a relatively dry piece of land. He stared at the thousand kilometer marshland before him and also couldn't help but feel a bit worried.

Wang Lin's expression was also down, he asked: "Master, how

should we search for the galactic sand?”

“I also want to know.” Lin Feng laughed helplessly in his heart, but on the surface he didn’t reveal any signs. He said calm and composed “Searching for the galactic sand is but a small matter. What’s more important about this trip is to train you well.”

Lin Feng turned his head looking at Wang Lin. He said slowly: “You should also know that your bone root and talent are not outstanding.”

Wang Lin lowered his head. His master’s words have already shown consideration for his pride. He also knows that his bone root is far more than not outstanding, it’s practically terrible, even worse than a regular person.

That’s why since entering under Lin Feng’s teaching, Wang Lin has always been training with great diligence. Under the help of the Netherworld Bead he has had a certain degree of success, but compared to the speed of Xiao Yan and the other two who virtually have a new look everyday, his improvement is virtually small enough to be negligible.

Being apprentice-brothers with these three monsters, Wang Lin’s pressure is even great than when he was in the Mount Heng School. Even with his unwavering mind, his confidence was dealt a big blow. He could only work even harder.

Lin Feng said: “It is precisely because of this that I want you to receive even more polishing and training.”

“You have very good potential. You are a good piece of jade, but you need even more polishing than the average person to be able to let you glow with amazing splendor. Maybe all of this polishing will make you suffer a lot.” Lin Feng said word by word: “I believe that you will ultimately succeed.”

Wang Lin’s heart warmed and he nodded his head: “I will definitely work hard, I will not disappoint Master’s expectations.”

Lin Feng nodded his head in contentment. He pointed at the endless marshland before them: “This Ancient World Marsh is your first training location. No doubt looking for galactic sand here is beset with difficulties, but you must remember that galactic sand is just an incidental goal. The key is that you must learn from the experience and hone yourself.”

“Your other three apprentice-brothers have been with me for a long time already. They have the ability to protect themselves so I let them out to train. At the moment your strength is insufficient, so this time I am following beside you to protect you.” Lin Feng continued saying: “Training is not getting yourself killed. If there really is danger I will naturally come forward, but other matters, including searching for galactic sand all have to be dealt with by yourself. Only like this can there be a training effect.”

“Do you understand?”

Wang Lin bowed saying: “I understand, rest assured Master.”

Successfully bamboozling Wang Lin, Lin Feng's faces revealed a pleased smile.

The Wang Lin of now may be far from amounting to anything and searching for galactic sand in this vast marshland mainly still depends on Lin Feng himself, but he believes that Wang Lin's blessing of 8 will also be great help.

At the very least it won't let him return empty handed, right?

Not to mention his words just now were not just for show. Compared to the other three Wang Lin is limited by his bone root of only 5. The initial stage of his cultivation will be extremely difficult. Even though he has a will of 10 to support himself, as his master Lin Feng also has to regularly encourage him.

This is beneficial to deepening the relationship between the master and disciple and at the same time building up his glorious image in his disciple's heart.

Thus, the method of searching became Wang Lin carefully scouting out the path in front step by step while Lin Feng followed behind pretending to be profound.

But Lin Feng wasn't completely idle either. The spiritual energy in the marshland may be chaotic, but he can still vaguely sense it in close distances.

"Hm? This mana fluctuation... A foundation establishment stage

cultivator?” While walking, Lin Feng suddenly sensed a strong mana fluctuation right nearby him.

After having seen nascent soul stage old monsters and auras core stage cultivators, foundation establishment stage cultivators can no longer attract Lin Feng’s attention. Even though compared to them, Lin Feng who is currently only at the great circle of perfection of the qi disciple stage is still greatly behind in terms of mana and it is the difference between the river and the sea.

But with Lin Feng’s current strength, the majority of foundation establishment stage cultivators really aren’t anything to him. Unless the person also possesses a powerful magic item or trump card.

“Besides one foundation establishment stage cultivator there are also a couple of qi disciple stages.”

Quietly sensing for a moment, Lin Feng had a good idea in his heart. He secretly transmitted his voice to Wang Lin: “Little Lin, another few hundred meters forward and you will encounter a foundation establishment stage cultivator and a couple of qi disciple stage cultivators. I will not appear, if something happens you deal with it yourself.”

“Communicating and interacting with others is also a form of training.”

Hearing this Wang Lin nodded his head.

Lin Feng slowed down his speed and became increasingly further from Wang Lin. Miasma is heavy in the marsh and heavily affects the vision. If Lin Feng doesn't use his mana, with the concealment of the system there isn't anyone who can discover him from far away.

Both sides have already gotten very close. The fog spread apart revealing the figures of four people.

The one who attracted Lin Feng's attention first was definitely the linen-robed middle-aged man amongst them, because he is the foundation establishment stage cultivator that Lin Feng sensed before.

This person is tall and skinny, he's practically like a bamboo pole propping up the linen robe.

In addition there are also two youths wearing tight uniforms and they both have qi disciple stage cultivation level. Them two and that linen-robed middle aged man are gathered around a fine-clothed youth.

The fine-clothed youth may only have qi disciple stage cultivation level, but he is clearly the leader of the group. Looking at his demeanor, Lin Feng knows that this kid is a legendary X second generation. That linen-robed middle-aged man should be sent by his family to protect him. (TL: The Chinese call the children of someone with a special characteristic the X second generation. So a rich kid would be a rich second generation, the child of a government official is a government official second generation and you get the point. Of course, this is just direct

translation. Although this term is more commonly used as a derogatory term describing kids who abuse their status or their parent's power.)

Right now the fine-clothed youth had a stumped expression: "If I'd known earlier that the Ancient World Marsh is so boring I wouldn't have come in."

One of the followers behind him smiled kissing up to him: "Young Master, the reason we came in this time is mainly to earn merits."

The fine-clothed youth said impatiently: "I know, do I need you to tell me? 3000 elite Shenwu Soldiers coming in to capture rebels. So many people to split merits but there are only so many rebels. How much can I get?"

"3000 Shenwu Soldiers, capturing rebels?" Lin Feng who was hidden far away heard their conversation and a thought appeared in his mind: "Looks like there were people resisting against the Great Zhou Dynasty's rule, and after they failed they escaped into the Ancient World Marsh, hoping to use the natural defense of the marsh to evade their pursuers."

The linen-robed middle-aged man's skinny face revealed a light smile: "Young Master Xue, there may be a lot of people who have entered this time, but the Ancient World Marsh's terrain is inherently limited. The number of people who can benefit are after all the minority."

Towards the linen-robed middle-aged man, the fine-clothed youth Xue Chao still maintained a degree of respect. He nodded his head: “Mister Ma speaks the truth.” (TL: The Ma of this guy’s name is the same character for linen.)

Mister Ma continued saying: “Moreover there are also their families and children who followed those rebels into the Ancient World Marsh this time. These people are very easy to capture, they’re virtually free merits.”

Xue Chao felt reinvigorated: “Exactly so.”

They were using mana to transmit their voices the whole time, but they didn’t know that everything was heard by Lin Feng who was at the side. Only after finishing their chat did they have the interest to go in front of Wang Lin and get a look of him.

Wang Lin brought his fists together: “My name is Wang Lin, greetings seniors.”

“Qi disciple level 2 only?” Xue Chao rolled his eyes and turned his head not even looking at Wang Lin. Mister Ma who was as skinny as a bamboo pole also didn’t have the interest to speak. One of the youths in a tight uniform smiled asking: “You dare to enter into the Ancient World Marsh with your mere cultivation level of qi disciple level 2, you’ve got big balls.”

Wang Lin answered with grace: “I came here to train under my master’s orders. I am looking for something called galactic sand. Have any of you heard of this item before? If you can tell me I will

be deeply grateful.”

Just finishing speaking, Wang Lin noticed in astoundment that the expressions of the four people across from him all changed. Their eyes stared straight at him.

The tight-uniformed youth who questioned him before continued asking: “You’re looking for galactic sand?”

Seeing this, Lin Feng who was in the shadows slightly furrowed his brows. Wang Lin also felt that something was a bit off. He carefully responded: “That’s right.”

Hearing this, that fine-clothed youth Xue Chao waved his hand.

“Take this person down first!”

Chapter 84: If The Snake Does Not Die

“You’re looking for galactic sand?”

“That’s right.”

Hearing Wang Lin answer like so, Xue Chao waved his hand without demur: “Capture this kid first.”

Wang Lin’s heart sank. He never could have thought that the opposite party would want to do him harm after just saying two lines.

Could it be that these people are also searching for galactic sand?

Wang Lin was baffled, but he didn’t have the spare time to dwell on it. A tight-uniformed youth behind Xue Chao was already heading towards him.

He released his mana fluctuations without any concealment. Even Wang Lin can determine that this is an enemy he is entirely unable to beat.

Qi disciple level 8.

10 of Wang Lin who is at qi disciple level 2 aren’t even a match for a qi disciple level 8 cultivator. The gap in cultivation level between the two parties is honestly too great.

Seeing Lin Feng not have any movement behind him, Wang Lin thought: “Does Master want to test me?”

Wang Lin pulled himself together and looked calmly at the tight-uniformed youth walk over with a careless face. He clearly also doesn't think that a little qi disciple level 2 cultivator can pose a threat to him.

This person's attitude instead aroused the fighting spirit in Wang Lin's heart: “Whether or not I can beat him is one thing, having the courage to fight is another.”

Thinking here, Wang Lin kept calm and quietly watched the opponent draw near.

Seeing Wang Lin appear as if to be scared dumb and not moving at all, the tight-uniformed youth laughed saying: “If you're smart you won't need to suffer.”

Finishing speaking, he extended his hand and grabbed at the air. His mana turned into an invisible big hand, shadowing over Wang Lin.

In an instant, the surrounding air around Wang Lin's body all seemed to have frozen, crushing together towards Wang Lin and making it difficult for him to breath.

But Wang Lin was not scared and was instead delighted, because

he has seen that his opponent is completely unconcerned with him. He didn't even use any spells with this grab, he just simply used his own mana to capture Wang Lin.

His movements are so carefree that there are openings and weak points everywhere over his body.

Wang Lin quietly inhaled a deep breath and still did not move recklessly. He silently awaited the enemy's invisible big hand formed by mana and watched as it already arrived in front of him.

The tight-uniformed youth relaxed his mind even more which makes sense. Don't mention that he has foundation establishment stage Mister Ma holding the line on his side, even without him a mere qi disciple level 2 kid can only obediently submit before him.

But right at this instant when his attitude was the most relaxed and careless, Wang Lin suddenly moved.

Right when the giant mana hand was about to grab him, Wang Lin suddenly stepped forward and extended his arms.

Wang Lin's left hand formed a spell sign while his right index finger pointed out, directed straight at the tight-uniformed youth.

The tight-uniformed youth was stunned and he saw an extremely thin sliver of black air shoot out from Wang Lin's right index finger, straightening into a thread and shooting towards him.

This black thread was like a knife cutting through tofu, easily piercing through the giant invisible hand formed by the tight-uniformed youth's mana. The condensed mana did not cause any obstruction to the black thread and it let the black thread pass through without any resistance.

In the time that this tight-uniformed youth was slightly dazed, this black thread had already arrived in front of him.

Seeing this, Lin Feng who was in the back immediately started to laugh silently.

The reason he purposely didn't appear is indeed because he wants to observe Wang Lin's overall performance when encountering trouble.

The result made Lin Feng extremely pleased.

The opposite party suddenly turned hostile and Wang Lin was surprised but did not fall into a panic. Facing an opponent much more powerful than himself, he calmly seized the opportunity and suddenly attacked right when the enemy was the least vigilant.

Finger of Hades, a skill derived from the Netherworld Nirvana Manual. After Lin Feng taught it to him Wang Lin has clearly also practised it diligently.

Pointing with his finger, the mana mixed with the aura of the True Netherworld Water condenses into a thread that is virtually

capable of destroying anything. The opponent's qi disciple level 8 mana cultivation level may be greatly superior to Wang Lin, but the True Netherworld Water performed its special effect of purifying the mana of others and directly pierced through the opponent's giant mana hand.

Looking at the tight-uniformed youth's stunned face, Wang Lin's heart quivered. Although his reaction was calm, this is after all his first time fighting with someone.

Thinking of the result that he could possibly kill this person, Wang Lin couldn't help but slightly hesitate.

With just this slight hesitation, the black thread formed by the mana of the Finger of Hades instantly trembled and became not so stable.

Lin Feng wrinkled his forehead and called out crap in his heart.

While in the opposing group, Mister Ma's eyebrows shook and he relaxed his heart.

Sure enough, the black thread slightly quivered and its speed slowed down a bit.

The tight-uniformed youth had already reacted over and just barely crooked his head, dodging Wang Lin's Finger of Hades.

Xue Chao and his other follower were dazed for a moment and

their faces revealed an expression of interest. Evidently they also didn't think that the tight-uniformed youth would nearly screw up.

Mister Ma's gaze fell upon Wang Lin.

He is after all a foundation establishment stage cultivator, his sensitivity towards mana fluctuations is far superior to qi disciple stage cultivators. Even though at first he also didn't think that Wang Lin had the balls to resist, but right when Wang Lin moved he already perceived it.

Mister Ma also didn't think that Wang Lin's Finger of Hades spell would actually be so domineering. No matter how careless that tight-uniformed youth was, he ultimately has a cultivation level of qi disciple level 8. He is far greater than Wang Lin, who would have that he would have his defense directly broken by Wang Lin.

The difference in level between the two people is honestly too great. Besides the tight-uniformed youth's carelessness, the subtleties and dominance of Wang Lin's spell was also an important factor in making up for this..

Mister Ma started to become interested in Wang Lin.

On the other hand, Lin Feng sighed and thought: "Even though he's destined to mature into decisive main character, this is after all his first time fighting with someone. It's impossible for him to be as cold-blooded as a machine."

Even though he evaded Wang Lin's Finger of Hades, the tight-uniformed youth still felt embarrassed. His entire face instantly turned red and he glared at Wang Lin. He was truly angered by Wang Lin.

The tight-uniformed youth clapped his hands together. The mist in the air rapidly gathered towards him, turning into a savage water dragon in front of his chest and then clawing towards Wang Lin.

Right now Wang Lin was also regretful in his heart. His momentaneous hesitation resulted in him not beating the snake to death, and now the snake is about to bite back.

“Show no mercy when you attack, attack not when you show mercy. If I fight again in the future I must use my full power, I absolutely cannot give the enemy the chance to retaliate.

Wang Lin's face was dark and he made up his mind.

Facing the enemy's fierce spell, Wang Lin was not fearful. His hands formed a spell sign and his mind communicated with the Netherworld Bead.

Even with all of the treasures in Lin Feng's hands, there isn't a single won that can match the wonders of the Netherworld Bead. Of all of the treasures that he has come in contact with, maybe only the Tyrant Sword of Radiant Evil can battle it. But this item has been greatly damaged and a lot of its power cannot be unleashed.

Moreover, with Wang Lin's current cultivation level he cannot exert even 1/100000s of the Netherworld Bead's power. But he has refined this treasure using his blood and has also practised the Netherworld Nirvana Manual. He can already control the Netherworld Bead with some difficulty.

The enemy just so happens to be using a water class spell. True Netherworld Water is ranked amongst the six great true waters, the sovereigns of water. It also seems to have been angered by this water dragon baring its fangs in front of it.

Following Wang Lin's thought, the Netherworld Bead slowly flew up, emitting a pale yellow light in the air.

Upon coming in contact with the yellow light, the water dragon instantly fell apart.

The tight-uniformed youth was dumbfounded.

Xue Chao was also dazed. Looking at the Netherworld Bead again his eyes instantly revealed a colour of greed and desire.

Chapter 85: Don't Want To Bully Kids

The appearance of the Netherworld Bead instantly shattered the enemy's water class spell.

Xue Chao wrinkled his forehead and then relaxed it. His eyes revealed a look of greed: "Mister Ma, I want this treasure. Please get it for me, there will naturally be a generous gift afterwards."

Mister Ma who was like a thin bamboo pole sized up Wang Lin and then looked at the Netherworld Bead.

"I don't want to bully a kid. Young Master Xue, you can capture this kid on your own, I will help you hold back this treasure of his. Young Master, you have the perfect chance to show off your skills."

Hearing Mister Ma's words, Xue Chao laughed out loud: "With your word I can relax."

Finishing speaking, Xue Chao suddenly opened his mouth and spat out a trail of white smoke: "Go!"

The white smoke drifted and flew towards Wang Lin. It looked slow but in reality it had already arrived in front of Wang Lin in the blink of an eye.

Wang Lin's face was calm and he attentively controlled the Netherworld Bead. The Netherworld Bead burst with light. Upon

coming in contact with the pale yellow light, the white smoke stopped moving forward and was unable to overstep the boundary.

At this moment Mister Ma released a dry cough: “Rise!” Before his voice died away, countless vines grew beneath Wang Lin’s feet, wobbling and binding towards Wang Lin.

Wang Lin was startled. The mystical light of the Netherworld Bead shone towards the dense vines under his feet. Being illuminated by the Netherworld Mystic Light, the vines all withered in succession.

But new vines endlessly emerged from the ground. The rate of growth was even greater than the speed of withering and the number of vines was becoming increasingly greater.

Seeing Mister Ma’s spell tie down the Netherworld Bead, Xue Chao was complacent. He laughed out loud: “Such a treasure is a waste in your hands. Give it to me!”

While speaking the white smoke once again surged towards the Netherworld Bead.

Wang Lin pressed his lips tightly together. His left hand formed a spell sign in front of his chest and his right index finger pointed towards the white smoke.

A black thread shot straight towards Xue Chao’s white smoke.

Xue Chao sneered: “You little shithead, you really think you’re all that?”

Witnessing the power of Wang Lin’s Finger of Hades from before, Xue Chao was already more vigilant. He himself has a cultivation level of qi disciple level 10, moreover with this attack he did not hold back at all.

The Finger of Hades’ mana may still be able to purify and break the white smoke, but the white smoke is incredibly condensed. Only 10-20% of it was purified by Wang Lin’s attack.

Wang Lin’s face was slightly pale. For the current him, the Finger of Hades is extremely mana heavy. For him who is at qi disciple level 2, his mana is truly not abundant.

Xue Chao laughed out loud: “This treasure is mine now.” While speaking, the white smoke was already about to wrap up the Netherworld Bead.

At this moment, a beam of golden buddhist light suddenly lit up, protecting the Netherworld Bead. When the white smoke touched the buddhist light it was immediately unable to advance another step.

The buddhist light turned into a glistening “卐” character pattern. While it turned, it had already deflected Xue Chao’s white smoke to the side and it was unable to pose any threat to the Netherworld Bead anymore.

In the mist, Lin Feng slowly stepped out of it. He carried himself with grace, wearing a wide-sleeved white robe and daoist clothing. He had the demeanor of a sagely master.

Wang Lin instantly breathed a sigh of relief: “Master.”

Lin Feng nodded his head not speaking. Currently he was pondering over the Little Samsara Techniques spell that he just used: “Even though I have the ability analyzer tool allowing me to grasp a spell within a short period of time, if I want to use the spell skillfully I still need to practise more.”

“The best is to fight with people in actual combat. Using it just now I obtained a better understanding.”

While pondering, Lin Feng looked towards Xue Chao and co. He thought: “I’ve got to ask clearly why they turned hostile upon hearing galactic sand. Maybe they know the location of galactic sand?”

Thinking this, Lin Feng asked: You guys know the location of galactic sand?”

But Xue Chao and co. did not answer, instead they all stared at Lin Feng and Wang Lin with a weird look on their faces.

Lin Feng was puzzled in his heart: “Did I wear the wrong clothes? Nothing’s wrong, these are the clothes.”

On the other side, Xue Chao suddenly burst with laughter and was laughing his head off.

He sneered saying: “A mere qi disciple great circle of perfection cultivator actually dares to put on a charade in front of me. It truly is hilarious.”

He stared at Lin Feng and snorted coldly saying: “You’ve got some kind of treasure on your body that can hide your own cultivation level, right? If you didn’t do anything I still wouldn’t be able to see through your depths, but your spell just now completely betrayed you.”

Mister Ma also shook his head in laughter: “You dress as a daoist but you use buddhist spells. So mixed and impure, you are presumably a wandering cultivator?”

The smile on his skinny face gradually faded: “A wandering cultivator with no school or sect and your cultivation level is only just qi disciple level 12. Who gave you the balls to be speaking with such impudence!”

Hearing this Lin Feng was speechless. Beside him Wang Lin looked at Xue Chao and co. with the face of looking at a bunch of idiots.

That tight-uniformed youth who was careless before and nearly screwed up losing to Wang Lin was glaring at Wang Lin the whole time. Seeing Wang Lin’s expression right now he became even more angered. He said coldly: “Ignorant little bastard, this is your

master? You're fucking blind, you think a qi disciple level 12 wandering cultivator can protect you. Take a look at who you've messed with!"

The other tight-uniformed youth smiled saying: "This is our young master, Xue Chao, the legitimate son of the Great Zhou Dynasty's Xue clan. But I wonder if a wild cultivator like you has heard of us before?"

Lin Feng's expression was calm and he chuckled: "I've only heard before that the Great Qin Dynasty has four great clans. As for the Great Zhou Dynasty, well, there were indeed a number of old cultivation families before. There was something to look at, but in recent years the Zhou Dynasty's royal authority has been unprecedentedly centralized. The majority of so-called old families have all vanished."

"The Xue clan? Never heard of it, a new upstart family?"

Xue Chao's expression turned cold: "Just based on your words, don't think of leaving this place alive."

Beside him, Mister Ma looked at Lin Feng. He shook his head with a face of pity: "You still dare to spout nonsense here, you truly do not know where you stand." While speaking, he released his vast mana without any concealment, fully exhibiting his foundation establishment stage cultivation level.

"Young Master Xue, like I said, I don't want to bully kids. A little qi disciple stage bug is not worth it for me to dispose of." Mister

Ma smiled lightly saying: “This person is so arrogant, he might have some cards up his sleeves. But you don’t need to worry, attack without any hesitation. Whatever cards he has up his sleeves, I will take care of them.”

Xue Chao smiled coldly: “So what if he has something up his sleeves? 3000 of our Zhou Dynasty’s Shenwu Army elites are currently all in the Ancient World Marsh. General Xie is right around here, what can he do?”

“This person is of unknown origin. Even though he dresses as a daoist, his spell is of the buddhist path. He could very likely be a remnant of the Great Thunder Monastery.” Xue Chao said sinisterly: “Capturing such a remnant rebel also happens to be a merit.”

“By the laws of the Zhou Dynasty, all rebels and those who resist arrest must be killed with no pardon!”

Speaking here, Xue Chao clapped his hands together and a sword flew out from his back. It shimmered with light and was astoundingly a foundation establishment stage sword. It arced through the air and circled above Lin Feng.

Xue Chao said coldly: “Get on your knees now and surrender. Offer up that orb and I can just cripple your cultivation prowess and spare your life.”

The two tight-uniformed youths behind him exchanged looks and both started laughing: “This guy dares to put on airs in front

of Young Master, he truly is an idiot.”

“Even if he has something up his sleeves, how can he be a match for foundation establishment stage Mister Ma? Stepping on him is like crushing a bug for Mister Ma.”

“Even without Mister Ma he’s still as good as dead. Young Master still has a trump card that he hasn’t used.”

Hearing the chatter on the other side and then looking at the flying sword circling above his head, Lin Feng was a bit speechless for a moment.

He brushed his sleeves and had an indifferent look.

“I don’t wish to bully kids. You are qi disciple stage so when I made my move before I also only used qi disciple stage cultivation level. I did not expect that I would actually be looked down upon by you kids.”

Lin Feng slightly raised his eyes and his gaze turned cold: “Do you know how you’ll end up using a sword in front of me?”

Chapter 86: If I Use Aurous Core Stage Strength, Consider It Me Bullying You Guys

“Do you know the consequences of using a sword in front of me?”

Lin Feng said lightly.

Hearing this Xue Chao was surprised for a moment and then couldn't help laughing: “Seems like you've gone crazy you daoist, who do you think you are?”

Closely afterwards he smiled cruelly: “A piece of trash like you has no use living in this world. That being the case I'll send you on your way right now!” While speaking, he controlled the flying sword to chop down towards Lin Feng's head.

But Lin Feng didn't even look at the flying sword above his head, instead he looked at skinny bamboo pole-like Mister Ma and asked calmly: “Foundation establishment stage, you have the highest cultivation level out of all of you guys here?”

Mister Ma slightly wrinkled his forehead: “Heretic, you truly do not know the immensity of heaven and earth. Still spouting nonsense here at this kind of time?”

Lin Feng chuckled: “Forget it, I still will not bully a bunch of kids.”

“Even using auras core stage strength is bullying you guys.”

Before his voice died away, dazzling buddhist light charged up into the sky, directly knocking away Xue Chao’s sword that was chopping downward.

In the dumbfound eyes of Xue Chao and co, clouds of golden haze enveloped the surrounding 100 feet of marshland. The miasma fog originally in the marsh all disappeared and the rotten stench was also replaced by waves of sandalwood.

In the light haze, buddhist chanting rang beside the ears. It was precisely the 24 Heavens Arhat Formation.

In the buddhist chanting, 24 golden arhats strode out from the light haze. 24 100 foot tall arhat light figures formed a forest of giants, standing in a circle and surrounding Xue Chao and co in the center.

Every single golden arhat revealed foundation establishment stage mana fluctuations. The mana of the the 24 arhats connected together as one was truly as limitless as the sky and ocean.

Xue Chao and co. who were aggressively surrounded by this kind of line-up instantly felt pressure as big as a mountain.

That foundation establishment stage spellword of Xue Chao’s was constrained in mid-air by buddhist light. It was like a fish in the desert, no matter how much it flailed around it was unable to

move.

“This... How is this possible?” Xue Chao and the other two were stunned and unable to speak. Mister Ma’s face was also pale, he opened his mouth with difficulty saying: “Fellow daoist... No, Senior, please put away your skill, there might be some misunderstandings here.”

A freaking massive misunderstanding!

None of them thought beforehand that Lin Feng who looked to only have a cultivation level of the great circle of perfection of qi disciple could actually use such a terrifying skill. Isn’t this a misunderstanding?

Lin Feng’s voice travelled out from the golden buddhist light, it was very ethereal and grand.

“Misunderstanding? You guys made trouble for my disciple and recklessly took up arms in front of me. The facts are all here, I didn’t misunderstand at all.”

Mister Ma was already about to cry. He bit his teeth: “I am Ma Wu, a disciple of the Blue Rose Temple on Mount Evergreen. I had eyes but failed to see Mt. Tai and caused offense to you. My master is Progenitor Flower Vine, please give some face and forgive my affront just now.”

Seeing his bodyguard Ma Wu actually go and ask for Lin Feng’s

forgiveness, Xue Chao's eyes instantly turned red and he roared in anger: "General Xie and the army are right around here, why be scared of him?"

Even using every single ounce of strength he had he was still unable to call back his flying sword. He was instantly anxious, he took out a talisman from his clothes and hastily launched it towards the golden arhats.

Ma Wu's face turned green and he wished that he could slap this playboy to death.

No matter how many helpers there are around here, if they can't defeat Lin Feng and die first, at that time it will be useless no matter who comes.

The talisman exploded within the buddhist light formation, turning into balls of fire that constantly exploded. Even the billowing buddhist light golden haze was blasted open.

Blazing flames dashed to the sky and the tyrannical flames swept over with the force to burn the sky and boil the sea. The golden arhats also all retreated backwards. Under the assault of the blazing fire, their bodies made of light even became a bit unstable, as if they were about to shatter at any moment.

Ma Wu's eyes instantly lit up: "Aurous core talisman?"

This talisman that Xue Chao threw out was astoundingly an

aurous core talisman. This was specially made by a powerful elder in his clan for him to protect himself. It is equivalent to the attack of a powerful aurous core stage cultivator and is Xue Chao's final ace.

“Fight a path out and then when we draw the army over, even if he is an aurous core or nascent soul old monster it is still certain death for him!” Xue Chao's face was twisted and the two followers behind him all echoed in response upon hearing him.

Seeing an aurous core talisman carving out a path, Ma Wu's thoughts also livened up. If he doesn't need to grovel on his knees of course he doesn't want to either.

Ma Wu's two hands instantly formed a spell sign. He opened his mouth and spit out a plant seed. Under the stimulation of Ma Wu's mana, the seed rapidly sprouted and grew in the air, turning into a seedling.

The leaves of the seedling were clear and a rich green. It looked very pure and fresh, but the green circles of light that emitted around the seedling revealed a terrifying mana fluctuation.

Where the green light passed, the golden buddhist light in the 24 Heavens Arhat Formation all gradually vanished.

Originally the buddhist light formation was already a bit unstable after sustaining the bombardment of the aurous core talisman. Now with Ma Wu's followup attack it has become even more precarious.

Seeing this, Ma Wu couldn't help saying with a smile: "Fellow daoist, if you are willing to leave now we'll forget about everything from before. What do you say?"

Xue Chao snorted: "As if, I think this daoist is just a pewter spearhead that shines like silver. He looks good but he's useless, he's just relying on this formation that he picked up from god knows where to put on a charade. Once we break this formation I'll show him who's boss."

Ma Wu didn't care about his words. He let Xue Chao play the bad cop while he played the good cop: "Fellow daoist, if you don't turn away now, Young Master Xue is not going to let things go with you. At that time it will be too late for you to regret."

Lin Feng's chuckling travelled over from the within the buddhist light: "Exactly who will regret when it's too late?"

"An aurous core talisman, hehe, so what if it's an aurous core talisman?" Lin Feng smiled saying: "I said before that it would be bullying you guys if I used even aurous core stage strength."

Finishing speaking, the situation in the 24 Heavens Arhat Formation suddenly changed. Three of the arhats amongst the 24 golden arhat suddenly burned up with blazing flames.

The remaining arhats respectively guarded the three flaming arhats in groups of seven. Their pure buddhist mana was endlessly supplied to the flaming arhats.

The three flaming arhats chanted a buddhist prayer together. Fire charged up into the sky, connecting together in the air above their heads and turning into a boundless sea of fire.

The sea of fire rumbled and even the entire buddhist light formation shook for a moment.

Xue Chao and co. who were at the qi disciple stage didn't really have a clear feeling, but foundation establishment stage Mister Ma clearly felt that there seemed to be something terrifying about to be born in the sea of fire.

The next moment, a golden buddha with four faces, eight arms and an angry expression slowly rose up from the sea of fire. There was a closed vertical eye between the brows of the buddha.

The milky white Fury Flames of Acala shot out from the vertical eye between the buddha's brows, landing on the blazing flames created by the aurous core talisman.

“Boom!”

They are both flames, but the blazing fire created by Xue Chao's talisman seemed to have become the fuel for the Fury Flames of Acala. In just a short instant, the red fire completely died out and turned into a boundless white sea of fire!

The Fury Flames of Acala are this domineering, even other

flames will be burned to nothingness by it!

Ma Wu watched with a face of despair at the little sapling he brought out get surrounded by the white sea of fire. He wanted to take it back but was unable to do so and it was instantly burnt to ashes.

“No!” His soulbound magic item being destroyed, Ma Wu spit out a mouthful of blood. He collapsed to the ground and in the next instant he was surrounded by the sea of fire, turning into a flaming person while screaming.

The remaining three people didn't even have the room to struggle and were devoured by the sea of fire.

“Why exactly did I mess with this kind of fiend?” This was the last thought in all of their minds, they really did regret when it was too late.

Watching this scene in front of him, Wang Lin had a vibrant look in his eyes.

Lin Feng suddenly came to his mind: “I can't burn them all, I still need to ask them about the matter of galactic sand.” Thinking here, he hurriedly retracted his Fury Flames of Acala ability and converted his mana to the Netherworld Nirvana Manual.

Of the four people, only Ma Wu with the highest cultivation level still luckily kept his life. But his body has already been burnt to a

crisp and only his soul remains.

Not waiting for him to rejoice that the fire was finally extinguished, his soul was captured by a stream of mana.

Ma Wu was instantly scared out of his wits. Lin Feng stared at him with a smiling face and used the Netherworld Puppeteer spell.

Chapter 87: Fiery Beauty

Inside the space of the Netherworld Bead, Ma Wu's soul had already completely become a semi-transparent pale yellow colour and was painfully struggling in the surging True Netherworld Water.

“My master will not forgive you!” Ma Wu roared with hatred.

Lin Feng chuckled: “I know, that nascent soul stage master of yours engraved a charm in your soul. As soon as you die and your soul dissipates he will immediately know. But I am not killing you right now, I wonder if he can know your current predicament?”

Ma Wu closed his eyes in despair. He never thought that he didn't die but is suffering a thousand times more than death.

Lin Feng smiled lightly: “Tell me now, how come you guys instantly turned hostile and attacked the moment my disciple asked you guys for information about galactic sand?”

Ma Wu swore to all of the gods and buddhas in the heavens that he absolutely did not want to answer Lin Feng's question, or just wanted to give an incorrect answer.

But the restraints of the Netherworld Puppeteer spell made him answer every question asked with the truth.

“The Society of the Strong Gale?” Lin Feng was indeed a bit

surprised. To think that galactic sand would actually be linked with the Society of the Strong Gale.

The Society of the Strong Gale is an anti-Zhou organization formed by the adherents of Snowgale who had their country destroyed by the Great Zhou Dynasty. Amongst the numerous anti-Zhou rule organizations they are quite active.

Half a year ago to take in Zhu Yi as his disciple, Lin Feng went to the Zhou Dynasty imperial city, Tianjing. There he once came in contact with the people of the Society of the Strong Gale. At that time to threaten the Marquis of Xuanji, they abducted Zhu Yi who is the bastard of the Marquis of Xuanji.

This time the reason the Great Zhou Dynasty dispatched their army into the Ancient World Marsh is to pursue a group of Society of the Strong Gale cultivators.

Galactic sand was once discovered on the bodies of cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale. This is why when Xue Chao and co. heard Wang Lin mention galactic sand, they wanted to capture him first without any second thought.

Lin Feng secretly frowned: "In the end I still don't know the exact location of galactic sand. In the vast marshland where do you want me to go to find those members of the Society of the Strong Gale.

Throwing the Netherworld Bead back to Wang Lin, Lin Feng said casually: "It's best to have a specific casting target to practise

spells. Use this kid to practise the Finger of Hades. But remember, don't kill him, I still have use for him."

Wang Lin heavily nodded his head while Ma Wu screamed: "I won't forgive you even if I become a ghost!"

Lin Feng was too lazy to bother with him. He shook the Black Cloud Flag and left with Wang Lin.

Since they mentioned that the Great Zhou Dynasty has an army right around here, the battle just now definitely startled them. Lin Feng naturally isn't stupid enough to remain on the spot and wait for the army to arrive.

Even if the marsh is covered with miasma, right now Lin Feng was still doing his best to expand his area of perception.

He wants to find out the members of the Society of the Strong Gale. They will not easily reveal their whereabouts. Only when the pursuers of the Zhou Dynasty catch up to them and a battle occurs can Lin Feng discover their location from the mana fluctuations that travel over.

Just like this Lin Feng wandered around for nearly half a month's time. At the same time as looking for the members of the Society of the Strong Gale, Lin Feng himself also did not give up on searching for galactic sand. But he still had no gains.

This day, Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag flying in the

miasma fog. Suddenly he sensed a wave of violent mana fluctuations not far away from him. There is a lot of commotion, clearly there are people fighting.

Lin Feng hurriedly put away the Black Cloud Flag and landed on the ground. He moved stealthily and drew near.

Getting closer, light flashed within the fog. A dozen human figures mingled together. As one fell another rose, the battle was in full swing.

Lin Feng used the Shadow Sneak Technique to hide his body and also has the system to hide his mana fluctuations. He quietly approached, the two sides in battle both did not notice that someone had snuck right beside them.

The number of people in the two opposing parties is not even. The side with more people has a whole dozen people surrounding and attacking three enemies.

These dozen people are all wearing shining magic armour. They emitted a faint glow in the fog that completely cut off the miasma. The cultivation level of these people may not be high, but they move with discipline and have strong teamwork, exerting power that transcends their cultivation level.

They held identical lightning blades in their hands that flashed with lightning and roared with thunder as they were swung, demonstrating remarkable lethality.

The dozen people vaguely formed a formation. They were coordinated with each other and their mana also had a trend of resonating and joining together. Matched with their armour and blades their fighting power was multiplied.

“This is the Great Zhou Dynasty’s Shenwu Army?” Lin Feng looked at these dozen people and his eyes narrowed into slits.

The Shenwu Army is the Great Zhou Dynasty’s elite force. Different from regular mundane armies, this Shenwu Army is supposedly comprised entirely of cultivators. The rebels that they’re capture are also definitely cultivators.

Different from the Great Qin Dynasty where the four great clans hold vast resources and a strong voice, under the combined effort of the Zhou emperor Liang Pan and the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu, the Great Zhou Dynasty’s royal authority is unprecedentedly concentrated. He has a bit of the grandiose of the ancient saint emperors and the majority of cultivators are also collected under the control of the royal authority.

Rumors say the the Shenwu Army is an an army that gathers the elite cultivators of all stages within the border of the Great Zhou Dynasty.

Being able to militarize cultivators who advocate freedom, on one side it is because the Zhou emperor and the Marquis of Xuanji have great ability, on the other it is also because the royal family can provide a large amount of cultivation resources to these cultivators. Thus cultivators from the Shenwu Army are all very powerful and they also advance their cultivation level very

quickly.

These past few years, the item crafting standard of the Great Zhou Dynasty has made great progress. Batch after batch of powerful magic items are created and then provided to the cultivators of the Shenwu Army, arming them to the teeth.

Generally speaking, with a difference of one stage such as a qi disciple stage cultivator facing a foundation establishment stage cultivator, unless the qi disciple stage cultivator has a powerful magic item or spell holding down the line, it is very difficult to pose a threat to the foundation establishment stage cultivator. Not even quantity is enough to make up for quality.

But the Shenwu Army's tacit coordination, strict discipline plus powerful equipment made all of this change.

A solitary foundation establishment stage cultivator being surrounded by a troop of Shenwu soldiers could very likely be killed on the spot.

Lin Feng observed closely, the three people surrounded by this troop of Shenwu soldiers were currently in a tight position with signs of danger appearing everywhere.

The cultivation levels of the three people are not actually weak. Out of two of them, one is qi disciple level 11 with a flying sword circling in the air, his swordsmanship is quite refined. The other person in particular is a cultivator at the great circle of perfection of the qi disciple stage.

But under the encirclement of a troop of Shenwu soldiers of which the person with the highest cultivation level is only qi disciple level 10, these two people are retreating one step after another.

If not for the third companion occasionally providing assistance, these two people would have already been killed.

Over half of Lin Feng's attention was placed on that third person. It's just that this person has flames rippling all over their body and he can't see their appearance.

All Lin Feng knows is that the person is a female. A female seemingly surrounded by fire, a female who is like fire herself!

A crimson red tight uniform over her body, red riding boots, red cloak, red hair like a cluster of blazing fire and the fire flickering within her eyes!

"She should only have a cultivation level of foundation establishment early stage and having her qi ocean opened, but her fighting ability is truly powerful." Lin Feng evaluated her strength in his heart and discovered this this red-clothed female is absolutely not an ordinary person.

Yet, this red-clothed female may be aggressive, but she does not dare to fight with full strength and instead has worries in her heart.

Because in the outer circle of the battle there still stood a middle-aged man. He wore the Dark Beast Black Light Armour that only field officer ranked officers in the Shenwu Army can wear. The surface of the armour flickered with a dark glow and the beast head on the chest was grim and ferocious.

This middle-aged officer's aura was a deep abyss and a lofty peak. His mana was immense and he was clearly a foundation establishment cultivator no less weaker than the red-clothed female.

Seeing her companions frequently fall into danger, the red-clothed female released a cold snort. She shook her arms and held up a pitch-black halberd.

Black light flickered over the halberd, mixing together with the fire around the female's body and turning into a red and black storm, sweeping out in all directions.

The troop of Shenwu Army cultivators all had grave expressions. They stood side by side, a dozen blinding-white lightning blades slashing down together. A dozen arcs of rolling lightning connected together as one, in the end turning into an enormous beam of blade aura and colliding with the red and black storm.

The dozen Shenwu Army cultivators all had pale faces. Even so their two legs were still firmly nailed to the ground. They were forcibly pushed sliding backwards, leaving dozens of deep tracks in the ground.

The red-clothed female wrinkled her forehead. The opposing side's commander has yet to make a move, just relying upon a troop of qi disciple stage cultivators working together is enough to take on her attack by brute force. This made her unable to relax at all.

At this moment the middle-aged field officer suddenly opened his mouth, his voice was like rolling thunder: "Yue Hongyan, put down your weapon and surrender. This is your only way out." (TL: 岳红炎, Yue Hong Yan. Family name means mountain, her name mean red flame.)

The fire circling around her gradually subsided. Only now did Lin Feng get a clear of the red-clothed female, Yue Hongyan's true appearance.

She was unexpectedly young, just a 15, 16 years old girl. She did not tie her hair and it blew in the wind like blazing fire.

Her long red eyebrows were like two thin swords. There was no tenderness to be spoken of, instead they were filled with heroic spirit like a man and revealed a thick murderous aura.

Her face like white jade was flawless. Her nose was far more prominent compared to other females, showing her strong will. But her red lips that originally should have been rosy instead only had a hint of scarlet.

Hearing the middle-aged field officer's words, Yue Hongyan

smiled proudly and softly opened her red lips.

“Ptui!”

Chapter 88: General Wicked

“Yue Hongyan, put down your weapon and surrender. This is your only way out.”

Hearing this, Yue Hongyan smirked. The black light halberd swept forward and a red and black storm headed straight towards the middle-aged field officer.

The Shenwu Army field officer's face turned dark and he didn't evade or resist, he just pushed his own mana and infused it into the Dark Beast Black Light Armour on his body.

The eyes of the savage beast head on the chest flashed with a black light as if it had become alive, releasing a low roar.

A massive apparition suddenly appeared in front of the Shenwu Army field officer. It was a violent beast, bellowing and colliding together with the storm that Yue Hongyan unleashed.

The beast apparition broke apart but the red and black storm also disappeared.

The Shenwu Army field officer said sharply: “All rebels of the Society of the Strong Gale who resist arrest are to be killed on the spot.”

Yue Hongyan glared at him with her large eyes: “I'll kill you first!” Her feet stamped the ground and the ground was full of

cracks. She had already charged in front of the Shenwu Army field officer like a bolt of lightning. The black light halberd brought up a wave of flames and it thrust towards his chest.

Hiding at the side, Lin Feng's pupils suddenly shrank, his eyes stared straight at the black light halberd in Yue Hongyan's hands.

The fire and the cyclone converged together, forming a massive firestorm that wrapped up and whirled around the halberd. In the end it gathered at the tip of the halberd.

The storm seemed to sweep away everything in the surrounding space, in the end gathering towards that pointed tip. Everything ultimately converged at this one point.

The point that pierces through all!

The Shenwu Army field officer's expression slightly changed. His body floated backward, but after just moving he suddenly felt a powerful force of suction originating from that point on the tip of Yue Hongyan's halberd.

The center of the firestorm seemed to want to completely suck him into that little tip!

"The Divine Spear of Oblivion?! The Shenwu Army field officer turned red in the face. He took out a jade slip from his storage bag and crushed it with his fastest speed.

The jade slip was crushed and it turned into a multitude of barriers that blocked in the middle between him and Yue Hongyan.

At the same time as obstructing Yue Hongyan, the Shenwu Army field officer did not take the opportunity to retreat or flee. Instead he unleashed a fierce counterattack.

He let out a loud shout, his two hands forming spell signs together. All of his mana exploded but did not attack Yue Hongyan and instead all surged into the ground beneath his feet.

Seeing this scene, a bad feeling surfaced in Lin Feng's heart.

Afterwards he saw those Shenwu Army cultivators who had originally already retreated all sheathe their blades in order. Their hands formed the same spell signs as their superior!

Everybody's mana all surged into the ground.

“Rumbbbble!”

Instantly, the ground beneath Yue Hongyan's feet suddenly ruptured and exploded like an earthquake. Violent lightning charged up into the sky.

“Earth Core Thunderclap!” Yue Hongyan's eyes narrowed. Only at this moment did she understand that the reason why the enemy leader, the Shenwu Army field officer didn't attack is because he

was preparing this kind of extremely terrifying spell.

In front are the many barriers created after he crushed the jade slip.

Below is the constantly exploding ground and violent lightning.

Deep into an ambush, the choice of Yue Hongyan who had fallen into a trap of absolute death was to let out a loud shout.

“Kill!”

Ignoring the exploding ground beneath her feet, towering flames burst out from the black light halberd in Yue Hongyan’s hand and her speed increased again!

Not dodging or evading, not retreating or stepping down, just going forward!

If there is an obstacle, break through it!

If there is an ambush, destroy it!

Regardless of the countless layers of defense in front of the enemy, regardless of the constantly exploding lightning under the ground beneath her feet, Yue Hongyan’s halberd never once strayed or wavered!

The Shenwu Army field officer's expression changed greatly. No matter what he never thought that this delicate looking little girl was actually so fierce.

Caught off guard, he was directly pierced by Yue Hongyan's black light halberd. His entire body was directly sent flying by the raging firestorm and the Dark Beast Black Light Armour on his body was burnt to nothingness!

“Withdraw!” The Shenwu Army field officer grunted. If not for the protection of the armour on his body, just now he would have been directly skewered by Yue Hongyan's halberd.

At this moment he didn't dare to have any more hesitation and he rapidly retreated under the protection of his soldiers.

Yue Hongyan did not pursue, her entire body was wreathed in red fire. Bearing the bombardment of the enemy's violent spell, all of the blood left her cherry lips and her white-jade cheeks were almost transparent white. Bright red blood blood dripped out from the corner of her mouth without stop.

Lin Feng who witnessed the entire battle exhaled a long breath and his eyes stared at Yue Hongyan.

Besides “savage chick”, he honestly couldn't make any other evaluation.

This chick, she is the same as the martial skill the Divine Spear of

Oblivion that she used. Where the tip of the spear points to, there is death and no life, there is me and no enemy, leave none alive.

But even though she repelled the enemy, Yue Hongyan herself also doesn't have the strength to fight anymore. It was truly a Pyrrhic victory.

Her two companions hurriedly went over to support her. Yue Hongyan rested for a while and then said: "Let's go fast, the Zhou dog's main force will arrive soon."

The three people hurriedly escaped into the thick miasma fog within the marsh, but they didn't notice that after a moment, a human walked out from the fog and followed closely behind them.

This person was precisely the Shenwu Army field officer who was just defeated by Yue Hongyan.

His Dark Beast Black Light Armour has already been destroyed and only a white robe remained on his body. His face was pale and he is clearly gravely injured, but his expression was extremely composed and calm. He carefully trailed behind Yue Hongyan and co.

When his figure also disappeared, not long afterwards Lin Feng's figure slowly walked out from the fog. His expression was uncertain.

"This person is such a schemer, actually taking a risk and

pretending to lose. Is it to find the location of the Society of the Strong Gale's base in the Ancient World Marsh? If there was the slightest mishap just now he really would have died under Yue Hongyan's spear."

"I wonder if Yue Hongyan and the other two people can really lead me to find the location of galactic sand?"

Over 50 kilometers away from Lin Feng and co in the marsh, a massive military camp was built right on top of the vast bog.

Within the military camp, many cultivators wearing armour constantly passed-by between the tents. Those with a low cultivation level were only qi disciple level 3-4, while those with a high cultivation level had foundation establishment mid-late stage strength.

Regardless of the height of the cultivation level of these cultivators, a common characteristic is that they all have the hardened aura of a soldier. It looks like it does not match their identity as cultivators, but there is a weird sense of harmony.

At the center of the military camp was erected a massive tent.

Inside of the tent, the crying sounds of a woman and a child constantly travelled over.

A man fell to the ground on his back. His eyes stared at the

ceiling of the tent. The anger, hatred and fear in his eyes had already gradually disappeared, becoming a lifeless colour. Fresh blood bubbled from the wound on his neck and even released a bit of heat.

The young wife cried in agony and closely hugged her son, using her hands to cover his eyes.

She is afraid to let her son see the miserable appearance of his father being killed.

But the young boy seemed to sense something. He struggled incessantly and cried without stop, tears constantly seeped out from the gaps between his mother's fingers.

Across from them, a sturdy man wearing heavy armour leaned against a chair and was slowly wiping the dripping blood on his sword.

His name is Wicked, he is the commander in charge of this troop. His surname is Wicked, his name is Wicked, his entire name is only one word, Wicked.

His troops and subordinates all called him General Wicked.

Looking at the crying mother and son, Wicked lightly flicked the sword blade and opened his mouth saying: "He wasn't willing to praise me, what about you?"

The young wife's body trembled nonstop. She weeped silently not saying a word.

Suddenly, her arms were empty. She lifted her head in a panic and saw a scene that scared the living daylights out of her. Her son had already landed in Wicked's hands.

The boy was virtually scared dumb. Wicked lightly scanned the young wife: "Praise me, or else he dies."

The young wife's body was stiff. It was precisely this demon in front who lead an army and hunted her compatriots of Snowgale, moreover killing her husband right in front of her. Yet now he wants her to praise him?

How could she do that?

But if she doesn't, her son...

The little boy stared blankly at his father's corpse on the ground and finally reacted over. He started to cry loudly and he waved around his hands struggling hard.

Wicked didn't even look at him once, he just stared at the young wife and placed the sword on the little boy's neck. He said calmly: "Praise me."

A chill surged from the sword and a bloodstain instantly split open on the boy's neck.

The young wife's entire body shuddered. She didn't dare to have any more hesitation and she difficulty opened her mouth: "General, you are brilliant and almighty, please spare my son..." After the first words left her mouth, the mental barrier in the young wife's heart completely collapsed and words of flattery came out one after another.

But her expression was completely numb. Her mouth moved mechanically as if she was a walking corpse, she just looked at her son using eyes filled with tears.

Wicked closed his eyes and slightly raised his head. He seemed to be quite enjoying it, he opened his mouth saying: "Continue, don't stop. The moment you stop I'll kill him."

The young wife constantly spoke words of praise, but she ultimately has a time when she exhausts her vocabulary. At the end she started to constantly repeat.

The sword held to her son's neck put a lot of pressure on her. In the end her mind finally turned from numbness to complete devastation. She spoke incoherently and was already unable to speak fluently, she could only look towards Wicked with pleading eyes.

Wicked frowned: "Is there no more?" He calmly looked towards the little boy who was already hoarse from crying: "In my life what I hate the most are you brats. Annoying people with your crying, upsetting people with your crying and you don't know how to

praise me.”

“What use is there keeping you?” While speaking, Wicked threw the boy on the ground.

The young wife rushed towards her son in delight. But the next instant, a big foot came crashing down, crushing the little boy's head right in front of her!

“Ah.... Ahhhhhhhhh!!!” The young wife went blank for a moment and then madly rushed towards her son's body.

Over there, there was only the little boy's small headless body and blood all over the floor.

Wicked turned his sword and blood flashed at the young wife's neck. She slumped to the ground, her eyes blankly staring at her son's corpse.

“After killing these three people, my mana increased a bit more again. Not bad, not bad at all!” Wicked inhaled a deep breath. A red light flickered over his face, his face was very calm.

This kind of calmness was bloodthirst and cruelty a million times colder than being cold-hearted.

“Those Society of the Strong Gale rebels, they use this kind magic item to fix a position in the Ancient World Marsh?” Wicked walked out of the tent. Looking at the group of Shenwu Army

soldiers silently waiting for him outside of the tent, he said calmly: “Move out, the target, the rebels’ base in the marsh.”

Wicked suddenly smiled: “Don’t spare a singly rebel!”

In the depths of the Ancient World Marsh, Lin Feng was cautiously followed behind Yue Hongyan and co when his body suddenly shuddered. He turned his head looking behind him.

“Such a heavy smell of blood and murderous intent, is it my imagination?”

Chapter 89: Snowgale Survivors

“Such a heavy smell of blood and murderous intent, is it my imagination?”

Lin Feng turned his head looking behind him but he couldn't sense the presence of any person or creature. He could only shake his head and give up. But a lingering shadow was left behind in his heart, as if there was some danger right around him.

Withdrawing his thoughts, Lin Feng looked towards Yue Hongyan and co. He saw Yue Hongyan take out a magic item that looked like a small wooden sword.

The small wooden sword was activated by Yue Hongyan. It flew up into the air, spinning around a couple of circles and then stopping. The tip of the sword pointed in a direction. Yue Hongyan put away the wooden sword and the three people advanced in the direction the wooden sword pointed to.

Along the way, Lin Feng has seen this situation more than once. He already knows in his heart that Yue Hongyan and the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale use this magic item to identify direction within the Ancient World Marsh.

Lin Feng moved forward following behind them. He entered deep into the interior of the marsh and after going around danger zone after danger zone, he entering into a desert.

Stepping on the yellow sand, there was immediately solid ground

beneath his feet. Lin Feng thought: “There is actually this kind of dry desert in the Ancient World Marsh where there are marshes everywhere? It’s practically like an oasis in the desert.”

“Desert, desert, could it be related to galactic sand?”

Lin Feng raised his eyes looking across. The area of the desert is extremely vast and covers dozens of kilometers around. A lone mountain stands at the center of the desert, it looks extremely out of place in the Ancient World Marsh.

Lin Feng silently snuck onto the barren mountain. With Yue Hongyan and co leading the path, he very quickly arrived in front of a cave halfway up the mountain.

The position of the cave is extremely hidden. If he wasn’t following behind Yue Hongyan and co, it would be very hard for Lin Feng to discover this place.

Yue Hongyan and co arrived in front of the cave. A voice from on top of a rock at the side suddenly travelled over: “Is it Hongyan who is back?”

A head popped out from within the rock, smiling and greeting Yue Hongyan and the other two. It was a secret sentry that the members of the Society of the Strong Gale placed here.

Yue Hongyan answered snappily: “Be more vigilant, don’t casually reveal your position during your shift.”

The person on the rock smiled saying: “I only spoke after seeing that it was you guys. If it were Zhou dogs, I would have directly cut down with my sword.”

Yue Hongyan and the other two walked into the cave, but Lin Feng was not in a rush to move. Instead he hid at the side and waited quietly.

In front of him, the figure of a middle-aged man hid behind a stone wall. He avoided the line of sight of the Society of the Strong Gale’s secret sentry above the cave and was quietly observing the cave. It was precisely the Shenwu field officer.

After attentively observing for a moment, he took out a silver bracelet from his storage bag and put it around his wrist. Afterwards he chanted the spell incantation.

Lin Feng looked towards his wrist. He saw that a circle of black text had suddenly surfaced over that originally silver bracelet, flowing without stop over the bracelet.

Black smoke rose up from the black text, enshrouding that Shenwu field officer’s figure.

The next moment, the colour of the black smoke gradually faded until it turned transparent. And what hid along with it was also the figure of that Shenwu field officer himself.

Lin Feng witnessed the entire process of him hiding his presence so he was not affected by the illusion. His consciousness was fixated on that field officer's mana fluctuations, so he could still accurately capture his position.

Thus he saw the Shenwu field officer swagger towards the cave, openly passing through from under the eyelids of the Society of the Strong Gale's secret sentry and walking into the cave.

Lin Feng grinned, this magic item's ability to hide one's presence is a lot more high-end than Lin Feng's Shadow Sneak Technique.

But it is a lot easier for Lin Feng to pass through here.

Lightly shaking the Black Cloud Flag, the effect of spatial travel activated and Lin Feng had already disappeared on the spot. The next instant he directly appeared within the cave.

Entering into the cave, Lin Feng put away the Black Cloud Flag and walked down following the tunnel.

Walking not too far and avoiding a couple wave of secret sentries, Lin Feng passed through the end of the tunnel and his eyes filled with light.

The entire mountain is virtually completely hollow. The interior of the mountain is a massive cave, houses criss-crossed at the bottom of the cave and smoke lingered in the air. It was astoundingly the appearance of a small village.

The sound of dogs barking and children playing travelled over from the distance. Lin Feng even smelt the fragrance of rice float into his nose.

“This...” Lin Feng snuck into the village and couldn’t help being a bit dumbfounded.

A couple of children in the village ran past. One of them was carrying a big rooster that was constantly flailing around. Behind them a village female fuming with rage was carrying a broom and chasing after them: “You bunch of brats, stealing my chicken again. I’m going to teach you guys a lesson today!”

Lin Feng looked a bit awestruck at this scene before him. He can one hundred percent guarantee that these women and children all don’t have any cultivation prowess. They are but the most ordinary mortals.

Walking further into the village, the more he saw the more Lin Feng knit his brow.

In one house, a woman with a sickly face laid weakly in bed. A petite little girl was cutting wood and boiling water. After finishing the housework she then hurriedly carried the medicine bowl to her mother. She carefully scooped up a spoonful and gently blew on it.

Only after cooling down the medicine did the little girl put the spoon in front of her mom. Watching her mother drink the medicine, a joyful smile blossomed on the girl’s face.

In another yard, a well-built man easily juggled stone locks. His son only a couple years old also took off his shirt. He was stripped to the waist, exposing a row of small ribs on his upper body.

The boy released an immature shout. He also lifted a stone lock, yelling to his father like displaying a prized treasure.

The man laughed out loud. He put down the stone locks and lifted up his son, letting him ride on his shoulders and starting to turn in circles.

The boy rode on his father's shoulders and giggled happily.

The sound of reading travelled over from a big house far away. Lin Feng walked over and saw that within the yard, a bunch of little kids sat on rows of small stools, properly putting their hands behind their backs and reciting poetry aloud together.

A man with the appearance of a teacher stood beside them holding a book in his hand.

The teacher read one line and then those children repeated after him. The man's deep, smooth voice and the crisp, tender voices of the children rose and fell, overlapping together.

A gentle woman in the house who seemed to be that teacher's wife was busy beside the stove. She stared at the rice pot sitting over the fire, occasionally turning her head looking at her husband

and her husband's students, letting out soft laughter.

Lin Feng was silent: "These people are probably all survivors of Snowgale, the relatives and family of those Society of the Strong Gale cultivators.

Far away, that Shenwu field officer was hiding at the side and was also staring blankly at the scene before him.

His face was uncertain and he struggled in his heart: "General Wicked has monstrous bloodlust. If he finds these people, he probably won't care that these people are just mortals and will kill them all just the same. Should I..."

Suddenly, a wave of mana fluctuations attracted the attention of both Lin Feng and the field officer.

On the empty ground of a yard in a big house at the east end of the village, dozens of teenage boys were sitting cross-legged, cultivating and regulating their breathing.

In front of them stood a fire red girl. It was precisely Yue Hongyan.

Yue Hongyan raised her eyebrows as straight as two fine swords, she said: "This time there are a lot of Zhou dogs who came. In the most dangerous case, you guys also have to go to battle."

"If you guys don't cultivate diligently and increase your strength,

how will you protect your families!”

The teens before her all didn't speak. They all cultivated diligently, but everybody seemed to have a fire burning in their hearts. They are bound by a common hatred for the same enemy, they're clearly just a bunch of growing kids, but their wills united like a fortress radiated a stunning aura.

The Shenwu field officer looked at this scene before him with a dark face. He closed his eyes: “Forget it...” Afterwards he took out a voice transmission crystal from his storage bag and was about to crush it.

This crystal can allow him to directly talk with General Wicked.

Right at the instant when he was about to crush the voice transmission crystal, black light flashed before his eyes and for a moment the world spun around him.

When this field officer returned to his senses, he was already in a dark space.

In the darkness, a young daoist wearing a white robe and daoist clothes slowly walked out. It was precisely Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at this Shenwu field officer and shook his head: “Even though I don't want be a busybody, but since I've bumped into it I can't turn a blind eye.”

Chapter 90: Strange Person Underground

Even though he regularly screws that crap out of people, Lin Feng has always persisted in believing that he is still a noble man, a pure man, a man with morals, a man who is above vulgarity, a kind hearted man.

As a good person, he must have the most basic heart of compassion and sympathy.

Even though he doesn't know what kind of character the commanding general of this Shenwu Army troop is, once the army invades the mountain, the people of this small mountain village will definitely suffer.

Lin Feng shook the Black Cloud Flag and directly kidnapped that Shenwu field officer.

The field officer's eyes flashed and he looked at the black space in the Black Cloud Flag: "A spatial type magic item, or an aurous core stage magic item?" Rapidly making a clear judgment, the Shenwu field officer put away the voice transmission crystal.

Facing the spatial obstruction of the Black Cloud Flag, even if he crushes the voice transmission crystal he is still unable to get in touch with the outside world.

Lin Feng was also observing him. He discovered that the field officer did not look flustered from being trapped and unable to communicate with others.

In fact, at this moment, the expression on this Shenwu field officer's face actually had a bit of relieved ease.

A thought appeared in Lin Feng's heart and he asked: "What is your name?"

That Shenwu field officer said calmly: "I am Dao Zhiqiang, Zhou Dynasty Shenwu Army vanguard, left wing brigade one captain."

Lin Feng nodded his head: "Who is the commanding Shenwu Army general this time?"

But this time Dao Zhiqiang did not respond and only quietly stared at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng glanced at him: "Besides your name, don't even think about getting any military intelligence from your mouth, is this what you mean?"

Dao Zhiqiang smiled: "You are a smart person."

Lin Feng shook his head: "Unfortunately, you aren't. If I really want to know something I would directly refine your soul. Do you think you can hide anything?"

"Then that depends on whether or not you have that ability." Dao Zhiqiang's expression slightly changed and he said heavily.

Lin Feng chuckled: “Loyalty? I’ve observed you for a long time, I can see that you don’t actually want to pass back the information here to your superior?”

Dao Zhiqiang instantly fell silent. He lowered his head not saying a word.

“Think about what course you want to follow.” Lin Feng waved his sleeve and directly left the Black Cloud Flag.

Lin Feng left and Dao Zhiqiang didn’t have any thoughts of resisting or struggling. Instead he sat straight down and spaced out at the black void.

Seeing this, Lin Feng had an idea in his heart: “Looks like the commanding Shenwu Army general this time has very heavy bloodlust, to the point where even his own subordinates are worried about him slaughtering civilian mortals.

“This Dao Zhiqiang, even though he has the sense of discipline of a soldier, he also has his own thoughts.” Lin Feng thought: “The Zhou emperor and the Marquis of Xuanji may be able to gather and drill cultivators into soldiers, but they are ultimately not a genuine army.”

Cultivators who seek to be unrestrained and free, their nature contradicts that of the army.

Even if Dao Zhiqiang struggles, Lin Feng has absolute certainty that he can suppress him with ease. So he doesn't pay any attention to him and left him to his own devices in the Black Cloud Flag.

Lin Feng searched in the village for a short while and very quickly found a lone Society of the Strong Gale cultivator.

Nowadays Xiao Budian's technique of knocking people out from behind has already had faint signs of the student surpassing the teacher, but Lin Feng is after all the founder of this "school secret technique". He has a deeper grasp of the three word formula quick, accurate and ruthless.

The person is just a little qi disciple stage cultivator. With Lin Feng silently sneaking to behind his back, he was directly put down with one hit without even making a sound.

Smacking the back of his head and then not waiting for his body to slump down, Lin Feng had already swiftly supported his body and dragged him into a corner without any people.

Directly opening his storage bag, Lin Feng threw a couple of loose items all to the side, picking up a small wooden sword and closely examining it.

The workmanship of the wooden sword is very detailed. The material of the wood itself is not outstanding, but on the sword handle there is a small crystal the size of a grain of sand embedded into it.

Its size may be extremely small, but the crystal shimmered with light, shining like the dazzling stars at night.

“Galactic sand!” Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath. The little crystal embedded in the wooden sword is the galactic sand he’s been looking for.

Even though there is only one grain of galactic sand, Lin Feng already knows that he’s found the right place.

If every Society of the Strong Gale cultivator has a wooden sword like this, just the galactic sand on these wooden swords is already a considerable amount.

Lin Feng even had a guess in his heart.

These wooden sword magic items help the members of the Society of the Strong Gale distinguish the path in the Ancient Word Marsh. It lets them walk in the vast marsh that is enveloped in miasma, where the spiritual energy is chaotic and it’s difficult for one’s consciousness to have an effect. It very likely does not determine direction.

Instead these wooden swords are always pointing in one direction, and that is this stretch of desert, this lone mountain in this desert.

Then, what is the principle behind this wooden sword magic

item?

Could it be that there is a massive galactic sand vein buried here, then after the galactic sand produced here is embedded in a wooden sword and then refined using a secret technique, it develops a special connection with the vein and points to the direction of the vein?

Thinking here, Lin Feng didn't hesitate anymore and activated the wooden sword with his mana.

The wooden sword spun around a few circles in the air and then stopped. The tip of the sword pointed in a direction.

Lin Feng followed the direction the tip of the sword was pointing towards and looked over. That place is the end of the village and moreover is behind the big house where Yue Hongyan is teaching those village kids dao techniques.

After going around the big house there was a pile of rubble. Dozen meter long boulders were randomly piled together like a small mountain.

Lin Feng went past the boulders and saw a pitch-black hole in the ground in the middle of the rubble.

Entering into the hole, Lin Feng instantly wrinkled his brow.

The spiritual energy within the hole is actually extremely pure.

This made Lin Feng who's been in the Ancient World Marsh for nearly a month a bit unable to adapt.

But this is definitely not a good thing. Impure spiritual energy suddenly becoming pure is not something that can be done by a simple treasure or spirit stone vein.

It can only be under the effect of a certain great cultivator doing something or someone laying down a powerful formation here that the originally impure and chaotic spiritual energy can become pure and ordered.

And for Lin Feng, no matter which one of these two cases it is they are all not good news.

Lin Feng raised his vigilance and walked down following the tunnel.

After a while, the scenery in front suddenly lit up.

A light golden sand dune appeared in front of Lin Feng. Countless grains of sands sparkled brilliantly with a golden glow.

At the bottom of the dune, a stretch of desert was divided by a couple streams of water. The water flowed quietly and the sound of flowing water carried a strange rhythm that made people feel refreshed from listening.

But Lin Feng was increasingly more vigilant. These streams of

water look random and divide the golden desert into scattered plots, but they vaguely form a massive sigil.

It is exactly this sigil that forms a profound spell formation that the spiritual energy in the hole became pure.

Lin Feng looked towards the tip of the sand dune, there was a person sitting there.

That is a white-clothed youth, he looks to be in very poor health and his face is pale. Even just sitting there, there is still cold sweat constantly appearing from his forehead.

But Lin Feng didn't dare to have the slightest thoughts of looking down on him.

Even if that white-clothed youth looks really weak like he is seriously ill, Lin Feng is entirely unable to see through the depths of his cultivation level.

But at the same time, Lin Feng can faintly sense that there is an intimate connection between the white-clothed youth, the golden sand dune beneath him and the water stream sigil formation.

Being able to control such a massive spell formation, he naturally isn't a regular person who's never cultivated before.

And yet, Lin Feng is unable to see through the depths of his cultivation level. That means there is only one possibility, the

actual cultivation level of this white-clothed youth is far above Lin Feng.

While Lin Feng was pondering, the white-clothed youth suddenly opened his mouth.

“A cultivator of the Zhou Dynasty? To actually be able to sneak into here, Yue Hongyan and the others are becoming more negligent.”

Finishing speaking, the white-clothed youth released a dry cough and the desert beneath Lin Feng’s feet suddenly started to tremor.

Chapter 91: A Promise Made Is A Promise Kept For Life!

“To think that you’ve snuck all the way to right in front of me, Yue Hongyan and the others are becoming more lax.”

The white-clothed youth lifted his hand with great effort to wipe the sweat on his forehead and coughed repeatedly.

But at this moment, shocking mana fluctuations burst forth from his seemingly frail body, spurring the golden sea of sand beneath his body to vibrate violently.

Right now Lin Feng was still under the state of using the Shadow Sneak Technique and also has the system concealing his mana fluctuations. Theoretically speaking it’s not easy for him to be discovered.

“I was careless.” Right when the white-clothed youth opened his mouth to speak, Lin Feng knew in his heart that the situation was bad and subconsciously looked at the desert beneath his feet.

This golden desert evidently possesses very strong detection ability. The moment there are outsiders who trespass it will instantly sense it and let the white-clothed youth know.

Through these grains of sand, the white-clothed youth is still unable to see through the system’s cover and is unable to sense the strength of the mana in Lin Feng’s body, but he can clearly sense

that someone has stepped on the desert.

An outsider has barged in but he was unable to sense it, this is already enough to say that there is a problem.

Thus the white-clothed youth instantly took action.

Limitless yellow sand rose up that was about to engulf Lin Feng.

Lin Feng slightly furrowed his brow. He shook the Black Cloud Flag and his entire body was wrapped up by a mass of black light. The black light flashed and isolated the sand on the outside.

“An aurous core stage magic item? But it’s damaged, it cannot stop me.” The white-clothed youth weakly raised his hand and slowly formed a spell sign.

A water arrow shot out from the stream dividing the desert and mixed together with the yellow sand. It instantly turned into a dark yellow cloudy stream of water and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s mouth was dry. The white-clothed youth has yet to use his full strength but he has already demonstrated the powerful strength of an aurous core stage cultivator.

That cloudy dark-yellow stream of water actually easily broke through the the defense of the Black Cloud Flag’s black light and charged straight towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's eyes flashed: "The grains of sand are heavy and condensed. Just one grain of sand weighs probably hundreds or thousands of kilograms. It can match giant mountain boulders, but it has been condensed and compressed to the size of a grain of sand. The number of grains of sand flying towards me this time is over tens of thousands!"

"The grains of sand are heavy but they were rolled up by the stream and the flexible change of water was mixed into it. The trajectory is unpredictable and difficult to dodge. Even if I do dodge, the stream will change direction and carry those thousand kilogram heavy grains of sand chasing over."

In this one move, the white-clothed youth flawlessly combined together the heaviness of earth and the flexibility of water. It truly is profound.

The Black Cloud Flag's defense being broken open, Lin Feng did not lose his calm. He still controlled the Black Cloud Flag's mana to hide his body, but he secretly undid the Heaven Cage Sigil sealing the taotie cub Tun Tun.

"What the hell is it this time?" Tun Tun screamed, but she could only once again helplessly take the bullet for Lin Feng, revealing her true form and difficulty devouring the dark-yellow stream of water.

"Ugh... Cough cough cough cough! I'm choking!" Tun Tun roared angrily: "Lin Feng you bastard, if you make me eat anymore

of this random junk again I'll fight you to the death! Ouch, what the hell is this, it hurts like hell."

Lin Feng laughed in secret: "Be thankful that you have something to eat, at least I'm even regularly thinking of switching things up for you."

Tun Tun cursed incessantly while Lin Feng plugged his ears and once again used the Heaven Cage Sigil to seal Tun Tun.

"Bastard, sooner or later I'll devour you!" Tun Tun rolled her eyes. Right now she clearly has indigestion and her stomach hurts like crazy. Even without the Heaven Cage Sigil she can't cause any commotion for a while.

His spell was actually silently resolved by Lin Feng. A light flashed by in the white-clothed youth's eyes and his back that was arched due to pain slightly straightened.

Seeing this Lin Feng wrinkled his brow and said preemptively: "Are you injured?"

The white-clothed youth coughed dryly: "No need for you to worry. Whatever skills you've got just come at me, I Kang Nanhua will take it all on."

Lin Feng put away the Black Cloud Flag and revealed his body. He waved his wide sleeve and activated poser mode. He said proudly: "I never take advantage of anyone, not to mention bullying an

injured junior like you.”

The white-clothed youth Kang Nanhua raised his eyes and stared at Lin Feng without speaking.

The Lin Feng of the moment is wearing a wide-sleeved white robe and daoist clothing. His demeanor is noble and proud, calm and composed, he truly does have a bit of the appearance of a master outside of the mundane world.

He looked at Kang Nanhua and said calmly: “I don’t have any connection with the Great Zhou Dynasty, you don’t need to be so alert.”

“If anything, there is even some friction between me and the Great Zhou Dynasty.”

Kang Nanhua lifted his hand wiping the cold sweat on his brow and said slowly: “I am all ears.”

Lin Feng said: “One of my disciples is the Great Zhou Dynasty Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu’s son.”

Kang Nanhua showed a sign of displeasure: “It seems like you are toying with me.”

Lin Feng had a calm look: “If you knew that that disciple of mine nearly died by his father’s hand you wouldn’t think that.”

A glint of realization flashed by in Kang Nanhua's eyes: "Half a year ago Little Hei and them tried to kidnap one of Zhu Hongwu's bastards and failed in the end. He was saved by Huang San of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, but afterwards news came back that that bastard and Huang San went missing together."

"I remember that bastard's name was Zhu Yi, could it be that you are talking about him?"

Lin Feng smiled lightly: "One month ago in the forest at the southern border of the Great Qin Dynasty, I just killed the second steward under Zhu Hongwu, I think his name was Tao Er? He wished to do harm to my disciple so I got rid of him."

Kang Nanhua was silent. His eyes flickered and he was calculating something.

After a long while Kang Nanhua opened his mouth asking: "Then for what are you here?"

Lin Feng said openly: "I come here in search for a mineral called galactic sand."

Kang Nanhua asked: "How much do you need?"

Lin Feng was delighted in his heart: "There really is galactic sand here!" But Kang Nanhua asked him how much he needs, this question stumped Lin Feng. God knows how much galactic sand is

needed to be able to restore that broken mirror?

After pondering for a moment Lin Feng asked tentatively: “Do you have one cubic meter?”

Hearing this Kang Nanhua knit his brow: “I can’t give you that much.”

Lin Feng slightly narrowed his eyes. This Kang Nanhua just said “I can’t give you that much”, and not “There isn’t that much”, that means he actually has more than one cubic meter of galactic sand on his hands, but he is unwilling to give Lin Feng that much.

Lin Feng’s mind rapidly turned. He doesn’t have any grudge with him, it honestly isn’t worth it to engage in mortal combat. If he can obtain the galactic sand through a trade that would be the best.

While thinking, Lin Feng suddenly sensed something in his shirt move.

Lin Feng quietly checked it out and discovered that the object that produced a disturbance was nothing other than that stone flute that Long Ye gave to him that day.

Since half a year ago after Lin Feng obtained this stone flute he has frequently mulled over it, but he’s always had no gains. It made him about to question whether Long Ye that demoness tricked him.

Yet, to think that it would suddenly have movement facing Kang Nanhua today.

Could it be that this sickly white-clothed youth in front of him is actually related to this stone flute?

Lin Feng quietly took out the stone flute and observed in secret. He discovered that there was actually a trace of a strange mana fluctuation slightly quivering from the stone flute.

That mana fluctuation spread out and came in contact with Kang Nanhua. Pain-ridden Kang Nanhua suddenly felt refreshed and he felt that his old wound that was like maggots attached to bone was actually a lot more relieved.

Kang Nanhua looked towards Lin Feng in surprise. Seeing his appearance, Lin Feng was also surprised in his heart: “This stone flute can actually heal his injury?”

Discovering this point, Lin Feng was a lot more relaxed in his heart. But he still didn’t dare to be careless: “I have this extra bargaining chip in my hands now, bargaining again with him is a lot easier now. But this person is already so powerful while injured, if he fully heals his injury won’t he be even harder to deal with?”

Thinking for a bit, Lin Feng decided to first do his best to figure out his background. He asked seemingly off-handedly: “You are also an adherent of Snowgale?”

“No, that is not the case.” Kang Nanhua shook his head: “If you really have to say, I can actually be considered a citizen under the Zhou Dynasty’s rule.”

Lin Feng was a bit astonished. Kang Nanhua’s eyes revealed a look of nostalgia: “My parents were both citizens under the Zhou Dynasty’s rule. Before I started cultivating I also once studied hard and even got the Zhou Dynasty’s xiucai.” (TL: Back to Chinese imperial examinations. Think of xiucai as your bachelors.)

Lin Feng continued asking: “Then why are you instead opposing the Zhou army now? Your family died at the hands of a Zhou person?”

Kang Nanhua shook his head: “My parents both left the world without pain after they reached their natural lifespans.. I achieved success with my cultivation and even though I wanted to extend their lifespans, I ultimately failed. But they both enjoyed a lifespan of 100 years, there isn’t anything to regret.”

Lin Feng’s eyes flashed: “There is your lover in this Society of the Strong Gale?” He thought of that chick who was like blazing fire, Yue Hongyan.

Putting aside her strong and upright temper, she really is a little beauty with devastating looks, definitely femme fatale level.

Kang Nanhua seemed to know what he was thinking in his heart. Hearing this he smiled: “You have seen Hongyan already? Hehe, I may not be against the feelings of men and women, but cultivating

up until now I have still yet meet a woman who can move my heart, Hongyan included.”

“Who the hell would believe you.” Lin Feng secretly curled his lips and then asked: “Then for what are you helping the Society of the Strong Gale?”

Kang Nanhua said calmly: “One of the founders of the Society of the Strong Gale is Yue Hongfeng. Him and I are friends who sword to live and die together. Before he died he asked me to take care of and protect his compatriots, I agreed.”

Lin Feng’s pupils suddenly shrank, he eyes stared straight at Kang Nanhua.

Even though the white-clothed youth is tormented by pain and his entire face is dripping with cold sweat, his demeanor is calm and composed. He doesn’t have any thoughts of complaining that this is too troublesome and he also doesn’t have the pride of thinking himself a hero. He seems to just be doing something that is only a matter of course.

His voice is so calm, as though the matter of going against the Great Zhou Dynasty this kind of behemoth which is nearly impossible is as normal and rational as a person needing to eat and sleep.

Don’t mention the Zhou emperor Liang Pan and the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu these kinds of formidable giants, and don’t mention the Shenwu Army this kind of killing machine, even the

House of the Marquis of Xuanji's stewards, Tao Er and Huang San are also both auras core stage cultivators on the same level as him.

Going against a force like this, he could die at any moment. But Kang Nanhua seemed to pay no heed at all to these dangers.

Even if he is already plagued by pain.

Everything is all just because he agreed to his deceased friend and made a promise, so he has to keep his promise.

No matter if the path in front is covered in thorns or is a mountain of swords and a sea of flames, I will definitely do what I've promised, even if it costs me my life.

Lin Feng looked at Kang Nanhua, for some reason a phrase suddenly surfaced in his mind.

“A promise made to a person is a promise kept for life!”

Chapter 92: Stone Flute Secret Area

Lin Feng looked at Kang Nanhua. After a moment of silence he opened his mouth saying: “I might have some ways to deal with your injury, but I can’t guarantee that you’ll fully recover.” While speaking, Lin Feng took out the stone flute.

A weak mana fluctuation travelled out from the stone flute again. It was pure and calm and difficult to discern its origin.

Kang Nanhua came in contact with this mana fluctuation and he instantly felt his entire body relax, even his pale white face became a bit more flushed.

“You are doing this for galactic sand?” Kang Nanhua furrowed his brow and said: “But I have great use for this galactic sand, I honestly cannot split out one cubic meter for you.”

Lin Feng wondered in secret why Kang Nanhua values galactic sand so much.

“There is no need to worry about the matter of the galactic sand.” Lin Feng shook his head saying: “As for this thing, I wanted to give it to you so I gave it to you. There aren’t so many reasons, you don’t need to think too much about it either.”

“There is only one point. You cannot speak of the matter of me using this stone flute to heal you today, can you do that?”

Hearing this, Kang Nanhua was not overjoyed and also didn't hesitate or doubt him. He only very seriously pondered for a moment and then slowly nodded his head: "I can."

His every word was spoken extremely slowly, his voice was calm but it had a crushing weight to it.

Lin Feng smiled lightly: "Then it's fine." While speaking, he raised his arm and had already thrown the stone flute towards Kang Nanhua.

Kang Nanhua was slightly surprised. He didn't think that Lin Feng would so easily hand the stone flute over to him, or rather, he didn't that that Lin Feng was so confident.

He caught the stone flute and sensed the mana fluctuations within. It faintly resonated with his injury and was constantly healing his wound.

Kang Nanhua inhaled a deep breath and nodded his head to Lin Feng: "Thank you." He didn't make a fuss about it and immediately used his mana to communicate with the stone flute and heal his injury.

When Kang Nanhua's mana entered deep into the stone flute and channeled the mysterious power in the stone flute into his body, a change suddenly occurred to the originally mundane stone flute.

A fluffy, white, hazy light suddenly rose up from the grey,

unassuming stone flute, projecting a mirage in the air above Lin Feng and Kang Nanhua.

Lin Feng's eyes narrowed and he stared straight at the mirage above his head.

In the fluctuation of the mirage, a couple of scenes flashed by.

Towering mountains shrouded by clouds. The sunlight came down and turned into a staircase towards the sky at the peak of the mountain, the staircase formed by sunlight went through to the nine heavens.

A cultivation abode was vaguely outlined in the void at the horizon, as if it was hidden in an endless space folded over itself.

"That place is a foreign space similar to the Void Battleground?" Lin Feng pondered in his heart: "Could it be the cultivation abode of a certain immortal? This stone flute seems to be the key to finding and opening the cultivation abode, this is probably the reason why Yan Mingyue and the Void Temple value it."

Kang Nanhua opened his eyes and his eyes shone vividly. Even though right now his face is still pale, at the least he isn't as weak as before, sweating profusely even just sitting on the spot.

"10 years ago I inadvertently discovered this great staircase in a mountain. I thought I had encountered an immortal and thus thought of climbing the stairs." Kang Nanhua stared at the mirage

and muttered: “But who could have imagined that just stepping upon the first step, it was like I was struck by lightning and I was gravely injured on the spot.”

“If it weren’t for the fact that I was quick-witted and instantly retreated, I probably would have died right there.”

Hearing this, Lin Feng instantly wrinkled his brow. Kang Nanhua is already an aurous core stage cultivator but was already gravely wounded after just climbing the first step. How powerful are the restrictions of this cultivation abode?

And what kind of a great master does it take to be able to create this cultivation abode and set up such terrifying restrictions?

The stone flute may be related to the cultivation abode, but can one walk on that great staircase depending on just that stone flute?

Kang Nanhua said slowly: “Since then there has been a mysterious force remaining in my body. Not only does it torment my body, it also damages my spirit. I may have kept my life by luck, but I was seriously injured, up until today.”

Lin Feng pondered for a moment and asked: “Where is this mountain?”

Kang Nanhua shook his head: “I once carried thoughts of what if and felt that in order to untie the bell, the person who tied it is required. I was injured on the great staircase, maybe I could also

find the method of recovery there? Of course, I was also a bit unwilling to give up. And so I returned back to the place to look for it, but that staircase constructed by sunlight had already disappeared.”

“Afterwards I once went to search for it many times, but I had no gains. That staircase doesn’t seem to be fixed at one location and instead drifts in the spatial turbulence, appearing at different places from time to time.

Lin Feng knows that Kang Nanhua is speaking the truth. Seeing the flickering cultivation abode within the mirage, he knows that this cultivation abode is indeed hidden in the void and drifts with the spatial turbulence.

Kang Nanhua exhaled a long breath of relief and revealed a smile for the first time since meeting: “Thank you for your generous help. I originally thought that this item could only ease and suppress my injury, but now it looks like I have hopes of a full recovery.”

“That being the case, I don’t need to use all this galactic sand anymore. Don’t mention one cubic meter, even if you need more I can provide it to you.” Kang Nanhua said generously and his two hands formed a spell sign together.

His body floated up into the air from the golden sand dune. The golden sand slowly split apart from the golden sand dune beneath and revealed what was buried under the ground.

Looking over, Lin Feng seemed to see a starry sky appear before his eyes. Countless stars twinkled with a dazzling glow.

Beneath the golden sand dune was surprisingly buried a tremendous amount of galactic sand.

Kang Nanhua explained saying: “Before I had old injuries and was unable to activate the Eternal River Quicksand Formation set up here. With no other choice I could only constantly refine this galactic sand and then depend on this refined sand to control the spell formation. Otherwise I would honestly be powerless to protect the members of the Society of the Strong Gale and their family here.”

“Now with your aid, I have hopes of fully recovering. Even if I give all of the galactic sand here to you it’s not a problem anymore.”

Lin Feng stared at Kang Nanhua and didn’t say anything for a long time.

Listening to what he means, if not that the stone flute can completely heal his injuries and cause him to no longer need to rely on tremendous amounts of galactic sand to maintain his strength, he would rather continue suffering the torment of pain than trade with Lin Feng.

In Kang Nanhua’s eyes, maintaining his strength to protect those people of the Society of the Strong Gale and to keep his promise to his deceased friend is far more important to easing and suppressing

the pain that has tormented him for 10 years.

Lin Feng was silent for a long time and then suddenly asked: “Is it worth it?”

Only after being stunned for a moment did Kang Nanhua react to the meaning of Lin Feng’s words.

He smiled gracefully: “There is no worth it or not worth it, nor is there no noble or not noble. My heart and nature are so, I wanted to do so and so I did. If I really did fuss over the gains and losses, avoided trouble and went against my heart, I would instead develop inner demons. This is not beneficial to cultivating and is more harm than good.”

“From a certain angle, I can also be considered to be doing this because I have no choice? Hehe, every person’s path is different. I think this is the path that belongs to me so I continued walking down it.”

Lin Feng nodded his head not saying anything more. The black light of the Black Cloud Flag swept over and had already scooped up a bunch of galactic sand.

Kang Nanhua didn’t speak anymore either and closed his eyes silently operating his dao technique. He concentrated on communicating with the stone flute to heal his injuries.

In the Black Cloud Flag, Lin Feng first further crushed the

galactic sand, making them become as fine as powder.

Afterwards he attentively filled the powder into the copper mirror's damaged locations and then infused his mana into it.

The copper mirror may be severely damaged and has injured its core, but it has a strong foundation and still harbours some spiritual energy.

Receiving the nourishment of Lin Feng's mana, this spiritual energy instantly became lively.

It's just that what was out of Lin Feng's expectations is that with his stimulation, the copper mirror seemed to have suddenly come alive. A strange force of suction was generated within the magic item and greedily devoured Lin Feng's mana.

Lin Feng may have been startled, but he was not flustered. While slowly retracting his mana, he was also attempting to establish a link with the copper mirror.

Following the infusion of Lin Feng's mana, the restoration of the copper mirror was virtually instantaneous. Just looking at the appearance one can notice that the copper mirror is recovering at a visible speed.

What made Lin Feng feel at ease is that he did not discover the copper mirror having its own conscious.

This means that even though the copper mirror is currently greedily devouring Lin Feng's mana, there is no one behind it and it is just a necessity for reparation.

To be able to cope with the loss of mana brought upon by repairing the copper mirror, one after another Lin Feng swallowed an entire bottle of Energy Restoration Pills that replenish mana like eating beans.

“Damn, qi disciple stage cultivators treat even just one Energy Restoration Pill as a treasure, it's just me who can restore a magic item like this.”

When the Energy Restoration Pills were gradually about to be depleted, Lin Feng sensed that the copper mirror's speed of devouring his mana had clearly slowed down.

Lin Feng closely scanned the copper mirror. The damaged mirror surface has already been completely repaired, the bright mirror surface clearly reflected Lin Feng's figure.

The entire copper mirror has an archaic appearance. It is no different from a regular mirror and it made Lin Feng unable to help but have butterflies in his stomach: “Even though there is a saying that goes “Divine items hide their light” and good things will hide their own brilliance, they're all relatively low-key, but doesn't this look a little too ordinary?”

Seemingly protesting against Lin Feng's belittlement of it, following the completion of the reparations, a dark-yellow light lit

up on the surface of the copper mirror. The word “Universe” faintly surfaced on the face of the mirror.

After the word “Universe” just appeared, a system notification rose up beside Lin Feng’s ears.

“Host has successfully repaired the Universal Mirror, completed the random side quest Repair the Universal Mirror, 500 trading points rewarded!”

Lin Feng wished that he could throw back his head and laugh. Without any hesitation he immediately entered into the trading system.

Chapter 93: Enemy At The Gate

Adding the remaining 700 trading points from before, Lin Feng who has now completed the Universal Mirror side quest has a total of 1200 trading points.

Without further ado, after Lin Feng entered into the trading system he instantly exchanged for the Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture.

Looking at the main quest, in the dao technique creation system the black hole representing “Wind” had already lit up with white light. Lin Feng smiled: “There’s still the last one.”

Withdrawing from the system, he discovered that he had already used a lot of time to repair the Universal Mirror.

Using the stone flute to heal his injuries, Kang Nanhua had also already reached the final stage.

No signs of sickness could be seen on his face anymore. He was full of energy and powerful mana fluctuations spread out. Boundless golden sand and flowing water constantly spiraled around him.

After a long time Kang Nanhua opened his eyes. The mana fluctuations around him gradually calmed down and he smiled at Lin Feng: “It’s all thanks to you that I was able to heal my injuries.” He opened his palm, the stone flute that had already reverted back to its ordinary appearance again was lifted up by

mana and brought in front of Lin Feng.

Lin Feng and him both are now already fully aware of the remarkability of the stone flute, but Kang Nanhua did not covet it. The moment his injuries were healed he handed it back to Lin Feng without any reluctance.

Lin Feng took over the stone flute and shook his head saying: “You don’t need to be so polite, this place on the other hand is actually not safe. Since I can find my way here, the Zhou army will eventually find their way here one day too.”

“If you really want to keep your promise to your deceased friend, you should think of a path of retreat as soon as possible. Take the adherents of Snowgale here and leave as soon as possible.”

Kang Nanhua responded saying: “To tell you the truth I also have this thought. The main reason we stayed here not leaving is actually because I was injured and had to borrow the geographical conditions here to set up a spell formation to protect them. Now my strength has fully recovered, even though I can’t talk big and say that I’ll protect them perfectly, at the very least there is a lot more leeway now and we don’t need to cling onto this place.”

Lin Feng nodded his head: “Since you already have arrangements I won’t say anything more. We part ways here, if luck brings us together again in the future maybe there can be a day where we sit and talk.”

Kang Nanhua smiled saying: “With you blessing, I look forward

to that day.”

“Likewise.” Lin Feng laughed out loud. He shook the Black Cloud Flag and his body turned into black light, flying towards the outside.

Lin Feng flew out of the hole and hid his figure not startling anybody. He used the Black Cloud Flag’s spatial shifting ability and left the solitary mountain in the desert, reentering the Ancient World Marsh’s marsh zone.

“Hm?” Lin Feng suddenly sensed something and he saw that inside of the Black Cloud Flag’s interior space, that Shenwu field officer Dao Zhiqiang who was captured by him had once again taken out that voice transmission crystal.

But Dao Zhiqiang did not crush that voice transmission crystal to communicate with the outside world and instead stared in a trance at the voice transmission crystal in his palm.

A moment later, Dao Zhiqiang’s eyes became focused again as though he’d made some sort of decision. He swung his arm and threw away the voice transmission crystal.

The voice transmission crystal landed in the Black Cloud Flag’s rolling black light and disappeared out of sight. Lin Feng naturally can get it, but Dao Zhiqiang definitely can’t recover it.

Throwing away the voice transmission crystal, Dao Zhiqiang

seemed to have cast off a thousand pound weight. His spirit and appearance all became different, no longer repressed and instead bursting with spirit.

Lin Feng revealed his figure and asked: “You’ve made up your mind? If I didn’t remember wrong, your action just now is the same as defecting from the Shenwu Army.”

Dao Zhiqiang nodded his head calmly: “That’s right, but just as that Kang Nanhua said, this is my heart and nature, I cannot go against it. I think doing this is the right choice and so I did it.”

Speaking here, his expression was a bit somber: “Had it not been that the general in charge this time be General Wicked, I absolutely would not do so. But if General Wicked finds this place, everybody, no matter cultivator or mortal will die. This is something I am not willing to see.”

Lin Feng said indifferently: “How you decide is your problem, just don’t regret it in the future.”

His consciousness retreated from the Black Cloud Flag and then he took out the Universal Mirror from his storage bag, Just now he felt an abnormality with the Universal Mirror.

Lin Feng’s mana poured into the Universal Mirror. The surface of the copper mirror instantly lit up with a weak light and the mirror became no longer clear, like muddy water.

A bright yellow little dot of light appeared at the center of the dirt yellow mirror, and around the bright yellow light dot was distributed an entire circle of thickly dotted red light dots.

“What do these represent?”

Lin Feng’s pupil’s suddenly shrank and a bad feeling developed in his heart.

“The bright yellow light dot is at the very center of the mirror, this position should be my current position, or rather the Universal Mirror’s current position.” Lin Feng slightly frowned: “Then what should these red light dots represent?”

The sizes of the red light dots vary. There are few big ones, only a couple dozen, while there are at least thousands of the smaller red light dots!

Lin Feng looked towards the distance and expanded his senses to the limit. He saw that within the marsh’s thick miasma fog there were actually countless human shadows vaguely flickering. They disappeared and reappeared and were encircling the desert lone mountain beneath Lin Feng’s feet from all directions.

Lin Feng’s heart instantly sank to the bottom, he already knows the identity of the newcomers.

The Great Zhou Dynasty, Shenwu Army.

The red light dots on the Universal Mirror are reflecting the existence of these people. The bigger light dots represent foundation establishment stage cultivators while the smaller light dots are qi disciple stage cultivators.

The Shenwu Army has already discovered the lone mountain where the members of the Society of the Strong Gale are hiding, thus their main force pressed in.

Lin Feng dragged out Dao Zhiqiang from the Black Cloud Flag. After getting a clear look of the scene in front of him, Dao Zhiqiang was extremely shocked: “I clearly didn’t...”

“I know you didn’t.” Lin Feng directly cut him off. Dao Zhiqiang was in the Black Cloud Flag’s interior space, his every movement was under Lin Feng’s surveillance. Lin Feng naturally knows that he didn’t pull any tricks behind his back.

Lin Feng looked at the Shenwu Army that was in battle formation and had already charged out from the fog. He asked Dao Zhiqiang: “The reason I called you out is to ask you how is the combat strength of this Shenwu Army troop and who is the leader?”

Dao Zhiqiang hesitated for a moment but still answered saying: “This is the Shenwu Army’s forward brigade left camp, the forward brigade is the entire Shenwu Army’s vanguard unit. They are the first to arrive in every battle and are the Shenwu Army’s most powerful spearhead unit.”

“The left camp I was in was originally just the flank of the forward brigade, it’s not as strong as the forward camp. The forward brigade is the vanguard of the Shenwu Army, and the forward camp is the vanguard of the forward brigade. All soldiers of the forward camp are the cultivators with the richest fighting experience and the greatest proficiency in combat. Their average cultivation level is also a step above the other camps.”

Speaking here, Dao Zhiqiang’s face slightly paled: “But that is all the past. Not long ago the original left camp commanding general was convicted and demoted. The higher ups transferred the original forward camp commanding general to our left camp.”

Lin Feng’s expression did not change: “It’s that whatever General Wicked you mentioned? His surname is Wicked, what about his name and master?”

Dao Zhiqiang shook his head hard: “His surname isn’t Wicked, his entire name is only one word, and that is Wicked! Before he joined the Shenwu Army he was originally a wandering cultivator. Reportedly he is the cross-generational successor of the God Slaying School that was greatly feared for a time during ancient times but has now already died out.”

“Rumour has it that General Wicked entered the path of cultivation through murder. He is a bloodthirsty butcher and I have never seen a cold-blooded and bloodthirsty person like him before. Anybody who he sees as an eyesore is killed by him. Don’t mention cultivators, even the number of regular humans, women and children who have died by his hand is innumerable.”

Dao Zhiqiang's face was deathly pale. He said slowly: "Attacking other countries in the past, the number of mortal cities massacred by General Wicked is counted by the hundreds. His current cultivation level may only be auras core stage, but with his notoriety, he is hailed as the Shenwu Army's number one butcher."

Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath. He wanted to ask something more, but a wave of shocking murderous intent suddenly exploded forth from the Shenwu Army camp across from him.

"Just relying on a broken auras core stage magic item you dare to pry on our army's battle formation? Cowardly scoundrel, die!"

Before the voice had died away, a pitch-black sword aura flew out from the void and stabbed straight towards Lin Feng who was in the sky.

The sword aura was as black as ink, harboring a terrifying aura of endless slaughter, death and destruction. It gathered the fiendish malevolent energy of countless dead souls, the sword aura that was like a door plank wanted to tear the sky asunder!

Lin Feng wanted to control the Black Cloud Flag to shift space, but he discovered that the surrounding space actually seemed to have been sealed. The Black Cloud Flag actually had no effect.

Alarmed, Lin Feng looked towards the Shenwu Army's battle formation. He saw that the mana of all 3000 Shenwu Army cultivators seemed to connect together as one. It was vast and

enormous, seemingly without bound or limit.

The boundless mana was condensed together and soared to the heavens. It actually completely sealed the space around the desert lone mountain.

Even the miasma fog that has spanned for thousands of years in the Ancient World Marsh has to give way to it. A clear space was directly cleared out where the Shenwu Army's battle formation stood.

The Black Cloud Flag is unable to be used and that fiendish, bloodthirsty pitch-black sword aura has already arrived right in front of Lin Feng's eyes.

Chapter 94: Ancient Legacy, Heaven Defying Sword Of Fatality

The sword aura is as black as ink and harbours an endless air of murder and death.

Facing this sword, Lin Feng felt as though he was facing a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood.

He looked in the direction the sword aura came from and saw a well-built middle-aged man wearing heavy armour quietly standing at the very front of the Shenwu Army battle formation. He was like that sharpest point with the heaviest bloodlust at the tip of the sword, he brimmed with an unrivalled aura of power.

“Wicked?” Lin Feng’s forehead slightly wrinkled. In the blink of an eye the 24 Heavens Arhat Formation was already laid down. Buddhist light and chanting surged, protecting Lin Feng in the middle.

Without any hesitation, the three fire arhats rose up above him. Acala’s buddhist body appeared in the boundless sea of fire, releasing a beam of the Fury Flames of Acala that intercepted the pitch-black sword aura in mid path.

The milky-white little ember appears weak, but it destroys all in its path. In an instant it burned the pitch-black sword aura to a crisp.

The sword aura may have disappeared, but the thick killing intent and air of death lingered, turning into rolling black smoke that swirled in front of Lin Feng.

Wicked who stood at the front of the army battle formation didn't even move, he only slightly raised his eyebrow: "The Fury Flames of Acala? Sarira? A damned monk of the Great Thunder Monastery?"

He asked three questions in succession, but not needing Lin Feng to respond, Wicked's face suddenly revealed a smile: "Then you have to die too."

While speaking, Wicked suddenly took a step forward and the next moment, he vanished on the spot.

The highest level of alert went off in Lin Feng's heart and all of his hairs stood on end.

Behind him, a pitch-black sword aura as thin as an awn silently drilled into the buddhist light formation. It moved freely in the golden light haze like a swimming fish, rapidly piercing towards the center of Lin Feng's back.

The sword aura may be as small as a needlepoint or awn, but as long as it hits, it can completely destroy Lin Feng's body and soul in an instant. There is no way to survive!

The buddhist light may be unable to block the sword aura, but it

let Lin Feng know at the first moment that someone is attacking him from behind.

Lin Feng wanted to dodge using the Cloud Dragon Escape, but he had a feeling that no matter how he dodged, the pitch-black sword aura as thin as an awn would always be right behind him like a maggot attached to bone, unable to be shaken off.

Under this sword, there is no road to Heaven and no door into the earth, all paths of survival have been sealed. You can only wait to die and receive this attack.

The sword art passed down by the ancient God Slaying School, the Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality!

Between the Heaven and Earth there is always a ray of hope. The number of the great expansion is 49 and is dynamic due to lacking one. (TL: There's a hella long explanation behind this that you really don't care about. Basically saying there is always room for some change, nothing is absolute due to the laws of the universe being incomplete and lacking.)

But the God Slaying School's sword technique forcibly goes against the heavens, annihilating all life and cutting off the ray of hope. It is a sword of absolute death, thus its name the Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality!

Lin Feng tightly knit his brow, he was startled but not flustered. The Acala buddhist body in the sea of fire in the air above his head shouted: "Buddha is merciful, but sometimes He also shows wrath,

releasing eternal flames of fury, eradicating all evil, burning everything and all!”

With this shout, the milky-white Fury Flames of Acala shot out from the vertical eye at the center of the Acala buddhist body, turning into a hazy rain of fire and completely shrouding Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s body stopped abruptly. The pitch-black sword aura had already caught up and stabbed right at the center of his back, but it was blocked by the Fury Flames of Acala around Lin Feng’s body.

Lin Feng snorted: “I’ve got you now.” The Fury Flames of Acala originally blocking his entire body like a shield rapidly gathered at the center of his back, going all-out against Wicked’s Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality.

After coming in contact with the milky-white ember, the pitch-black sword aura burst open and turned into a cloud of torrential black sword energy that shot towards Lin Feng.

The boundless sea of sword energy seemed to want to drown Lin Feng and then completely shred him.

The Fury Flames of Acala stopped his attack, but Lin Feng was unable to relax in his heart and his sense of danger instead became increasingly stronger.

Wicked’s figure slowly rose up from the sea of endless sword

energy. He walked towards Lin Feng step by step, monstrous killing intent virtually froze Lin Feng.

“So it’s just a little qi disciple stage ant who obtained buddhist sariras by luck and refined them into magic items.” Wicked said with a calm expression: “Okay then, now, praise me or else I will kill you.”

Lin Feng twisted his eyebrows: “Praise you, is there something wrong with you head?”

“Of course not.” Wicked said seriously: “I cultivate the ancient path of murder, only slaughter can increase my cultivation level, so I constantly kill people. I’ve killed too many people, killing to the point where I’ve become numb, lost and tired of it.”

“Only by obtaining the praise of others after I kill people do I feel like killing has regained meaning again. So, now, praise me!”

Lin Feng grinned: “So there really is something wrong with your head, taking you too seriously is my fault.”

Wicked shook his head: “Are you not willing, then you can die now.”

Before his voice had died away, the sword at Wicked’s waist was finally unsheathed and stabbed straight towards Lin Feng.

The limitless black sword energy in the air all disappeared at this

instant. All of it gathered on Wicked's sword and stabbed towards the center of Lin Feng's brow.

At this moment in front of Lin Feng's eyes, the tiny tip of the sword filled his entire vision, becoming nearly infinitely big.

At this moment, the sword tip the size of a grain of rice was the entire world. Nothing else could remain, only this sword.

No path to retreat, nowhere to run!

Lin Feng laughed. In the first place the Fury Flames of Acala is an offensive ability, using it to defend is a complete waste. Facing Wicked's sword, Lin Feng decided to give up on defending himself and all of the Fury Flames of Acala went to attack Wicked.

Wicked completely ignored it and only focused on stabbing straight towards the center of Lin Feng's brow.

Even if he is killed by the Fury Flames of Acala he has to first kill Lin Feng!

The path of absolute death is one of pure offense, not leaving a way out for the enemy nor himself. It's either your death or mine, this is the Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality!

Going against the heavens, severing all chances of survival!

Lin Feng's expression finally changed. He can clearly judge that compared to his Fury Flames of Acala, Wicked's sword is faster.

If they go head-on against each other, the result will definitely be him having a hole poked in him first by this Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality.

At this critical moment, Lin Feng was instead even more calm. His mind communicated with the 24 Heavens Arhat Formation and at the same time his mana instantly converted from the Art of Acala to the Kṣitigarbha Sutra.

The 24 sariras forming the formation are all the spiritual remains of the eminent monks of the Great Thunder Monastery. In life, three of these great buddhist cultivators practised the Art of Acala, so Lin Feng unleashed the Fury Flames of Acala with these three sariras as the core.

Now under the trigger of Lin Feng's Kṣitigarbha Sutra mana, one arhat light figure amongst the 24 arhat light figures instantly reacted.

The other 23 arhat light figures simultaneously chanted a buddhist prayer. They all turned into golden buddhist light and rushed towards that arhat light figure, fusing into his body.

This golden arhat's entire body shined brightly. The light was not glaring and was as yellowish and heavy as the earth.

The golden arhat's appearance gradually changed, turning into the appearance of a bodhisattva holding a jewel in the left hand, carrying a staff in the right and sitting on a lotus.

The Kṣitigarbha Bodhisattva form!

“If the hells are not empty I will not become a Buddha. Only when all living beings have been saved, will I attain Bodhi.”

The distant buddhist chanting seemed to come from the horizon, but also seemed to come from the nine hells.

The Kṣitigarbha form combined together as one with Lin Feng's body, turning into a gilded buddhist body.

The Gilded Kṣitigarbha Body!

Lin Feng had just formed the Gilded Kṣitigarbha Body and saw that the tip of Wicked's sword was only three inches away from the center of his brow. His killing intent was monstrous and the cold air from the sword froze Lin Feng's entire body. He was unable to move and the situation was extremely dangerous.

“Clang!” With a crisp ring, Wicked's sword had already touched the center of Lin Feng's brow. But it was unable to pierce through and was stubbornly withstood by Lin Feng's Gilded Kṣitigarbha Body.

Even though Lin Feng felt a stinging pain at the center of his

brow and the powerful force made his brain virtually a jumbled mess, but against Wicked's sword of absolute death Lin Feng defended against it using the Gilded Kṣitigarbha Body.

The course of the entire event was a close call!

Not succeeding with one attack, Wicked's figure turned into a complete blur, going around Lin Feng's body he instantly stabbed out hundreds of thousands of times. All of the vital points on Lin Feng's body were stabbed by Wicked.

As the world famous top-tier defensive ability of the Great Thunder Monastery of the past, it withstood the test, taking on Wicked's thousand sword assassination and not breaking.

“Besides the Fury Flames of Acala he also has the Gilded Kṣitigarbha Body?” Wicked wrinkled his brow. He suddenly sheathed his sword and retreated. His body flickered and he had actually already fallen back to the front of the army battle formation.

Lin Feng did not relax and instead became even more vigilant. This bloodthirsty lunatic in front definitely wouldn't do something like retreating in the face of difficulty. Abnormal behaviour often means a fiercer and more brutal wave of attacks.

Landing in front of the army formation, Wicked raised his sword. His entire being combined together with the mana of the 3000 Shenwu Army cultivators. The monstrous killing intent skyrocketed and virtually swept over the entire area.

Seeing this scene, some information about the Shenwu Army suddenly flashed by in Lin Feng's head.

“Crap, it's the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation!”

Chapter 95: The Terrifying Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation

The Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation, rumors say it was created by the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu. It is a compulsory course for the cultivators of the Great Zhou Dynasty's Shenwu Army. It gathers the mana of multiple low-level cultivators at one point, infusing it into the body of the commanding general thereby causing the commanding general's strength to have a qualitative leap.

The method is similar to how some sects raise dao soldiers. They use special formations to unite the numerous sect members who practise the same dao technique as one. As long as there are enough low cultivation level disciples, matched with the formation they can go against opponents with much higher cultivation levels than them but with fewer numbers.

And after going through the Marquis of Xuanji's improvements, the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation is even more domineering and profound. It can actually combine the mana of cultivators who practise different dao techniques to form the formation.

This Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation is the Great Zhou Dynasty's ace weapon of destruction. At the very least it is formed by 100 people, at the most it can link together the entire Shenwu Army's tens of thousands of cultivators as one.

In the battle of the elimination of buddhism in the past, it was the entire Shenwu Army's tens of thousands of cultivators who

formed the most powerful Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation of all time, fighting hard for numerous days and nights and blasting open the Great Thunder Monastery's protective formation, [the Vairocana Formation](#).

If not so, the number of allied cultivators who would have died in front of the Vairocana Formation would at least need to be doubled.

Currently there naturally can't be tens of thousands of cultivators under Wicked's leadership forming the formation and providing mana to him, but the power of 3000 people is still sufficient to boost Wicked's strength to an unimaginable degree.

Even if they're all qi disciple stage, 3000 cultivators by themselves are a powerful force. Yet, now they are focusing everybody's mana together, amongst them there are even dozens of foundation establishment stage cultivators coordinating and commanding.

So upon seeing Wicked lay out the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation, Lin Feng didn't have any hesitation and dashed backwards without even turning his head.

No shit, with 3000 people, if they line up and take turns punching him he'll still be flat as a pancake after he's healed. Not to mention the power of 3000 people is focused in one attack, furthermore there is Wicked this aurous core stage cultivator leading the group. Only an idiot would fight with him.

“You lunatic, you can’t deal with me 1v1 so you bring your bros to gang up on me.” Lin Feng was extremely irritated: “If you want to gang up on me then whatever, but all of a sudden bringing 3000 people to gang up on me alone, could you be even more shameless?”

What made Lin Feng even more anxious is that the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation has actually sealed the surrounding space. He is unable to use the Black Cloud Flag’s spatial shifting ability to leave this place. With this he can be considered to be trapped in a dead alley.

Seeing Lin Feng turn into a streak of black light and escape, Wicked was not in a hurry. The blade of his sword slowly pointed towards the lone desert mountain that the members of the Society of the Strong Gale occupied. He laughed saying: “Nobody can escape, you all have to die.”

Where his sword pointed to, endless killing intent and hostility gathered. The miasma fog above the lone mountain was already scattered clean, revealing the dark and gloomy sky. Dark clouds covered the sky, weighing down on people making it difficult to breath.

The movement created by the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation naturally also startled the members of the Society of the Strong Gale on the lone mountain. Facing the threat of the Zhou army, everybody’s hearts were heavy.

Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag, flying back to the lone mountain and silently hiding inside.

“Why did you return back?” Dao Zhiqiang asked in puzzlement.

In the battle with Wicked before, Lin Feng used the Black Cloud Flag to cut-off Dao Zhiqiang’s and Wang Lin’s perception of the outside world. So they don’t know what just happened.

Hearing Dao Zhiqiang’s question, Lin Feng naturally won’t tell him that if it weren’t for the fact that he ran fast, he would have been locked onto by the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation’s energy flow. At that he wouldn’t be able to run if he wanted to, he can only wait for death.

On the contrary, under these circumstances, Lin Feng is even more calm and composed: “Why didn’t you report the intel here back to Wicked before? The reason I came back is the same as yours.”

Dao Zhiqiang nodded his head and then said with worry: “The 3000 people of the entire forward brigade left camp are all here and have laid down the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation. It’s also General Wicked who is controlling it, they can even fight a nascent soul stage cultivator.”

Lin Feng fully agreed in his heart, but on the surface he just smiled indifferently and appeared enigmatic.

“Holy mother of Jesus, even if I fed all 24 sariras to the War God Golem it probably still wouldn’t work. The enemy isn’t using simple human wave tactics, it truly is a qualitative change induced

from quantitative change.

While thinking, Lin Feng entered into the mountain. He evaded the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators coming and going in haste, passing straight through the village and headed towards where Kang Nanhua was underground.

He remembers that Kang Nanhua said before that he laid down some Eternal River Quicksand Formation here. Even though he doesn't know the exact power, hearing Kang Nanhua's tone of voice it is definitely a large scale high level formation.

Lin Feng entered into the hole, but saw that there were already a couple of people standing inside. Hearing movement they all turned their heads around.

The person at the front had a beautiful appearance. She wore a body of red clothes, her crimson hair like fire and two fine eyebrows like two killing swords. Glaring with a pair of large beautiful eyes it was precisely Yue Hongyan.

Lin Feng's eyes flashed. Beside Yue Hongyan, a black-clothed man with a long scar on his face was also an old acquaintance. It was precisely that foundation establishment stage cultivator of the Society of the Strong Gale who kidnapped Zhu Yi that day in Tianjing City.

Seeing Lin Feng, the black-clothed man instantly furrowed his brow, even the scar on his face pulsed: "What the hell are the people outside doing?"

Yue Hongyan released a low humph: “Cut the crap, take him down first!” While speaking, the six foot black light halberd was already raised in her hand.

At this moment Kang Nanhua said: “Hongyan, Little Hei, stop.”

Yue Hongyan didn't turn her head, she still stared straight at Lin Feng and opened her mouth calling: “Mister Kang!”

Kang Nanhua said: “This daoist means no ill will, it's also all thanks to him that my injury was able to be fully healed.”

Hearing this, Yuen Hongyan and the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators present were all stunned. Their gazes looked back and forth between Lin Feng and Kang Nanhua in surprise.

That black-clothed man couldn't hold back saying: “But the Shenwu Army outside?”

“A wooden sword might have fallen in the hands of the Zhou army.” Kang Nanhua released a low sigh. Afterwards he looked towards Lin Feng: ‘If he wanted to do you guys harm, why would he help me heal my injury? Not to mention, his strength is only higher than mine, you guys are no match for him.’”

“You guys all already know about the situation outside?” Lin Feng coughed dryly. If he doesn't use the War God Golem, he doesn't have the confidence to defeat Kang Nanhua.

Kang Nanhua nodded his head, his expression solemn: “An aurous core stage cultivator leading a whole 3000 people. They’ve already formed the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation.”

He turned his head looking towards Yue Hongyan and co: “The Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation has sealed the surrounding boundary space. We can’t go out, we can only fight and make plans of retreating from here after repelling the enemy.”

Yue Hongyan and the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale all nodded their heads with grim faces. Yue Hongyan turned around and gave some instructions to the couple of Society of the Strong Gale leading figures behind her. These people all nodded their heads in compliance and withdrew from the tunnel together.

They are going to arrange for shelter for the mortal relatives in the village and to direct the members with fighting ability to make preparations for the final resistance.

Yue Hongyan looked towards Lin Feng, she raised her crimson red eyebrows: “Why did you leave and then return? Could it be that you also can’t deal with the Shenwu Army outside and need to take shelter in Mister Kang’s Eternal River Quicksand Formation?”

In his heart Lin Feng said, “You’re right doll.”, but on the surface he naturally won’t admit to it.

He didn’t speak either and only chuckled. He then turned his face away, looking like he couldn’t be bothered to answer Yue

Hongyan's question.

Yue Hongyan slightly furrowed her brow, the remaining few Society of the Strong Gale cultivators also revealed expressions of discontent.

That black-clothed man blocked in front of them and whispered: "Mister Kang will handle everything." Yue Hongyan turned her head glancing at Kang Nanhua and nodded her head not saying anything.

Right at this moment, Wicked's voice travelled over from outside the mountain. His voice was calm and cold: "It's practically like a nest of ants hiding in an ant nest. Just looking at it makes me sick, go die all of you."

A wave of bloody and wild mana fluctuations started vibrating. It was precisely the conception of power of the ancient God Slaying School's characteristical path of murder, but the power is countless times greater than when he was fighting Lin Feng before.

Outside of the lone mountain, the Shenwu Army of 3000 had formed the battle formation and stood menacingly on the desert land in front of the lone mountain. Near endless mana was poured into Wicked who stood at the front of the battle formation and their killing intent dashed to the skies.

This Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation was like a peerless sword of evil, slowly coming out of the scabbard wanting to slaughter all of mankind and dye the world in blood.

And Wicked, is the sharpest point of this evil sword.

His sword pointed at the sky and a change instantly occurred to the overcast sky.

The dark clouds covering the sky started spinning, slowly forming a massive vortex. At the eye of the vortex, ominous light flashed in all directions. The massive tip of a sword as pitch-black as ink slowly extended out from the eye of the dark cloud vortex.

That sword tip was virtually half the size of the peak of the lone mountain. It harbored the brutal conception of powers of great terror and great slaughter. A regular mortal would instantly die upon coming in contact with just the terrifying bloody aura.

The tip of the sword pointed straight at the one mountain, poised to strike!

Chapter 96: The Showdown Between Advanced Large-Scale Formations

Deep within the mountain, Lin Feng and co could still clearly sense the terrifying conception of power outside of the mountain.

Right now Kang Nanhua has fully recovered. He rose up and stood on top of the golden sand dune, but his expression was very serious. He muttered to himself: “The crux of the matter is to see who gives in first.”

His two hands rapidly changed spell signs and the golden sand dune beneath him slowly started shaking. Countless grains of golden sand floated towards the air. An endless flow of sand went around Lin Feng and co and floated outside of the hole.

Boundless golden sand flew straight out of the mountain, landing in the desert land at the foot of the lone mountain and mixing together with the gray sand on the desert, dotting it with golden light.

Lin Feng who witnessed this scene understood in his heart: “This golden sand is all sand that Kang Nanhua refined using his mana. It is powerful but the quantity is ultimately limited, thus he let it all out to lead the regular sand outside.”

“Just like having trained a bunch of officers and now he is placing them in the basic troops to lead the recruits.”

Outside of the lone mountain Wicked naturally also saw all of this. He laughed coldly: “They also laid down a large-scale formation here?” Finishing speaking the sword in his hand pointed from a distance.

The massive sword point at the eye of the dark cloud vortex in the air roared out of the clouds with a shrill whistle, shooting down at the lone mountain like a doomsday disaster.

Lin Feng’s heart tightened. This Wicked is also an accomplished fighter, his fighting experience is incredibly rich. Not waiting for Kang Nanhua to finishing setting up his formation, he instantly started attacking.

But Kang Nanhua was not anxious. His formation was already set up a long time ago, right now he’s just activating it.

His two hands changed spell signs again and the flowing water mixed together with the golden sand, turning into a stream of dark yellow water. It flew out of the lone mountain and assimilated into the vast marsh in the Ancient World Marsh.

“Boom!” With a loud crash like a flood breaching a dam, the marshland at the edge of the lone mountain’s desertland all exploded. It linked together with the golden sand spread over the desert before and turned into a mudslide that was like a torrential flood that flooded towards the lone mountain.

The Ganges Quicksand Formation!

The holy water of the eternal river flows endlessly, nurturing all life in calmness, flooding the world when roaring.

Kang Nanhua secretly sighed: “My Secret Records of Quicksand is just a fragment of the Eternal Ganges Quicksand Incantation. I can only unleash the power of the first level, ‘The Change of Quicksand’. If I could use all of the abilities and transformations of the formation I would be able to destroy this Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation before us.”

The surging mud turned into a monstrous wave that charged upwards.

“Rumbleee!”

At the same time, the lone mountain standing above the desert sank without stop into the ground while accompanied by continuous rumbling.

The boundless black and yellow muddy quicksand actually flew up into the air, forming a massive loop in the air that flowed endlessly. It enveloped that lone mountain that was gradually sinking into the earth and of which only a small hill remained.

The river of time rushes forward without stop, unstoppable and irreversible.

Kang Nanhua’s Ganges Quicksand Formation revealed this kind of steadfast, never faltering conception of power.

The massive pitch-black sword descended from the dark clouds, heavily cutting on the dark yellow Ganges water. It was hindered by the muddy quicksand and was unable to advance forward.

The flowing mud sand bumped into the massive pitch-black sword and constantly wore down the malicious mana harboured within.

His attack was obstructed, but at the front of the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation Wicked's face revealed a smile: "Victory is forever unable to be obtain by passively defending. You've lost this battle!"

He shouted aloud. The Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation's aura once again climbed. The mana of the 3000 cultivators gathered together, turning into a massive black column of smoke visible to the naked eye. It soared up to the nine heavens and continuously poured into the dark clouds.

The power of the massive pitch-black sword that stretched out from the dark clouds became increasingly deeper and condensed. That monstrous killing intent also seemed to have become a lot fainter, but it was even more terrifying. Because this killing intent runs even deeper and is more restrained, once it explodes it will certainly be even more violent and savage.

Presiding over the Ganges Quicksand Formation, Kang Nanhua was the first to notice the changes within. The massive pitch-black sword's downward momentum was originally already stopped, but

at this instant its power suddenly further increased and actually had signs of gradually breaking through the Ganges Quicksand Formation.

Even though the speed was extremely slow, virtually to the point where it was imperceptible, the massive pitch-black sword once again started descending.

Bit by bit, step after step, it looked like it was faltering and struggling, but it carried an unstoppable air. No matter how Kang Nanhua pushed the Ganges Quicksand Formation, he was unable to stop the massive pitch-black sword's momentum of descent.

Kang Nanhua's expression was very grave. The Ganges quicksand may be constantly sweeping over the massive pitch-black sword attempting to wear down the power within, but its speed is so slow that it can virtually be ignored. Towards the crisis before them it is just a drop in the bucket.

In the belly of the mountain, Lin Feng may not be able to see the scenery outside, but seeing Kang Nanhua's expression he knows that the situation is not good.

The Ganges Quicksand Formation borrows the Ancient World Marsh's world power, theoretically speaking it should be in an invincible position. But in the first place the formation that Kang Nanhua learned is incomplete, secondly the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation is truly too domineering.

3000 cultivators combined their power and poured all of it into

Wicked. In addition, Wicked's Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality is super strong and actually has signs of breaching the Ganges Quicksand Formation.

Human power ultimately has its ends. It falls short of the endlessness of the power of the world. If things drag on for a long time, the victor will certainly be Kang Nanhua.

But with 3000 people unleashing all of their power in an instant, it is possible to breach the Ganges Quicksand Formation first before they exhaust their energy.

Now Lin Feng understands why Kang Nanhua said before that the crux of the matter is seeing who gives in first.

If the Ganges Quicksand Formation fails first and is breached by the enemy, then naturally everything is over. If the Ganges Quicksand Formation holds on and exhausts the mana of the 3000 Shenwu cultivators outside first, then these Shenwu soldiers are all fish on the chopping board at the mercy of the Ganges Quicksand Formation.

Lin Feng secretly furrowed his brow and thought: "But looking at the situation right now it's clearly Kang Nanhua who will give in first."

"What should I do?" Lin Feng thoughts rapidly turned.

At this moment, the massive pitch-black sword's sharp killing

intent was already about to be unable to be suppressed. Endless sword energy burst forth. It was just like the crushing winds above the nine heavens and was constantly cutting at the mountain body that was still revealed on the surface.

In front of the sword energy, the hard mountain rock was as fragile as tofu. Lines after lines were cut out on the mountain.

In the belly of the mountain, the earth trembled and the mountain swayed. Broken rock constantly fell down and massive rocks directly crushed the houses in the village turning them into ruins.

Kang Nanhua's face that had originally regained its rosy glow once again turned pale at this moment.

“Host's disciple Zhu Yi has obtained the Thunder Element Sigil, Host has successfully completed the random side quest, rewarding one lottery chance!”

Lin Feng was dazed for a moment before recovering. He said in his mind: “The little punks did not disappoint!”

Although the reward for completing this side quest isn't a fixed amount of trading points but a lottery chance.

“Art of the Turbid Waves, Art of the Turbid Waves.....” Lin Feng chanted the dao technique that he is lacking in his heart and entered into the lottery system.

The wheel system... Nothing!

The dice system... Also nothing!

“.....” Lin Feng’s chest tightened and he almost cursed.

The Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation’s offensive is growing increasingly heavier. At the deepest part of the belly of the mountain, Lin Feng could also feel violent vibrations and the Ganges Quicksand Formation looked like was about to give in.

Kang Nanhua pressed his lips together unyielding. He didn’t say anything and only supported the formation with his full power.

A hint of despair flashed across in the eyes of Yue Hongyan and co and was then replaced by unparalleled resolve and an unyielding spirit.

Lin Feng’s palms were already sweating, he rapidly thought in his heart: “What should I do now, exactly what should I do? Exactly... Wait a second!”

Suddenly lifting his head, Lin Feng’s eyes stared straight at Kang Nanhua: “Please God don’t be wrong!”

This Kang Nanhua’s dao technique, the Secret Records of Quicksand should also meet the requirements for “Lake”, right?

Usually it is undoubtedly very difficult to scheme for such an aurous core stage cultivator's dao technique, but the current crisis has created conditions for Lin Feng.

Danger is always accompanied by opportunity.

Lin Feng inhaled a deep breath and silently straightened his appearance. He then calmly opened his mouth asking: "Fellow Daoist Kang, the dao technique you practise doesn't seem to be complete?"

At this time everybody's hearts were all in their mouths. With Lin Feng's sudden interruption, everybody instantly felt uncomfortable. With Yue Hongyan at the head they all glared at Lin Feng.

The more critical the times are, the calmer Lin Feng is. He still had a calm and relaxed appearance. He didn't look at Yue Hongyan and co who were glaring at him and just stared at Kang Nanhua.

While directing the formation Kang Nanhua nodded his head.

Lin Feng said: "This Secret Records of Quicksand of yours, I vaguely remember seeing the complete version somewhere. Although I can't confirm yet, I wonder if you can let me see it and let me compare them?"

Chapter 97: All Who Believe In Me, I Never Disappoint Them

“I wonder if you can let me look at your dao technique and let me compare them?”

With Lin Feng’s words, Kang Nanhua was instantly stunned.

One Society of the Strong Gale member finally couldn’t hold back crying out: “You bastard, did you come to take advantage of us?”

Yue Hongyan tightly knit her brow not speaking while the black-clothed man said heavily: “If you’ve really seen the complete version before then read it out to Mister Kang, isn’t that the same?”

Lin Feng ignored them and just silently looked at Kang Nanhua.

Kang Nanhua observed him very seriously for a while. After a long time he didn’t say anything either, a jade slip flew out from his sleeve and directly landed in front of Lin Feng.

After handing the jade slip over to Lin Feng, Kang Nanhua put all of his attention on the Ganges Quicksand Formation and strived to resist the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation’s pressure.

Lin Feng grabbed the jade slip. His mind entered within and instantly a long dao technique formula swarmed into his mind. It

was precisely the Secret Records of Quicksand dao technique that Kang Nanhua practised.

“Please be useable!”

Lin Feng stared nervously at the last remaining black hole of the eight trigrams images in the dao technique creation system. In his mind he thought of the Secret Records of Quicksand.

It seemed to be just an instant, but Lin Feng felt like he waited for a whole million years.

The next instant, white light lit up!

In the dark void, eight clusters of white light floated in the air based on the eight trigrams positions, silently flashing.

Art of the Scattered Stars, Kṣitigarbha Sutra, Heavenly Wind Daoist Scripture, Nine Heavens Thunder Technique, Netherworld Nirvana Manual, Art of Acala, Supreme Mountain Script, Secret Records of Quicksand...

Heaven, Earth, Wind, Thunder, Water, Fire, Mountain and Lake, the eight types of dao techniques have finally been gathered!

Lin Feng exhaled a breath of relief in near exhaustion. The system notifications beside his ears right now were like music to the ears.

“The number of basic reference dao techniques has met the requirements, starting to merge now!”

“Dao technique merging commencing... Dao technique merging complete... Starting to create 《Heavenly Scripture of the Dao》chapter one 《Eight Trigrams Chapter》.

“《Heavenly Scripture of the Dao》chapter one 《Eight Trigrams Great Daoist Scripture of the Heavens》successfully created!”

A tremendous change occurred to the mana in Lin Feng’s body. At this moment, the many dao techniques he practised before all vanished, all of his mana changed to a completely new state.

Lin Feng’s mind entered into an extremely profound extraordinary state. There wasn’t a sliver of light before his eyes, it was darkness and chaos.

Suddenly a seemingly infinitely distant voice coming from an ineffable time and space, crossing over limitless space and time but also seemingly right beside Lin Feng’s ears sounded in the depths of his heart.

The voice appeared not loud, Lin Feng had to focus all of his attention to be able to catch it. But it also seemed deafeningly loud, filling the entire space and shaking Lin Feng’s soul causing him to be unsettled.

Following the rise of the voice, a point of light gradually appeared. It appeared infinitely small in the vast expanse of darkness, but it was incredibly clear and constantly spread out in all directions.

The light was not dazzling nor hot, it was just the purest most fundamental light. Gradually dispersing the darkness and chaos, prompting them to constantly evolve.

The light looked extremely small, but Lin Feng felt that the immensity of that point of light far surpassed his imagination, such that he couldn't explain it. Because its size surpassed the hundreds of millions of times of any object that Lin Feng knew!

That point of light suddenly collapsed, turning into countless streaks of light that filled all of the darkness and chaos in an instant.

The millions of streaks of light turned into countless sights, stars, lightning, fire, the sea, flowing water, tempests, rain and snow, lava, the earth, deserts, trees, plants, metals, stones... A sea of infinity, all-encompassing and all-embracing. Everything that Lin Feng knows and doesn't know is there, making his eyes dizzy and dazzled.

The primal chaos developing into the vast universe, and then the birth and death of billions of stars, a myriad of phenomena, countless lives being born and then fading away.

Time brings great changes to the world. Everything constantly

cycles and changes. Creation, aging, decaying and then dying.

Lin Feng stood silently for a moment. The corner of his lips revealed a calm smile and he muttered to himself: “Eight Trigrams Great Daoist Scripture of the Heavens... This is the true meaning of creation!”

He was wholeheartedly meditating on his dao technique and didn't notice that Yue Hongyan and co were all closely staring at him.

Right now all of Lin Feng's attention was placed on the system.

“Congratulations on the success of Host's original sect fundamental dao technique!”

“Congratulations, Host has completed the second main quest!”

“Issuing main quest special reward!”

Lin Feng opened the main quest special reward at the first moment. The reason he worked so hard was precisely to complete the main quest. He was after this special reward.

“The first main quest's reward, the War God Golem is already so powerful. As the second quest you surely can't be shabby, right?”

The special reward this time was a formation diagram.

“The Yin-Yang Life & Death Formation, elaborating the universal laws of the dawn of the universe, yin-yang and creation, and the birth and death of of all life. There are a total of six transformations.” Lin Feng closely explored the formation diagram and gradually had a plan in his heart: “These six transformations, one of them seems to be precisely able to deal with the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation.

Seeing Lin Feng look like he was spacing out, Yue Hongyan glared at him with her large eyes and couldn’t help wanting to lash out, but the mountain suddenly shook violently for a moment.

Outside of the lone mountain, right now the tip of the massive pitch-black sword stabbing down from the clouds in the sky was already about to land on the peak of the mountain!

The tremendous amount of quicksand mud materialized by the Ganges Quicksand Formation had currently completely engulfed the massive pitch-black sword, virtually wrapping it up into a big ball of mud. But it still couldn’t stop the massive pitch-black sword’s descent.

The massive sword virtually the same size as the mountain peak came pressing down with terrifying power that made people’s hearts pump. It was like a calamity.

Kang Nanhua sat cross-legged on the sand dune. His face was pale and his white clothes were already soaked in sweat.

His two hands changed spell signs in succession and he then suddenly spit out mouthful of vital blood filled with his vital essence.

Kang Nanhua's vital blood sprayed on the golden sand. The entire Ganges Quicksand Formation instantly pulled itself together and just barely blocked the descending sword blade.

But Kang Nanhua himself was clearly sapped of his strength, his face appeared increasingly more exhausted. Even worse is that this method was undoubtedly drinking poison to quench thirst, it won't last for too long.

Yue Hongyan gave Lin Feng a dirty look and then turned her body walking towards the outside.

The black-clothed man called: "Hongyan?"

Yue Hongyan said in a dull tone: "Go out and prepare. Even if the Ganges Quicksand Formation is breached, we've got to kill some more of them Zhou dogs!"

Lin Feng was also startled back to his senses by the power of the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation outside. Looking at Yue Hongyan's figure that was like raging fire, he smiled shaking his head: "Your courage is commendable."

Yue Hongyan who had already walked to the edge of the hole turned her head and glared at him. The other Society of the Strong

Gale members also stared at Lin Feng with wary faces.

“Do not be rude.” Kang Nanhua who was strenuously supporting the Ganges Quicksand Formation and did not say anything the entire time suddenly spoke at this moment.

Yue Hongyan said urgently: “Mister Kang, he...”

Kang Nanhua raised his hand stopping her and then his gaze looked towards Lin Feng. He said slowly: “I am incompetent, I am no match for the enemy’s Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation. The Zhou army’s commanding general this time is that butcher, Wicked. Where he passes by he never leaves survivors.”

“If he charges in, not mentioning the cultivators in the mountain, even civilians will be slaughtered.” Kang Nanhua said in a heavy tone: “I am not afraid of dying, but I am unable to uphold my promise in the past to Hongfeng.”

When Yue Hongyan heard this, the eyes of the always strong and firm girl slightly turned red: “Mister Kang, if not for you, the people here would have already all died under the butcher’s knife of the Zhou dogs many years ago. It is us who dragged you down. If Big Brother knew in the underworld he definitely wouldn’t blame you, he would only blame himself for harming you.”

Kang Nanhua waved his hand, his eyes stared straight at Lin Feng: “I see that you are as calm as ever, you don’t seem to think anything of the 3000 Zhou soldiers outside and their Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation?”

“If you have great power, please save the people here. I Kang Nanhua would be eternally grateful!”

Finishing speaking, the white-clothed youth with a face of exhaustion actually slowly fell to his knees on top of the sand dune.

Yue Hongyan and co all had expressions of shock. They all stared blankly and Kang Nanhua and Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s face was calm He looked quietly at him: “You believe in me?”

Kang Nanhua said word by word: “I, do!”

Lin Feng sighed: “This favor, I’ll do it!”

“All who believe in me, I never disappoint them.”

Chapter 98: Reversing Life And Death, Turning The World Upside Down

Outside of the lone mountain, Wicked controlled the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation with a calm face. But no matter how you looked at it, his calm expression carried a tone of callousness and bloodlust.

Far away, the massive black sword tip charged straight down and was already touching the peak of the lone mountain.

Violent killing intent and death energy filled the atmosphere. The entire surrounding of the lone mountain seemed to have been enveloped by a mass of black air. Ordinary creatures would instantly have their lives taken upon coming in contact with this black air and die.

Facing such heavy death energy, even those Shenwu Army cultivators behind Wicked had a look of fear.

Suddenly a small dot of light flew out from the belly of the lone mountain, landing in the air above the mountain peak.

Wicked focused his eyes. Not waiting for him to react, the dot of light rapidly expanded. Countless beams of light wove together in a remarkable and strange pattern, forming a strange design in the air.

That was a profound formation. Its size was incredibly big, not

only did it surpass the area of the lone mountain, it even included the surrounding desert around the lone mountain. The edge of it spread to the vast marsh around the area.

The 3000 Shenwu Army cultivators involuntarily raised their heads looking over. Above their heads, the incredibly massive formation enveloped the surrounding hundred kilometers of land.

The formation flashed with light and slowly came down. It landed on the ground and disappeared in an instant as though it sank underground.

One Shenwu Army cultivator touched his body. The beams of light that just formed the formation just passed through his body like that and then landed in the ground beneath his feet.

The formation was just a fleeting glimpse. Appearing in a rush and then disappearing in a rush as if it never existed before.

In front of the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation Wicked smiled coldly: “Do you only know how to play petty tricks? Then go die.”

“The army has sealed the surrounding space. Regardless if it’s those Snowgale scum or that young daoist before, they all can’t escape from the area of this mountain. You guys, all have to die!”

Wicked guided his sword and his mana once again increased!

The rock at the peak of the mountain already had countless fissures cut into it from the sharp sword energy. Being pushed by the black sword tip right now, it instantly fell apart. The entire mountain peak crumbled and was about to completely collapse.

Countless mud and sand surrounded the outside of the black sword aura, still striving to wear down the massive sword's power and slow down the massive sword's momentum of descent.

But no matter how you looked at it, it appeared so feeble and in vain.

In the belly of the mountain, Yue Hongyan and co all looked at Lin Feng in great disappointment. One person couldn't bear the enormous pressure and roared at Lin Feng: "A little trick like a distraction, this is your ability?"

The black-clothed man stopped him. He glanced at Kang Nanhua and then looked at Lin Feng: "Mister Kang really was wrong about you. Since you don't have such ability, why put on an act?"

Yue Hongyan waved her hand in irritation: "Saying this stuff now is useless. Let's go, how can we just sit back and do nothing?"

Lin Feng turned a deaf ear to them and instead slightly closed his eyes in a relaxed demeanor, pinching his fingers together and calculating.

He was waiting.

Outside of the mountain, Wicked was also waiting, waiting for the instant when his sword force reached it's peak.

At this time, the mana of the 3000 Shenwu Army cultivators was already pushed to the limits. Such an immense amount of mana gathered together and under Wicked's guidance, steadily mixed into the dark clouds in the sky, There it was transformed to demonic sword aura with monstrous killing intent.

“Going against the heavens, annihilating all life!”

Light surged in Wicked's eyes. He flew up into the air and flew straight into the dark clouds that were the source of the sword aura, disappearing out of sight.

But following Wicked himself entering into the dark clouds, the pitch-black sword aura's violent demonic energy once again soared to a new level.

The pitch-black sword aura bared countless thin cracks like spider webs. The inside of the cracks were bright red like blood and the demonic energy shook the world!

These cracks appeared but the sword aura did not have signs of breaking down. Instead it became increasingly more vicious and its power was even more condensed and powerful.

Wicked's voice filled with killing intent travelled over from the

clouds: “Now is the time!”

Before his voice had died away, the pitch-black sword aura covered with blood streaks suddenly flashed with a red light!

The next instant, the mud and sand surrounding the sword aura suddenly crumbled.

The Ganges Quicksand Formation, broken!

The peak of the mountain came crashing down.

The upper part of the mountainside turned into countless broken rocks, rumbling and rolling down.

In the belly of the mountain, it was like the sky was falling and the earth was opening up. The earth shook and the mountain swayed, it was like the apocalypse had arrived!

Yue Hongyan and co were either alarmed or paled with fear.

At this moment, Lin Feng’s closed eyes suddenly opened.

“Now is the time!”

The killing intent and death energy in the enemy’s attack has already reached its peak, this is the moment!

Lin Feng placed his hands in front of his chest and constantly changed spell signs. One after another commands were transmitted to the Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation that was already prepared.

“Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation, open!”

“The six paths of creation and perishment, the transformation of life and death, rise!”

The massive formation that had originally disappeared suddenly lit up at this moment. Limitless light shot up into the sky and illuminated everybody’s astonished faces.

If you looked down from an extremely high place, you would be able to see that with the lone mountain as the center, a massive formation lit up on the ground. Countless beams of light outlined one after another profound patterns.

These patterns gathered together and formed a massive distinct black and white pattern that enveloped the surrounding hundred kilometers of ground around the lone mountain.

The massive formation slowly rose up and stopped the descending black-blood greatsword in the air.

An amazing scene occurred. Inside of the massive formation, the black and white extremes slowly turned and were actually

constantly wearing down and devouring the black-blood greatsword that landed on it.

Upon landing in the black and white extremes, the killing intent sword energy that tears the sky and splits the ground, slaughtering all life vanished out of sight.

There was no earthshaking collision or confrontation. Wicked's Heaven Defying Sword released by drawing support from the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation set up by 3000 cultivators, just silently disappeared like that within the massive formation.

“What is that?” Inside of the Shenwu Army's battle formation, somebody exclaimed and pointed at the ground in front.

The other people did not pay attention to him. It's not that they didn't hear him, but that everybody was all stupefied by the scene before their eyes.

Right in the area that was enveloped by the massive formation's light, the surface that was originally desert and marsh was actually covered by a patch of green.

Countless fresh green grass and blooming flowers actually emerged from the mud and yellow sand one after another, turning this place into a sea of flowers.

Exuberant vitality, lush greenery and a strong breath of life, it formed a sharp contrast with the killing intent and death energy

still constantly raging in the air.

Just as though two completely opposite worlds.

Worlds of life and death.

And the dividing line of the two worlds was precisely that massive formation in the air.

This formation continuously converted the killing intent and death energy Wicked was releasing into vital energy.

The stronger his death energy, the more powerful the formation instead grew.

The lone mountain was already completely split open. The people in the belly of the mountain all blankly looked at the scene in the sky. Numerous people kneeled on the ground and humbly thanked the blessings of the gods.

Yue Hongyan and co all looked at Lin Feng in shock, none of them could speak.

Lin Feng's voice travelled out from the massive formation. His voice was calm and was clearly transmitted to the ears of everyone present. Both the Shenwu Army and the Society of the Strong Gale could clearly hear his voice.

“I originally did not want meddle in the matter between you guys. For the cultivators of the Society of the Strong Gale, the people in the mountain are your family, but do the 3000 Shenwu soldiers outside of the mountain not too have family?”

“But, Wicked, you are atrocious and ruthless. You pursue matters to the brutal end. You forced my hand.”

The dark clouds in the sky were already about to be fully cleared, revealing Wicked’s incredibly dark face. For the first time his cold face displayed a manic, bloodthirsty expression: “Deceiving brat, I beat the crap out of you before and you actually still dare to show your face now?”

“Then I’ll cut you into a million pieces and see if you still dare to be arrogant!”

Wicked howled and his sword force once and strengthened.

But no matter how hard he tried, he could not do anything to the Yin-Yan Creation & Perishment Formation. On the contrary, the more force he applied, the stronger the Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation’s power became.

The Heaven Defying Sword of Fatality’s power of destruction and death were steadily being converted to life energy.

Lin Feng smiled indifferently: “You seek death yourself, I shall grant your wish.”

His two hands once again changed spell signs.

“The six paths of creation and perishment, the transformation of Heaven and Earth, rise!”

The life energy in the Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation was all assimilated into the formation. The formation radiated with light and an enormous force overturning the universe suddenly burst forth.

For a moment, the 3000 Shenwu Army cultivators within the formation felt like all of the space before them flipped over. The sky was constantly collapsing and came crashing down straight towards their heads.

While the earth beneath their feet was constantly rioting. Mud and sand rolled up, blotting out the sky and covering the sun, wanting to completely bury them.

The great apocalyptic change to the world made the entire Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation instantly fall apart. The 3000 cultivators all covered their heads and ran, but how could they escape from the assault of the Ying-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation's power?

The sky, the previously ethereal and lofty sky was overturning.

The earth, the earth that previously carried the weight of all was

roaring!

The entire world turned upside and nobody could stop it!

3000 people, 3000 cultivators were all buried in the vast marsh.

Wicked's eyes were bloodshot and he howled. The mana that was gathered before still hadn't dissipated, it converged at the tip of his sword into a point of red light of utter bloody rage and pointed straight at the center of the Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation.

As though the Milky Way came cascading downward, a sword flashing a red light as dark as blood shot out!

Lin Feng took a step forward and had already assimilated with the Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation. His ice-cold voice travelled out from the formation.

“Those who kill will always be killed by others.”

“The six paths of creation and perishment, the transformation of life and death, turn!”

The black and white extremes of the formation directly reversed. Mass amounts of life energy were converted to monstrous death energy and dyed the sky black.

The massive black sword tip the size of a small mountain once again appeared. But this time it peeked out from Lin Feng's Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation!

Wicked was so angered his eyes seemed about to pop out, he watched helplessly as the massive black sword whistled and shot towards him.

The red sword light collided with the massive black sword in mid air.

There was only one outcome for it.

Breaking!

Red light scattered all over the sky, illuminating Wicked's face of despair.

The massive black sword pierced straight through Wicked who was in the air. The massive sword tip was countless times bigger than Wicked's body, but it accurately pierced Wicked's body.

All of the power, without any waste, exploded in Wicked's body.

Endless black light exploded in the air, exploding, exploding and exploding again!

General Wicked, bloodthirsty and cruel, walking the path of

murder, enjoying listening those slain praise him before death.

He also only had one outcome.

Death!

Chapter 99: High Risk High Reward

The massive black sword the size of a small mountain shot up into the sky, as if wanting to tear the sky.

The instant Wicked's body came in contact with the black sword he crumbled into dust.

Countless streaks of black light exploded in the air, scattering in all directions like a meteor shower.

All of the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators raised their heads and blankly stared at the sky above their heads. There, the massive sword ripped open the thick layer of clouds in the sky. A warm sunshine beamed down landing on everybody's bodies.

God knows how many suns and moons they hadn't seen the sunlight in this miasma filled Ancient World Marsh?

The children released waves of cheers while the adults teared up with the impulse to cry.

Yue Hongyan and co also all stared in shock at the sky above their heads.

It's over just like that?

Just a moment ago, the Ganges Quicksand Formation crumbled

and the lone mountain peak collapsed. The people in the belly of the mountain were all exposed under the enemy's butcher's knife and they were about to be slaughtered.

But at this moment, 3000 cultivators, the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation and General Wicked actually just perished like that?

Yue Hongyan's hairs stood on end as she watched Lin Feng who put away the formation diagram and descended from the sky.

The red-haired girl stood dazed and fell into a trance. Those two crimson brows that were always raised and were like two thin killing swords also looked a lot more gentle due to her daze.

Lin Feng's expression was indifferent. His white clothes were spotlessly clean.

The group of Society of the Strong Gale cultivators looked back and forth between each other. They all had expressions of awkwardness and stared at Lin Feng unable to speak.

Yue Hongyan returned to her senses, her expression was also extremely complicated.

But she did not hesitate and directly bowed straight down to Lin Feng, squarely saluting him: "You have great power and turned the tide of the battle. Yue Hongyan will remember your kindness for as long as I live. I was rude to you before, punish me however you

will.”

The black-clothed man also had a look of shame. He brought his fists together and bowed to Lin Feng, saying sincerely: “I was rude before, I beg your forgiveness.”

The Society of the Strong Gale cultivator who spoke out first accusing Lin Feng was completely flushed in the face: “I did not know the immensity of heaven and earth and offended you, I beg your forgiveness.”

The members of the Society of the Strong Gale all came up and saluted Lin Feng, either apologizing or expressing gratitude.

Lin Feng only smiled lightly and didn’t speak.

Seemingly regardless of their scepticism and offense before or their apologies and gratitude right now, he didn’t take them to heart at all.

If it was before, this appearance of his landing in the eyes of Yue Hongyan and co would naturally make them think that Lin Feng looked down on everyone. But now, they instead all started to feel ashamed. If Lin Feng got angry and disputed with them they would instead not be so nervous.

At this moment, all of the eyes of the Society of the Strong Gale cultivators no longer had any signs of belittlement or doubt. They all felt a heartfelt admiration and in their gratitude, there was also

mixed a hint of light fear.

It was honestly that Lin Feng's power of reversing life and death and turning the world upside down with the lift of his hand was too shocking.

Borrowing the power of the world, even though they're unable to move and are complex to set up, the power of formations is definitely the strongest amongst same level spells.

Any sect will have a protective formation guarding their gates and their foundation. The Void Temple has the Supreme Yin-Yang Void Formation, the Great Thunder Monastery had the Vairocana Formation and the Mt. Shu Sword Sect has the Immortal Heaven Universal Sword Formation. These protective formations are all the cornerstones of the sects.

The reason the Mount Heng School's protective formation was broken by the Eternal Dao Sect's Master Pubei that day was because the gap in cultivation level was too great between the Mount Heng School's aurous core stage cultivator presiding over the formation and the nascent soul stage monster Master Pubei. If the Mount Heng School also had a nascent soul stage cultivator holding down the fort, Master Pubei definitely wouldn't have the balls to pick a fight at their doorstep.

In a battle between cultivators of the same level, only formations of the same power can oppose another formation.

And this formation diagram for the Yin-Yang Creation &

Perishment Formation is the sect protective formation that the system rewarded to him after integrating Lin Feng's original fundamental sect dao technique!

Right now Lin Feng has the formation diagram, but one, he does not have a sufficient cultivation level and two, he does not have the materials required to set up the formation. But with just the transformation of life and death, he withstood Wicked's Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation, resolving the fatal sword aura released by him and converting it to his own formation's power.

And then using this power, he unleashed the transformation of heaven and earth, burying the 3000 Shenwu Army cultivators. And then he reversed the transformation of life and death, the life energy was converted back to killing energy and directly obliterating General Wicked.

“Even the transformation of life and death and the transformation of heaven and earth that I used today have far from unleashed their true power.” Lin Feng pondered in his heart: “In the future when my cultivation level goes up and I gather all of the materials required to set up the formation, what shocking power will this Yin-Yang Creation & Perishment Formation unleash?”

“I'd probably really be able to create a world and govern the creation and perishment of all life?”

Thinking here, Lin Feng couldn't help feeling excited.

The main quests issued by this system are indeed bullshit, but the special rewards of the main quests are each one awesome than the other. It can be called high risk high reward.

For the first time ever, Lin Feng looked a bit forward to the new main quest.

After entering into the system, the new main quest had sure enough already been issued.

Main quest 1.2 — Find a suitable blessed area and officially establish your base.

Quest Description: The path of cultivation is spells, land, wealth and companions. If a sect wants to grow, besides a dao technique that belongs to your sect, even more you must have a blessed area suitable for cultivation before you can attract the world's gifted to join you and establish an eternal foundation.

Quest Time-Limit: Three years, if not completed on-time host will be directly eliminated.

Lin Feng stared at the quest description and pondered: "It's time to officially find a place to settle down?"

He thought of the trade that he made with Long Ye before. Long Ye provided information about a cultivation abode and said it was not yet occupied.

Wonder if it's really true?

Lin Feng was in the middle of pondering when he saw Kang Nanhua walk down from the sand dune and arrive in front of him.

Kang Nanhua's expression was calm. He arrived in front of Lin Feng and bowed: "Thank you for rescuing us, I Kang Nanhua am eternally grateful."

Lin Feng smiled saying: "The heavens aid those who strengthen themselves, you don't need to worry about it. Not to mention I did not help out to take advantage of you guys and ask for something in return."

Kang Nanhua shook his head not speaking.

He promised his deceased friend that even if he had to battle to the death, he would absolutely not cower. So if Lin Feng didn't help out today, don't mention the people of the Society of the Strong Gale, Kang Nanhua himself would also have perished under the Shenwu Immortal Slaying Formation.

Kang Nanhua looked at the members of the Society of the Strong Gale and sighed saying: "I once promised Hongfeng that I would take care of you guys, alas I am not powerful enough and it is difficult for me to protect you all. This time if this fellow daoist hadn't rescued us, even I would have lost my life."

Yue Hongyan stood out from the crowd and walked to Kang

Nanhua's side. She lowered her head saying: "We are indebted for your care all these years, Hongyan thanks you on behalf of everybody."

"In the first place you are not a member of the Society of the Strong Gale. Just because of a promise you made to my big brother you've protected us until now. We are all deeply grateful." Yue Hongyan said with emotion: "It was us who were too selfish, relying on your protection and willfully moving around in the Great Zhou Dynasty's borders."

Kang Nanhua shook his head with a calm expression not speaking.

While Lin Feng nodded his head in secret after hearing this.

Yue Hongyan and co were indeed a bit arrogant. With their strength, persisting to be active in the Great Zhou Dynasty's borders was too high-profile. In the end, this time they took things seriously and nearly got rid of them all in one fell swoop.

If they retreated into the borders of a different kingdom, how could the Zhou Dynasty encircle them so conveniently?

Hearing this, the black-clothed man's expression slightly changed: "Hongyan, do you..."

Yue Hongyan calmly nodded her head: "I've made up my mind. We'll temporarily retreat from the Zhou Dynasty's territory,

accumulating strength and increasing our cultivation levels. In the future when we have enough strength we'll return again."

The black-clothed man glanced at Kang Nanhua. He opened his mouth wanting to say something, but in the end he didn't say anything.

Kang Nanhua slightly furrowed his brow: "Entering into the borders of another kingdom, you guys are prone to lose your autonomy."

Yue Hongyan smiled lightly, her two crimson-red eyebrows raised up: "That depends on whether or not we work hard."

"People of Snowgale are never cowards."

Hearing this, Kang Nanhua's face revealed a smile of approval: "Hongyan, you are very good. If Hongfeng knew in the underworld and saw you today, he would definitely be very happy."

He turned his head looking at Lin Feng and said very seriously: "Your kindness today is the same as giving us new life, unfortunately I am already carrying a promise."

"Before I have completed my first promise, I honestly do not dare to carelessly make promises again. I can only say that if we meet again in the future, if you have any orders I will follow with no exception."

Lin Feng stared at Kang Nanhua's eyes for a while and then chuckled: "Don't mention following me or serving me again. Like I said, if we have the chance to meet again in the future, I am happy to sit and talk with you."

Lin Feng turned his head looking towards Yue Hongyan and co, he smiled saying: "You guys take care too."

With Yue Hongyan at the head, the members of the Society of the Strong Gale all bowed together and said respectfully: "By your edification."

Lin Feng shook the Black Cloud Flag, turning into a streak of black light and instantly disappearing in the distance.

After Lin Feng left, Kang Nanhua started to meditate and recover while Yue Hongyan and co went outside to concile the villagers and started arranging for evacuation.

The black-clothed man silently walked over to a place where no one noticed and crushed a voice-transmission crystal.

"What happened?" The crush crystal glowed with white light and the voice of a man travelled out from the white light.

Chapter 100: The Path Of Prodigies Is To Cut Down All Obstacles

“What happened”? The crushed crystal glowed with a white light, the voice of a man travelled out from the white light.

The black-clothed man reported everything that happened before.

After being silent for a moment, the other man opened his mouth saying: “Recently the sect will send disciples over there to you guys to increase you guys’ strength and at the same time let the disciples gain experience.”

The scar on the black-clothed man’s face twitched and he sighed in his heart. Like this, their infiltration and control over them will be even stronger.

But he didn’t have the leeway to refuse and could only respond respectfully: “We will make preparations on this side.”

After the man said ok, he then asked seemingly without any intention: “Last time you guys were ordered to watch for an opportunity to capture Zhu Yi, is there any news?”

The black-clothed man responded saying: “We’ve only heard that he once appeared around Chuzhou City at the Great Qin Dynasty’s southern border, but his location now is unascertainable.”

“Okay, I know. You guys hurry up and evacuate.” The man didn’t say anything more and ended the connection.

But the black-clothed man still faintly heard the man seemingly muttering to himself: “A white-robed young daoist wearing daoist clothes? This person has been very active recently, how come we’ve never heard of this person before....” (TL: Damn ambiguous text, you can talk in Chinese and leave out pronouns so half the time I don’t know what the hell to use.)

Even though he clearly knew that the man couldn’t see him, the black-clothed man still lowered his head not daring to let out a peep.

Because, that person is a disciple of the number one holy land in the world, the Void Temple. For him, he is an absolute behemoth.

.....

Lin Feng controlled the Black Cloud Flag and flew in the air. He split out a sliver of his consciousness and entered into the interior of the Black Cloud Flag. Looking at Dao Zhiqiang who was still spacing out, he asked: “Okay, what plans do you have for the future?”

Dao Zhiqiang returned to his senses, his gaze looking at Lin Feng was extremely complicated. He sighed lightly: “I can’t go back to the Shenwu Army. My comrades have been completely annihilated while I alone live on. My outcome if I go back will definitely be extremely horrible.”

Lin Feng lightly scanned him: “I’m letting you go, what plans do you have?”

“Thank you for trusting me.” Dao Zhiqiang said: “I plan on heading over to the Great Qin Dynasty to test my luck and see if I can enter into a big sect to cultivate and increase my strength.”

Lin Feng’s eyes flashed: “Oh?”

Dao Zhiqiang said openly: “The reason I joined the Shenwu Army in the first place was also because the Shenwu Army had large amounts of cultivation resources, dao techniques and skills, and I could increase my strength,”

His expression was determined: “I need strength, powerful strength.”

Lin Feng waved his sleeves: “If so, then I wish you good luck.” Dao Zhiqiang knows nothing about him so Lin Feng isn’t worried that letting go of Dao Zhiqiang will expose any of his secrets.

Leaving the Black Cloud Flag, Dao Zhiqiang bowed towards Lin Feng: “Thank you for not killing me.” Finishing speaking he didn’t drag his feet and turned around leaving.

Lin Feng looked at his distancing figure and smiled shaking his head.

This is also a person with a story.

But, it has nothing to do with him.

For Lin Feng, the most urgent matter right now is to meet up with Xiao Yan and those other two kids asap.

Heading west, he left the Ancient World Marsh. The next time he saw Xiao Yan and co was already a month later.

“Master!” Upon meeting, Xiao Budian flung himself over. Lin Feng patted his little head in amusement: “Little brat, did you cause any trouble for your two apprentice-brothers?”

Xiao Budian’s big black shiny eyes turned and he said grinningly: “Of course I didn’t.”

Behind him, Xiao Yan poked fun of him: “Nice try, tell everything that you’ve done to Master.” While smiling, he walking over with Zhu Yi and the two people bowed to Lin Feng: “Greetings Master.”

Zhu Yi grinned and took out a small stone talisman the size of a palm: “Master, we did not fail you and successfully brought back the Thunder Element Sigil.”

Lin Feng smiled slightly and said in his heart: “Of course I know you guys completed the task.”

Taking over the Thunder Element Sigil, he saw that its appearance was similar to the Flowing Wind Sigil. Its material and size were all the same, it's just that the sigil carved on the stone talisman is a symbol similar to a lightning bolt which is different from the Flowing Wind Sigil.

Lin Feng looked at Xiao Budian with a smile. Xiao Budian laughed and took out the Flowing Wind Sigil, handing it over to Lin Feng.

Alone, these two sigils are both unassuming, the spiritual energy harboured within is extremely thin.

But combining the two sigils, Lin Feng instantly sensed a great change occur within. The genesis of wind and thunder, inseparable and interconnected. There was actually a magical power constantly developing and growing in the sigil, growing at a shocking speed.

“This thing really can't be judged by its appearance. It looks unassuming but it's definitely a treasure.” Lin Feng pondered in his heart. His gaze floated towards Xiao Yan and the other two and he suddenly sensed something strange.

Taking a close look, Lin Feng was instantly speechless.

Before they split, Xiao Budian's cultivation level was qi disciple level 10, Xiao Yan was qi disciple level 9 and Zhu Yi had just reached qi disciple level 7.

Not seeing them in a short 2-3 months, Xiao Budian had impressively already broken through to the great circle of the qi disciple level stage, qi disciple level 12. Xiao Yan was at the peak of qi disciple level 11 and could tackle qi disciple level 12 right away.

The most terrifying was Zhu Yi. This kid had actually also reached qi disciple level 11 already.

What kind of joke is this?

Lin Feng's pressure was instantly as big as a mountain. Being surrounded by a group of monsters like this, how can Wang Lin be the only one feeling pressure?

"You bunch of chosen ones, the speed you guys raise your cultivation levels at is like you guys are on drugs." Lin Feng secretly wiped his cold sweat and made up his mind: "Fuck this, I've also got my original dao technique now. I'm definitely going into closed-door training this time, I've got to at least reach foundation establishment stage."

Looking at his three disciples before him, Lin Feng felt the turbulent main character aura multiplied by 3, chaotically oozing outward.

Lin Feng then looked at Wang Lin who looked a bit down at the side and the corner of his lips slightly twitched: "What the hell are you feeling down for, isn't a late-bloomer like you the most terrifying?"

Lin Feng's gaze turned towards Zhu Yi. The other two guys are one thing, this kid's speed is also kinda too quick?

With this glance, Lin Feng instantly saw some clues.

His face revealed an enigmatic smile: "Zhu Yi, looks like you had a fruitful trip."

Zhu Yi nodded his head: "I was just about to report to Master." Finishing speaking he took out a rod-like metal object.

Lin Feng looked closely. It was a magic item carved into the appearance of a snake. The serpentine body was lifelike and the two crimson-red snake eyes on the head emitted an abnormal glow.

Zhu Yi explained saying: "This item's name is the Snake of Diablo, it is a magic item. A spell can be used to release golden light that will penetrate the enemy's body and destroy the enemy's soul and body from the inside, making it difficult to effectively defend against."

"In our trip to the Wind & Thunder Sea this time, when we found the Thunder Element Sigil and were ready to return, we chanced upon a cultivator transcending tribulation. In the end he failed to transcend tribulation and died, yet due to this I obtained a portion of his mana essence, causing my cultivation level to skyrocket." (TL: I just took the term used in ISSTH. Basically, in cultivation when you're advancing to the next stage, there's usually some

disaster that descends upon you that you must get past to successfully advance. E.g. getting struck by lightning, flames that burn your soul, winds that cut your soul, internal demons that try to lead you astray.)

“Besides that is this Snake of Diablo magic item along with a spell called Dark Mandala Formation.” While speaking, Zhu Yi also took out a jade slip and gave it to Lin Feng. He had a confused expression on his face: “It’s extremely strange. Regardless of refining the magic item or practising the spell, I was very successful in both of them. But I let Eldest Apprentice-Brother and Youngest Apprentice-Brother try and they both had no success.”

Lin Feng took over the jade slip with a bit of a weird look on his face, but actually in his heart there were already thousands of horses galloping across.

“A blessing of 10 really isn’t a bluff.” Lin Feng secretly shook his head with a wry smile. On the surface he was completely calm and he opened his mouth saying: “No need to worry, every person has their own fate.”

Zhu Yi nodded his head and then said with slight hesitation: “Besides this, we also might have caused some trouble.”

“After that cultivator failed to transcend tribulation, there were also other people coveting his inheritance. We got into a conflict with them...” Zhu Yi paused and then continued saying: “... In the conflict, we killed two of their people.”

Xiao Yan slapped Xiao Budian's head: "If this kid just kept his hands to himself, we would have directly ran after taking the things."

Xiao Budian stuck out his tongue: "How could I have known that they were hiding in a damned place like that, I just casually threw out a bolt of lightning and it actually hit them."

Lin Feng's expression didn't change but he sighed in his heart: "Just as expected. After leaving the novice village there will be countless big and small creeps clamouring and throwing themselves at these kids, asking to be abused and educated."

The path of prodigies is to blaze a way through all manner of obstacles, to shine like the sun and to trample on all cannon fodder who come knocking asking to have their faces slapped.

Pulling himself together, Lin Feng asked: "Do you know who they are?"

Xiao Yan nodded his head: "They told us their sect is the Wind God Sect."

Lin Feng had a bit of a strange look on his face, although it was only for a fleeting moment. He smiled and shook his head: "No need to worry. Remember you guys, we don't cause trouble, but if someone tries to step over us then just let loose and fight."

Hearing this, Xiao Yan, Xiao Budian, Zhu Yi and Wang Lin who

was silent at the side all felt reinvigorated. They bowed and said: “At Master’s decree.”

Xiao Budian’s eyes turned and he suddenly smiled saying: “Master, when we came back this time we passed by a valley. There is a Heaven Gold Thunder Snake there about to shed its skin. Do you think we should, end it?”

Lin Feng looked with a faint smile at this little disciple of his who looks cute and cuddly, but has actually already shown some potential for shamelessness and black-heartedness: “Little brat, thinking about your baptism?”

Xiao Budian scratched the back of his head in embarrassment and said with an eager smile: “Master, I’m about to turn five already.”

Lin Feng smiled and patted his little head: “We’ll go after some time. Don’t worry, Master hasn’t forget your baptism.”

Before this, Lin Feng has to first hurry up and let himself achieve foundation establishment!